



# WARLOCK OF THE MAGUS WORLD

BOOK 07

*Wen Chao Gong*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Warlock of the Magus World

(巫界术士)

by

Wen Chao Gong

(文抄公)

# Synopsis

---

-What happens when a scientist from a futuristic world reincarnates in a World of Magic and Knights?

An awesome MC is what happens!

A scientist's goal is to explore the secrets of the universe, and this is exactly what Leylin sets out to do when he is reincarnated.

Dark, cold and calculating, he makes use of all his resources as he sets off on his adventures to meet his goal.

Face? Who needs that... Hmmm... that guy seems too powerful for me to take on now... I better keep a low profile for now.

You want me to help you? Sure... but what benefit can I get out of it? Nothing? Bye.

Hmmm... that guy looks like he might cause me problems in the future.

Should I let him off for now and let him grow into someone that can threaten me..... Nahhh. kill-

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Ying @ [Wuxiaworld](#)

Translation Edit by Alanade, Snapdragon @ [Wuxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 601 - Return To Twilight Zone

---

A tremendous volcano thundered and bellowed, as if a giant from the legends launching a flaming iron fist into the skies.

Lava fell like rain, forming rivulets that flowed together to become a network of rivers.

The black volcano towered high into the sky, looming over the region just like the clouds and causing the skies and the ground to turn dark.

The lava glowed red, flickering between dark and bright. The scene was magnificent, a rose amidst the thorns.

“Mount Asura! It’s been such a long time. I’ve never come back since I arrived at the central continent...” Leylin’s eyes were filled with a certain profoundness. The events that brought him to the central continent and the people and his history with Twilight Zone became incomparably vivid once more.

Indeed, Leylin was preparing to leave the central continent for a while and return to Twilight Zone. Even though that place was barren and inadequate compared to the central continent, it held a treasure trove that only he knew of.

‘The body of the Scorpion Man, as well as the blood of the protector of the Icy World!’ Leylin’s thoughts drifted to the contents of the Icy Jade Scorpion Emperor’s memories that he had acquired from its bloodline when he explored the Icy Cave.



That terrifying ancient battle still brought shivers to his spine to this day; even Morning Stars barely met the requirements to participate in it.

The remains of a Morning Star level bloodline creature were only a small treasure to Leylin, and didn't mean much, but the bloodline of that bronze female giant wasn't so simple.

That was a bloodline that crossed rank 7, one that had already begun to touch upon laws! In front of that, the current Leylin was like a moth drawn to the flame. Whether it be refining the ancient bloodline into an imprint or trying to assimilate it, either one of these actions would be extremely helpful to him.

Parts of his hopes for advancing to the Radiant Moon realm were placed on this. Furthermore, the protector of such a world would definitely have information about the world's coordinates in its bloodline and genetics.

That was the powerful ancient Icy World that even the Snake Dowager coveted and yet was unable to occupy! It was an unknown number of levels more important than the Lava World, and Leylin would be the sole benefactor of it.

It was because he had this that he was confident enough to give away the coordinates to the Lava World as a gift.

Leylin had other plans for the Icy World and the female giant's bloodline.

When she had been killed by the Snake Dowager, would her body retain any scent or aura from the Purgatory World, which would allow him to deduce the coordinates of that world?

Even if it wasn't on her body, the Icy World had been invaded by the Snake Dowager who had come from the Purgatory World, so how could there not be any traces left behind?

With the Icy World as a springboard, the difficulty in locating the Purgatory World would be reduced by a large amount. Once at the Purgatory World, finding the bloodline primogenitor, the Snake Dowager, would make breaking through the bloodline shackles a simple task.

Of course, the whole process wouldn't be that simple, but the general idea wasn't bad, and it was the best way to break through the bloodline shackles.

Of course, Leylin did not dare confront the Snake Dowager just like that. That was basically sending a lamb into a tiger's den. He didn't believe that he had any way of resisting strength that had surpassed that of Breaking Dawn and controlled Laws. Therefore, ample preparation was necessary, and this method could only be used as a last resort. Unless all his other options were exhausted, Leylin didn't even want to consider this option.

He would lie low in the Twilight Zone, and find a way to break through to Radiant Moon. That was Leylin's basic plan.

“Mount Asura will be dormant for a period of time every hundred years, which makes it the best time to go underground right now!” Leylin recalled the time he had come up from the subterranean world. While he had grasped the right timing and prepared well, it had still been very dangerous. He could not help but smile slightly at that.

He came to the crater of the volcano, and observed the terrifying lava channel.

“The volcano is filled with boiling hot lava all year round, and only when it’s dormant will a channel show itself. It’s still not time yet... even if a Crystallised Phase Magus were to charge down there, they would be burnt to smithereens....”

Of course, that was for rank 3 Magi. After he reached the Morning Star realm, what should have been horrifying and dangerous was as safe and stable as the garden in his backyard.

Rumble! A layer of black flames appeared on the surface of Leylin’s body, forming an oval layer that wrapped him within. A black bubble parted the lava, quickly disappearing into the depths...

The terrifying heat from the lava was absorbed by the black flames, blocking all from Leylin who was contained within. As time passed, the black bubble endured the spurts of lava to head straight down.

He was withstanding a natural disaster on his own and going



through the lava against the current. Even Mount Asura erupting could do little against him. This was the power of a Morning Star!

Boom! In the subterranean world, large amounts of magma flew out of a pool, accompanied by tremors. A bubble of black flame burst through the thick, durable rocks at the top and fell to the ground. Leylin's figure appeared once more as he withdrew the flames.

Compared to before when he had to rack his brains and look for opportunities, the current Leylin could travel anywhere as and when he wished. It was extremely convenient.

Seeing the dark sky and the stifling rock ceiling, Leylin sighed, "Twilight Zone, I'm back!"

Feeling the large difference in the concentration between the central continent and this place, Leylin shook his head, "It's no wonder that Morning Stars pay no attention to this, the elemental particle concentration is so low here."

Compared to the central continent, this place was like the barren countryside, if even that. The restriction of a low particle concentration would reduce the might of any spells used here by a large amount.

Morning Stars cared little for this place, and regular Magi had no way to pass through the lava channel. Hence, Twilight Zone still retained its own path, and the influence from the external world

was minimal up till Leylin's arrival.

One sweep of his soul force and the surroundings were displayed in his mind. He had been the master of Twilight Zone in the past, and was somewhat familiar with the general area. He knew where he was instantly.

“When I left, there wasn't even a rank 3 Magus in Twilight Zone, right?” Leylin touched his chin. Here, even rank 2 Magi could be considered the rulers, while rank 3 were the emperors. Morning Star? There hadn't been one in years.

“Am I like a high-levelled player in a newbie village, crushing everyone here?” Leylin touched his chin, a grin on his face, “But I like it!”

It was a fool's behaviour to still try to fight even when the enemy was powerful. Even if one could win for a while, a single failure would leave him with no hope of reprieve.

Leylin did not like these methods. Often, he would act only when he was very confident, and all he hoped for was for the Magi in the world to all be at rank 1 and 2, which made it easy for him to manipulate them.

It was because he had this stable mindset that he could leave till today.

“I wonder how Nature's Alliance Academy is doing. Has Celine

been able to take care of it? And then there's the dark elves, gnomes and other races..." After he determined the direction, Leylin's body turned into a streak of light as it hurried towards the headquarters of the northern Nature's Alliance academy.

---

The northern region, Nature's Alliance academy.

Eternal Light spells brightened up the room, reflecting a black desk with innumerable documents on the surface, as well as ink, quill pens and other stationery.

A female Magus with a delicate face wearing luxurious upper-class clothing kneaded at her brows with slender fingers, seeming very tired.

"Director!" The door was pushed open, and a female Magus hugging a file ran in hastily.

"Urgent news from the frontlines! Potti City has been attacked again. All of our subordinates were killed, and two professors were even..."

"Alright." The beautiful director nodded her head from behind the desk, giving a drawn-out sigh. "Almost a hundred years ago, the fall of the northern region also started from Potti City. I just don't know if anyone will come and turn the situation around this time..."

She stood up and pulled the curtains open.

There was a gigantic square of the academy outside the windows. At the middle, the statue of a young Magus stood proudly, still having a slight radiance.

“Leylin, where are you? With your strength, I’m sure you must be doing well wherever you are, right?” This beautiful director was naturally Celine.

When Leylin had left Twilight Zone, he had left behind a series of tricks, allowing Celine to take control of Nature’s Alliance academy for almost a century. She had also advanced to rank 2. However, the academy was now facing the largest crisis since its establishment!

The tide of darkness creatures had come forth once more! And in this wave, there were countless beast emperors that had mutated and reached rank 3!

That was not all. The gnomes and elves had now joined hands in rebellion and distanced themselves from the humans. They were now attacking in the north as well.

The defensive stronghold of the north, Potti City, had fallen under the cooperation of the three races, and two rank 2 professors from Nature’s Alliance had fallen as well.

“Director, we need to react to this, or Lord Banker will use this

opportunity to create issues! The exchange between academies is about to begin as well, and I'm afraid..." Concern was evident on this female Magus' face.

After hearing this, the look of helplessness on Celine's face grew more obvious. The immense pressure came not only from the outer world, but also the inner departments. Banker had initially been an ordinary professor of Nature's Alliance, but he'd had a miraculous encounter and gained the inheritance of some ancient Magus. His strength had shot up, and had now entered rank 3!

With power, he obviously desired the corresponding status. In Banker's eyes, that would be Celine's position.

Though he was fearful of Leylin, which meant Banker did not dare go too far, there were still countless Magi who sided with him. After all, Leylin had already disappeared for almost a century.

# Chapter 602 - Changes In The North

---

The passing of time could erase everything. More than a hundred years passed, and the number of Magi who could still remember the mighty Leylin were few and far between.

If not for the longevity of Magi, the situation now would definitely be much more severe. Celine might even have been stripped of her position as director long ago.

But even now, things were far from good.

Among the Magi in the entire Twilight Zone, Banker was the only rank 3, and thus he had a good reputation. He even tried to imitate Leylin, and wanted to crown himself as the Radiant Guardian, and even the emperor of all of mankind! His attempts, however, were futile.

Celine could distinctly see the ambition in Banker's eyes, but could not stop him.

Most of the academies in the other regions were already relying on Banker's help.

There was no doubt that he would exert pressure on Celine during the exchange between the academies, as well as the establishment of the allied armies.

‘How will I get through this one?’ Celine was at a loss. The tricks

that Leylin had left her could only deal with rank 2 Magi at most. There were clearly limitations if used against a rank 3 Magus.

The mere proof of Leylin's existence would not be enough to obstruct this Magus' insatiable greed and ambition. Celine was very clear about this.

Bang! At this moment, the door of the office suddenly swung open, and a youthful Magus entered.

He had wine red eyes, and his long blue hair was not tied up, but instead cascaded down to his shoulders. There was a frightening power surrounding him.

"Lord... Lord Banker!" Another female Magus from before hurriedly rushed to salute him.

"Director! I bring good news. Doroy Snail Academy and Ray College have acceded to my request, and have agreed to rely mainly on us, Nature's Alliance. They will elect the allied armies as the ruling party!"

Banker eyed Celine's silhouette greedily.

Celine furrowed her brows, "Banker! Don't you know that you have to knock before entering my office? Or do you no longer have the most basic of manners?"

"This place will soon undergo a change of hands anyway!"



Banker seemed absolutely unrestrained.

“Have you considered my previous suggestion?”

“Impossible! Don’t you forget that I am Leylin’s wife!” Celine’s face flushed red.

“Indeed! A woman who has been abandoned in the Twilight Zone for more than a hundred years...” Banker shrugged his shoulders. He looked at the obsidian statue in the plaza, especially the radiance above it. A trace of restraining fear flashed distinctly in his eyes.

“When I become the leader of the allied armies, this statue will be destroyed! Only a statue of me, Banker, is qualified to stand tall here! The next few days will be your last chance, think about it carefully!” Banker walked out, but his voice still resounded in the room.

Not only was Celine regarded with tremendous prestige, the Magus that Leylin left in her hands was controlled by the spirit. What was more crucial was that Leylin himself was still around. Although no one knew where he was, he was still alive, somewhere.

Banker was still rather afraid of his senior. If not for these apprehensions, he would have forcefully seized the position long ago.

Even so, Banker's patience was rapidly wearing thin.

“What now, Director?” There was a hint of a sob in the female Magus' voice.

“Let me think about it!” Worry was written across Celine's face as she gazed at the statue of Leylin in the plaza. It might have been an illusion, but when she turned around, she felt as though the radiance above the statue seemed to have turned... brighter?

---

As the days passed by, numerous Magi rushed into the northern region unceasingly. Due to the underlying reason to deal with the other races, the exchange between the institutions was even more important.

The turbulent undercurrents in the subterranean world never stopped flowing. Not only were the human Magi plotting conspiracies of their own, the other races also played an extremely important role in the impending chaos.

In the vast yet solemn venue, the directors of all the academies were sitting around a long round table. They couldn't help but turn their gaze towards the main seat in the centre.

The golden chair was adorned with many ornamental gems and appeared incomparably gorgeous. This seat was still vacant at present, but it could be inferred that only today's victor would be able to occupy that spot and cry out his commands.

“President of Nature’s Alliance, Celine, and House Professor, Banker, have arrived!” A voice sounded abruptly, making the numerous directors turn their gazes towards the entrance.

Celine was there, dressed in a splendid ceremonial robe. She was accompanied by Banker. Banker was even walking in front of her.

“That’s too much! He’s not even the director yet!” Will, who was seated amongst the spectators, secretly clenched his fist.

He was brimming with rage at the thought of the director whom he had always admired being coerced into this. But as a mere official Magus, he had no way to confront a rank 3. This was a lesson he had learnt the hard way, through tears and blood.

“Director Celine!” “Director Celine!” “Director Celine!” A few well-acquainted Magi profusely greeted her, but even more people gathered around Banker, just like stars revolving around the moon as they grouped around their revered leader.

‘These fellows!’ Celine was secretly angry. When Leylin was still around, these Magi who were now kissing up to Banker, were all itching to kneel at her feet to express their loyalty. Now, they were betraying her without the slightest hesitation.

Even though she knew that the society of Magi followed the law of the jungle she couldn’t help but feel a tinge of discouragement.

Just as she was walking towards the seat in the centre, another Magus obstructed her. “Wait a minute!”

“What’s the matter, Director Barca?” Celine recognised him of course. This Magus was the president of Ray College, and had already been completely subdued by Banker.

“This is the main seat, only the president of Nature’s Alliance Institution is qualified to sit here! Don’t tell me you’re trying to disobey him?”

Celine raised her eyebrows. A greatly menacing air surrounded her. She was no longer the weak female Magus from before, but a formidable Magus who had undergone the trials of blood and fire, and had been promoted to rank 2!

The appearance of such an aura immediately weakened Barca’s imposing manner.

“Indeed! This conference should be hosted by the president of Nature’s Alliance Institution!” Banker walked out and the first sentence he uttered surprised Celine.

“Therefore, before the conference begins, I propose to first conduct the election for the president of Nature’s Alliance Institution!”

“You!” Celine was utterly enraged. The director of Nature’s Alliance had always been her, and that had never changed. Based

on the traditions of Nature's Alliance, only Celine's disciples were qualified to succeed the institution. How could they choose the president based on an election?

However, Banker was now making use of this crucial moment, with the support of the other directors, to make Celine step down from office.

"That's right! I am completely in favour of Banker's suggestion. Besides, the strength of our lord Banker surpasses everyone else, and all of the Magi presents unanimously approve of his moral character. Thus, I recommend our lord, Banker!" President Barca raised his point immediately after some thought.

"That's right! We stand by President Barca!"

"Well said!" Many Magi started to cause a din, especially a great many of the rank 2 professors from Nature's Alliance Academy, who all stood behind Banker.

Only a handful of students and Magi who used to be controlled by Leylin stayed by Celine's side.

"All of you..." Celine looked at the hostile Magi, and suddenly felt as though she was among a pack of wolves.

The green tint of greed glistened in the eyes of these Magi, seemingly waiting to tear her to shreds before devouring her.

“Look at that! The majority of the professors all support me! It seems that we don’t even need an election!”

No matter how self-restrained Banker was, he couldn’t help but be pleased with himself. He walked next to the main seat, and looked at Celine. “How about now? My suggestion from before still holds! I hope you won’t make a choice that will anger me!”

‘Among Magi, trickery and these tactics can only assist you, but ultimately it is one’s strength that is the deciding factor!’ Celine now understood why Leylin could abandon everything in the Twilight Zone, and resolutely go off in search of strength.

But it seems that it was a little too late.

“All of you!” Celine raised her head, her voice suddenly filled with pride. “Have you forgotten the former Radiant Guardian? Once Leylin returns, he definitely will not let any of you get away with this!”

Celine’s voice was sharp. Most of the Magi present knew how savage Leylin could be, and couldn’t help but hesitate at this point.

“Hmph! He’s just a rank 3 Magus all the same! If he dares come here, I will let him know who the ruler of the Twilight Zone is!”

Banker snorted coldly. Powerful undulations of a rank 3 Magus shook the place, and the illusion of holy light appeared behind him.

“A forcefield with such energy intensity that is infinitely close to a domain? Perhaps it can even surpass Leylin!” The other Magi were all in awe.

That’s right! Leylin still existed, but it was not known if he would return to Twilight Zone. Banker, however, was a true blue rank 3 Magus! Even more importantly, merely relying on one’s reputation to make others cower in fear was not enough.

Thus, many Magi started saluting profusely to Banker, “Lord Banker, please assume the position of Director of Nature’s Alliance, and lead the allied armies!”

The voices rose to a clamour, and Celine, who was sandwiched in between, seemed incomparably pale.

“Hahaha...” Banker started laughing like a maniac. The dream he had had for years has finally been fulfilled, and his heart was brimming with ecstasy. He could already see himself unifying the entire Twilight Zone, and the moment where he would become the supreme emperor!

Banker’s eyes twinkled and was about to take his place on the main seat. Right at this moment, strange changes started to occur.

“Is that so?” A black silhouette suddenly appeared, standing in Bank’s way. The mere eye contact they shared was enough to fill Banker with dread, as though he was meeting his nemesis.



Upon the sight of this figure, tears started to rush out of Celine's eyes involuntarily.

“Who is he? Why do I find his appearance so familiar?” The many directors were dazed. It seemed that they knew all found him familiar, but couldn't seem to recall his name.

“It's the Radiant Guardian! The Radiant Guardian, Leylin Farlier!” Will, who was standing next to Celine, clenched his fist and shouted, his eyes aglow.

“Lord Leylin!” Following which, Iren, Gordius and the other elderly subordinates under Leylin's previous command immediately bowed respectfully.

“It really is him!” The numerous Magi suddenly had a realisation. Didn't this Magus look exactly the same as the obsidian statue in the plaza of Nature's Alliance?

# Chapter 603 - Clown

---

Leylin Farlier!

This name was a legend in Twilight Zone, a myth. His stories were passed down as legends, sang of in praise by numerous bards!

And now, this legend had once more appeared before their eyes.

“Quite a few interesting things seem to have happened in my absence.” Leylin looked around as he said this, and many directors took a few steps back in order, be they rank 1 Magi or rank 2.

Finally, a rank 2 Magus could not take it anymore. He fell to his knees with a thud, and called out, “Master Leylin, please forgive me! I never wished to betray you, and was only forced by Banker.”

As someone from the same generation as Leylin, this Magus named Akazawa knew well about him and his ruthless ways. This was why Leylin’s appearance frightened him, almost to the point of wetting his pants.

And just like that, as if via a domino effect, more and more Magi knelt, all their knees banging into the ground. Regardless of the effort Banker had put into establishing ties with them and threatening them, it was all a joke in front of Leylin..

“Didn’t you want me to come before? Well, I’m here now, what do you have to say?” Leylin glanced at Banker, almost not

bothering to even talk to small fry like him. Banker realised the sarcasm in his tone immediately.

“Loke’s Shadow!” Banker’s face turned green for a moment, then red before his fake domain spread out. Energy at rank 3 spread out, and a low-grade magic artifact twinkled in his hands.

Banker unleashed his strongest attack with confidence, and dashed straight towards Leylin.

He was very clear that Leylin’s appearance had ruined all his plans. He only had one hope now; he had to smash apart the myth with his own hands, to defeat Leylin! And he was confident in doing that, in his inheritance.

An enormous ‘domain’ opened up, pushing even many rank 2 Magi to the side. The ferocious and berserk force caused a change in the expressions of many Magi.

“What a commendable courage!” Leylin squinted his eyes slightly, and the piece of low-grade magic equipment in Banker’s hands shattered apart inch by inch. Following that was the fake domain, The rank 3 radiance was snuffed out, and a layer of ash grey stone appeared on the surface of Banker’s body. Within moments, he had become nothing more than a stone statue.

The surface of the statue captured the frantic look on Banker’s face perfectly.

It was like a clown trying to run away, highly comical.

“Didn’t you want to be honoured, for your legacy to be passed down? Very well, this statue can be placed at the plaza of Nature’s Alliance, it’ll be a good contrast!” Leylin nodded, and the place fell into a dead silence. Many of the Magi present felt like they were dreaming.

What had they just seen? The strong rank 3 Banker had attacked Leylin at full force, but his opponent simply blinked his eyes and he’d turned into a statue. Even his soul had been annihilated!

This Radiant Guardian was evidently quite a bit more terrifying than in the legends!

“What? Anyone else wants to interfere in the internal affairs of my Nature’s Alliance Academy?” Leylin looked around.

By this time, Barca and Banker’s other loyal followers had already had a bad premonition, and began to retreat one after the other. The lights of teleportation burst forth as well.

Unfortunately, it was already too late.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Blood sprayed like fireworks as Barca and the rest combusted into bits and pieces, filling the whole sky.

A scalding rain of morselized flesh fell onto the faces and shoulders of the Magi present on scene. However, not a single

person dared to wipe anything off, forget stopping it.

‘The Radiant Guardian didn’t even move his hands, and there were no energy waves from spells at all. How did those rank 2 Magi...?’ Shocked to the extreme, the hearts of the Magi at the scene were already growing sluggish.

“N-No, no objections at all! Director Celine’s achievements are obvious to everyone!” They really did not dare to come forward again.

As for these rank 1s and 2s, Leylin could indeed easily kill a whole bunch of them with just a slight puff of air. He simply could not be bothered with people of their power anymore.

“Leylin!” Celine stepped forward, an excitement in her voice which surprised him.

Originally, he’d thought that after he left the power hungry Celine would not be eager at all for his return. But from what it seemed, the passage of time had instead made this woman think about his good points.

Leylin could not help but break into laughter. He directly sat in the host’s seat while Celine stood respectfully at one side.

The eyes of the other Magi who had supported Celine previously, like Iren, Gordius, Will, and the others, were all brimming with ecstasy.

They were mostly under Celine due to her having their spirit sources, and had no choice but to force themselves to support her. Although this was the case, with Leylin's reappearance, not only had things taken a new turn immediately, their efforts were even more than amply rewarded.

Leylin did not care about Iren and the others. Instead, he directed his gaze onto a young Magus. This brightly handsome Magus was actually the one who was the most supportive of Celine just now.

"This is Magus Will! A second generation student of Nature's Alliance Academy. He has already advanced to become an official Magus and is a professor in the institution..." Celine rushed to introduce him to Leylin.

"Of course I know that..." Leylin smiled. As he looked at Will, he found his face familiar.

"Your mother, is she well?" Leylin suddenly asked.

"Hm? My mother?" In his heart, Will was extremely shocked. He did not know why Leylin suddenly asked such a question but he still answered, "My mother was just an acolyte, it's been over 50 years since she passed away..."

"I see..." Leylin sighed with a rasp in his tone, "Time is the great enemy of all living creatures..."

“Lord Radiant Guardian, did you know my mother?” Will became excited. Ever since he was born, he had never seen his father. He heard from his mother that his father had gone to do something very important and righteous but never returned. Could it be...

Leylin’s question and Will’s answer had an extremely deep meaning. Not only the surrounding Magi, even Celine made a bad association. She looked at Leylin, and analysed Will. Her eyes reflected a thoughtful expression, and nobody knew what she was thinking.

If her conjecture was true, even if Will was a capable assistant, she would have to suppress him slightly in the future in secret. However, on the surface, they should appear to be more intimate.

If Leylin knew about Celine’s thoughts, he would definitely roll his eyes ruthlessly. Even though time had passed, Celine was still that power hungry creature from before.

“We pay our respects to the Radiant Guardian! We hope the Lord will lead us to defeat the allied armies once again!”

By this time, Banker and his followers had all been annihilated. With the support of Leylin whose strength was unfathomable, what other choices did the attending Magi have? They immediately knelt down respectfully.

Although Banker and Celine had invited them as allies, in front of the fierce Leylin how would these Magi dare to act big? One



after another, they began to label themselves as subordinates.

Leylin's eyes scanned over them slightly, and, "You all disappoint me..." The very first sentence he spoke made the many kneeling Magi break out in such a fierce cold sweat that it drenched their clothes.

"The other tribes' allied army has already reached the gate, and you're still fighting for power over such a trivial thing." Leylin shook his head, pity in his expression.

"Gate?" Celine covered her mouth and gasped in surprise.

"What?" The Magi below also began to clamour; this news was really too shocking.

"Why? You thought that those other tribes would wait quietly at Potti City?" A mocking smirk flashed across the corner of Leylin's lips as he thought of an idea.

The Magi who were present suddenly felt an enormous force locking up their entire bodies. They were unable to use any sort of spells, and soon after they felt very dizzy as if the whole world was spinning.

When they came back to their senses, they had already left the venue as a group and were somewhere outdoors.

Opposite them, a group of dark elves, gnomes in mechanical

suits, and even beast emperors were staring with wide open eyes, surprised by their sudden appearance.

Celine's eyes were filled with confusion for a moment, but she responded immediately after that. "This is... the mountainous region outside Nature's Alliance, you all were indeed preparing a sneak attack!" Her limbs could not help but feel ice-cold.

In front of them were obviously the elites of the other races. Every one of them had strength at least equivalent to a rank 1 Magus, and there also quite a few rank 3 powerhouses. If they had taken the opportunity to launch an ambush while she was fighting Banker, it would certainly spell a great defeat for the humans of Twilight Zone. Forget the rest, even Nature's Alliance Academy would not be able to protect itself. And after Banker died, the entirety of Twilight Zone... Celine didn't dare to think further.

'To be able to suppress all of us Magi instantly, and bring us here without any resistance, that means that if the Radiant Guardian wanted to, he wouldn't need much effort to just eliminate us all....' Contrary to Celine, the other Magi were instead shocked at the terrifying strength that Leylin had displayed.

Not only had he just killed Banker a few moments ago, but he had also transported this entire group. This had used just a small fraction of Leylin's strength, and it left them without the slightest thought of resistance.

"Human Magi! You could actually see past our concealment?" A laughing voice spread out as the dark elves separated to expose a queen dressed in a golden robe.

This queen had an exquisite face, sharp ears, and the energy waves emitted from her body had impressively reached the rank 3 level.

After she came out a sturdy dwarf as well as a gnome steering a large machine walked out as well. Beside them, a few beast emperors that let loose terrifying howls.

“Rank 3! All rank 3 powerhouses!” Numerous Magi murmured despondently.

Leave aside the legendary queen of the dark elves for now, it was unexpected for the tribes such as the dwarves and gnomes to produce rank 3s after a long period of suppression.

Including the beast emperors, there were a total of six rank 3 powerhouses gathered here!

# Chapter 604 - Invincible

---

“Since when has the strength of other tribes and the darkness creatures grown to such a point?” Celine bit her lips, blaming herself slightly and feeling a little remorseful.

Leylin’s rule had forced the other races in Twilight Zone to slavery, only to be exploited by human Magi. It was unexpected that in just a hundred years’ time, they had actually gotten powerful again.

If not for Leylin’s appearance today, even if the opponent hadn’t launched a sneak attack they could’ve won just based on this army that infiltrated their borders. It could practically wipe out all the human Magi.

After all, before this the humans had only one rank 3 Magus, Banker.

“Luckily, there’s still him!” Celine looked at Leylin’s silhouette, eyes filled with an unconcealable pride.

As Leylin looked at the beautiful ruler of dark elves, he could not help but let out a chuckle, “Alicia! I didn’t expect to see another familiar face. Not only have you advanced to rank 3, you’ve also become the queen of the dark elves. It’s truly worth congratulating!”

However, as this laughter echoed in the opposing queen’s ears, her entire body grew rigid. It was as if she had been struck by

lightning.

The many humiliations that the owner of this voice had brought to the dark elves immediately appeared in her mind, something that Alicia would never forget.

Yes, this new ruler of the dark elves was impressively, Leylin's old 'friend'— the matriarch of dark elves, Alicia. Even that time, it was her who had surrendered to Leylin outside Potti City, personally offering the high-grade meditation technique of the dark elves and their piece of magic equipment.

“You're Leylin! Leylin Farlier!” The opposing queen directed her gaze that was on Celine towards Leylin, gritting her teeth.

When Leylin restrained himself, he seemed just like an ordinary person, and it made the other rank 3s overlook him.

But with Leylin speaking, a sort of confidence that came from a control of the overall situation emerged from him, making him seem outstanding and superior.

“It's him! The humans' Radiant Guardian!”

“I've seen his portrait before, I'm definitely not wrong!” One after another, the other races exploded with rage. The fear that Leylin instilled in them was etched deeply.

“Mass murderer! Butcher! Leylin Farlier, repay my father's and

the other tribes' hatred with your blood!" The sturdy dwarf ruler jumped out, a hammer in hand which seemed to be made of thunder.

"Oh! I remember now, you're that lucky survivor from the dwarf royal family right? The little rascal who hid in the corner of the palace, not daring to move at that time..." Leylin patted his head with an amiable sense of familiarity.

Yet, this expression and his words had instead caused the dwarf to instantly fly into a rage.

Leylin was not bothered by him. He turned his attention to the gnome steering the large robot, "Hm... a mechanical colossus... You gnomes have managed to create another one? The craftsmanship has improved as well, and the problem of low battery has been solved as well!"

"Sir Leylin's knowledge really leaves me in awe for life. Furthermore, if you hadn't seized our most precious gnome's book at that time, I believe we could still have sat down happily for a chat..." The one controlling the frightening colossus was an old, senile gnome whose hands were covered with all sorts of scars and burns.

"Oh, there's also rank 3 beast emperors," Leylin looked at the three mountainous darkness creatures at the side, "This is great!"

"What's great? Is he mad?"

“Even if he is the former Radiant Guardian, for a rank 3 to think of fighting us all together is too arrogant of him...” Many of the tribes began to clamour.

Alicia, on the other hand, was different. People like her had seen how terrifying Leylin could be, and they had a bad premonition instead.

Even if she had advanced to rank 3, the fear she held towards Leylin had once more surfaced from deep in her memories after she saw him in person.

On top of that, he had such a confident expression and there was an enigmatic aura on his body...

Alicia’s expression changed several times, and at last, she kneeled in front of Leylin before the widened eyes of the many Magi and tribes, “Alicia greets the Lord, the Radiant Guardian! Please forgive my tribe’s mistake this time!”

“Grand Matriarch! How can we just let them go like that?”

“Is the humiliation that the humans have already brought us not enough? How can we simply grovel at their feet like that?” Even before Alicia’s allies spoke, the matriarch under her caused an uproar.

“Enough! I am the Grand Matriarch of the dark elves. I will take responsibility for this matter alone!” Alicia responded coldly.



“Haha... Good! Alicia! I admire your ability to have a clear view of things!” Leylin clapped and laughed heartily.

Roar! Seeing that something seemed amiss, a small black elephant, one of the beast emperors with large fleshy wings on its back started howling in tandem with a two-headed leopard. Both of them pounced towards Leylin. A terrifying power beyond the normal rank 3 level caused the earth to tremble.

At the same time, a beast emperor in the form of a large blue ape secretly slipped away from behind.

The movements of a few emperor darkness creatures seemed to trigger some sort of chain reaction; the tribes at the opposite side had join forces to attack Leylin together. Ignoring the indecisive dark elves and Alicia who was still kneeling, the dwarf ruler threw the large hammer in his hands with a howl, and terrifying blue thunderbolts swept across the area. The colossus, too, created a roaring sound that caused many rank 2 Magi to retreat with pale faces.

These tribes were attacking with a common target in mind—Leylin!

Four rank 3 attackers led the charge! On top of that were a whole group of fighters that were as strong as rank 1 and 2 Magi, many of them using treasures. Such an attack would leave even Crystal Phase Magi seriously injured as they fled.

In the face of this earth-shattering attack, Leylin's kept an unchanging expression, chuckling as he spoke, "Do you know why I said this is great just now? It's because, with all of you gathered together, I don't have to go through the effort of going to your lairs to finish you off one by one!"

Immediately, a terrifyingly strong energy wave burst forth from his body. A starry domain expanded, engulfing the entire area within it.

Many energies were snuffed out in an instant, and all of the energy attacks within the Morning Star domain had completely dissipated, exposing the silhouettes of the foreign races, all of them at a loss.

All Leylin had done was release the power of his domain, and the joint attack of the many tribes had been nulled completely!

Surging waves! Surging waves of disbelief and fear rolled in their hearts!

All the Magi who had been worried about Leylin just now were stunned. Seeing the tribes' combined attack, they'd thought nothing could surpass that amount of power. However, the moment Leylin made his move was the moment they realised that what they'd been looking at was like the glow of a firefly in the night. Although such a glow was visible in the dark, once the sun came up, they would disappear without a trace.

The frightening aura being emitted from Leylin's body was so

powerful that these Magi could not help but kneel down, not daring to harbour any other thoughts at all.

“Such strength?” Will stood behind Leylin, but he could not help but kneel either. He only felt that the Leylin now was entirely different from before. He was like the sun, moon and stars in the sky, up high and eternal.

“This... this is the domain that belongs to a Morning Star!” Celine murmured, her tears spilling out helplessly. She finally understood the magnitude of the opportunity she had lost at that time, and that she could never get it back.

Ka-cha! As if hitting emergency brakes, the elephant and the two-headed leopard suddenly stopped. They retreated with even greater speed, their bodies bursting forth with blood-red light. Their massive bodies rapidly grew emaciated, making it obvious that they had utilised some secret technique which exhausted a lot of energy.

“Still want to escape?” Leylin shook his head.

Two gigantic, yellowish-brown palms extended from the ground with a sudden boom, grasping the two beast emperors within. The sound of bones shattering could be heard, and be it physical attacks or magical attacks the two could not leave a scratch on the palms..

The two beast emperors looked at Leylin, an obvious plea in their eyes.

“You’re quite smart, even comparable to ordinary humans!” Leylin gasped slightly in admiration, but the pair of gigantic hands suddenly exerted a bit of force.

Ka-cha! Ka-cha! Following two loud sounds, the two rank 3 beast emperors had been pinched so hard they exploded.

“Ra– Rank 4! You’ve already advanced to rank 4. You’re a Morning Star Magus!” A voice like that of a dead man echoed from within the throat of the gnome inside the colossus.

Morning Star!

The crowd was sluggish for a moment, unable to react instantly. Only after a while did they suddenly realise what that meant.

Indeed, only a Morning Star Magus would be able to withstand the attacks of the numerous tribes without changing his expression, and even slaughter two beast emperors with just a light touch.

It was just that this happy news for the human Magi was a total tragedy for the tribes!

What did a Morning Star represent? In Twilight Zone, such a person was invincible! And with Leylin’s youth, these tribes would probably have to be enslaved for thousands of years.

This was still fortunate. If Leylin wanted to hold them

responsible for their rebellion, their entire race would probably go extinct! A Morning Star's anger was exactly that terrifying.

The large hammer-shaped magic artifact in the dwarven ruler's hands fell to the ground with a bang, and two streaks of blood flowed down from his eyes. Although many of the tribes had been stripped of all their abilities in the Morning Star field and were lying limp on the ground like dead dogs, he was still barely able to stand, "Oh, Fate! Why are you so unjust, even allowing that murderer to become a Morning Star in the sky? And for us of the other tribes, there's only suffering?"

Pearls of blood flowed down his eyes with each word he spoke. And just as his resentful questions ended, the radiance in the dwarven ruler's eyes dimmed. He was dead.

"There's still one more!" Leylin stretched out his hand and grabbed the air, and it was as if a huge hand appeared out of nowhere and a large blue ape was captured.

Once the large blue ape fell onto the ground with a bang, it kowtowed to Leylin repeatedly, continuously begging for forgiveness.

# Chapter 605 - Entering The Caves Again

---

There were a total of three beast emperors who had snuck in to launch the surprise attack.

This giant blue ape was obviously a lot more intelligent than its two companions, and from the very beginning, it had planned to escape, secretly heading to the edges of the battlefield. Seeing Leylin extending his Morning Star domain, it ran even harder without regard for its life.

It was a pity that little ruses like these were akin to jokes in front of a Morning Star.

“Blood Extraction!” Crimson light flashed in Leylin’s eyes, giving the giant ape a feeling that catastrophe was coming. However, under the suppression of the Morning Star domain, it could not resist.

Blood dripped from its pores, quickly taking form in Leylin’s hands. With the loss of such large amounts of blood, the ape’s aura grew increasingly weak, and its howls of pain gradually turned into whines.

Thud! A withered corpse fell to the ground, turning into multiple pieces of dried meat with no nutrition.

[Beep! The weak aura of an ancient bloodline has been discovered. The source has been determined to be the Water

The A.I. Chip quickly prompted.

“Oh? Not bad! No wonder it’s much smarter than the rest of the darkness creatures.” Leylin glanced at the scarlet and crimson intertwined with a trace of blue, and stowed it away.

The terrifying Blood Extraction was still kept up, but the bloodline crystals being formed weren’t nearly worth Leylin taking them. He tossed them to Celine, Will, and the others, and they stowed them away like they were treasures.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Their blood having been drawn out, the beings of the other races fell to the ground, dried out. No matter how powerful they were, they were but ants in the face of a Morning Star domain.

In just a few breaths, most of them had disappeared, and all that was left was a bunch of fragmented corpses. The essence of their bodies had already been taken away with their blood, and their bodies now held less nutrition than even the soil. They would soon crumble apart.

After Leylin withdrew his Morning Star domain, the human Magi had realised that besides Alicia and a few other matriarchs who were kneeling, all members of the other races, as well as the indecisive dark elves, had been eliminated.

In a single move, countless rank 3 rulers and a hundred years of accumulated power had gone up in a wisp!

Many Magi almost fainted as if they were in a nightmare.

---

In the snow-white passageway, Leylin had his hands behind his back, surveying the surroundings with interest. Celine followed behind him, constantly giving him reports.

“All the academies have sworn their allegiance to us once more and are willing to listen to the commands of Nature’s Alliance. The allied armies of the other races have been completely exterminated. Congratulations, the whole of Twilight Zone is now under you once again!”

“Oh!” Leylin agreed with a sound, eyes still sizing up the ice on the walls, as if all of Twilight Zone was not as important as this piece of ice.

Seeing him act this way, Celine could not help but sigh inside. If this was in the past, she would have grown ecstatic due to the power she had been given.

Now, however, her previous experiences had dulled her thirst for power. She simply tucked her hair behind her head and continued making the report. “Our armies have already broken through the dwarves’ palace and mechanical capital of the gnomes. All of them had enslaved.”



The terror of a Morning Star was immense. After Leylin was done showing off his power, the other races had learnt the meaning of overwhelming despair.

Though conspiring together had raised their strength to a certain extent, nothing could be done about a disparity as wide as the distance between the heavens and the earth.

Hence, the humans had quickly unified the area, and it was all under Leylin.

The foreign races, who had lost many powerful commanders, could not resist the humans' attacks at all.

“Also, at the dark elves' side, the Grand Matriarch has already retreated to their original territory, and is willing to sign a firm contract that the dark elves will be the humans' vassals and servants for all eternity.”

This kind of agreement that affected the whole elven race was very harsh. If violated, the backlash could cause the entire race to be killed. Hence, this was just secondary to being exterminated. The last time, Leylin had merely forced them to escape to the edges of Twilight Zone, and they had to offer tributes every once in a while. There had not been any pledges like this.

Now, with the deaths of the dwarves and gnomes, even this was quite a good choice for them.

“Alicia is quite tactful!” Leylin laughed, but that only caused Celine to grow jealous as she felt an impending crisis.

Walking through the icy tunnels, Leylin and Celine came before a rift where large amounts of chilling winds surged out, even having attacks from icy blades and the like.

Buzz! A green defensive layer appeared on Celine’s body, but could not withstand the corrosion of the ice. Her expression changed. The cold winds of the cave were something even rank 2 Magi could not resist!

Just as Celine felt the chill about to enter her body, Leylin finally made his move. Black flames formed a wall of fire in front of them and kept the cold outside.

“When did this area become like this?” Leylin sized up the cave, looking grim. This was the entrance to the Icy Cave, but its appearance had changed drastically. Terrifyingly chilly storms surged within, so cold that even rank 2 Magi could not hold on for long. Things like having acolytes practising inside was naturally not possible anymore.

“87 years ago, the storms inside the Icy Cave grew increasingly violent. First, the acolytes could not take it anymore, and after that, even the guard Magi had no choice to leave and abandon this area.”

Celine watched the Icy Cave, feeling as if she was seeing an

ancient monster opening its mouth ferociously. She could not help but hide behind Leylin.

“Based on the scanning by our academy, the icy caves’ icy radiation has already reached dragon-grade! Even rank 3s cannot enter the place anymore...”

“Mm!” Leylin nodded. He had long since found that there was an even larger world of ice under the Icy Cave, a world stemming from the radiation caused by the blood of the female bronze giant from the Icy World. This miniature version of the Icy World was vast and full of dangers, a place even he would not have entered at rank 3.

And by the looks of it, this world of ice was growing larger.

“The blood of a being that has grasped laws is this powerful even after death!” Leylin sighed ruefully, his eyes emitting blue rays as he peered through the darkness of the caves and into its depths.

“Leylin, you– you want to go down?” Celine asked from the side in concern.

“Yes, there’s something I want to retrieve from there!” Leylin nodded. There was no harm in admitting this. He feared nobody in Twilight Zone. Even if all the Magi here teamed up with all the members of the other races to oppose him, they could be taken care of with a single Morning Star Arcane Art.

“Be careful!” Celine bit her lips. Leylin had not shown a whit of interest in anything in Twilight Zone after his return. The only thing he’d done was take care of the attack by the other races.

She felt like Leylin had returned just for the Icy Cave, and would leave once more soon enough.

Even so, what could she do? She watched as his figure disappeared into the Icy Cave with a complicated expression. She couldn’t even handle the chilly gusts, so how was she to catch up to his footsteps? She could only sigh.

“Is the difference between me and Leylin already so huge?” In that moment, Celine was disappointed and frustrated.

With the howling of the winds from both sides, Leylin no longer bothered with Celine. He had only helped out with Twilight Zone because he’d encountered it on his way. If not, even if the entire Twilight Zone was placed in front of him, he probably wouldn’t really care.

Twilight Zone really was too barren for a Morning Star. It held nothing valuable other than its large lands.

Leylin had only one goal in coming here, and that was the world of ice!

At this moment, the A.I. Chip’s robotic voice sounded out. [Beep! Ambient temperatures dropping rapidly. Activating real time

detection.] [Current temperature: 173 Kelvin... 123 Kelvin...] The number in the field indicating temperature dropped continuously, eventually even dropping below absolute zero!

Terrifying cold covered the area, and even spacetime seemed to freeze over. The place was bathed in blue light.

“As expected, one can’t use common sense from my previous world here. Even the physical constants have changed...” Leylin’s body had been wrapped up in black flames, like being covered in an armour of flames.

The ground he was walking on was blue, the rigid ice as glossy as a mirror and yet surpassing even many magic alloys in terms of hardness.

The A.I. Chip’s prompt sounded again. [Beep! Detected icy radiation. 69% similar to radiation in database from the Icy Jade Scorpion. Strength multiplier is 178.6.]

“The world of ice has already expanded to this point?” Leylin was shocked.

In the meanwhile, he looked at the topographic map that had been stored inside the A.I. Chip’s database. It was evident that the terrain of the Icy Cave was similar to before, but the surface now had a much firmer layer of blue ice on top, and many creatures had been affected.

Chik chik... Not far away, a being called out, and the A.I. Chip immediately sent a reading. Leylin's expression changed as he walked over.

In front of him now was a creature he was very familiar with—an Icy Jade Scorpion!

Compared with the elite Icy Jade Scorpion he had seen before, what appeared in front of Leylin was several times larger, and the strength of its energy had reached rank 2!

Even the female face on its back seemed more vivid.

“Has the radiation from the blood of a creature that comprehended laws begun to affect even physical growth?” Leylin grew serious.

# Chapter 606 - Arctic Underground

---

Chik chik! The foraging Icy Jade Scorpion saw Leylin, and immediately lifted its two giant claws. The stinger of the large beast swayed as it positioned itself, ready to attack.

“Good timing!” Leylin laughed at the sight, and a fiery shadow appeared on the back of the Icy Jade Scorpion.

Chik chik! The scorpion tried to struggle, but a palm with a terrifying energy and intent covered its head.

The intent in the palm immediately smashed apart all resistance, and the large Icy Jade Scorpion crouched down. From this person’s body, it seemed to feel a familiar and amiable energy that belonged to an emperor.

“Let’s go!” Leylin commanded, and the Icy Jade Scorpion immediately stood up, carrying Leylin on its back and running ahead...

In the frosty world of ice, a green figure carried a black dot on its back as it moved forward at an extreme speed.

It had to be said that in this underground version of the Icy World, Icy Jade Scorpions were very useful tools for transportation. Not only did they have a high tolerance for icy radiation, their limbs were like hooks, every step digging holes in the steel-like icy ground. It did not slip at all.

The large Icy Jade Scorpion was intimidating and could avoid a lot of little inconveniences. At the very least, regular beings of the world of ice would not dare provoke it.

“Here! This is the limits of the map Celine gave me before.”

Thud! A large green figure jumped up and fell on the ground, its pincers sweeping across and opening a hole in the wall, revealing deep pathways inside that had obviously been altered with time.

Watching them Leylin’s eyes filled with pity. At that time, he had brazenly captured a bunch of Icy Jade Scorpions to treat the emotional instability stemming from his bloodline.

‘The icy radiation has been strengthened, and the Icy Jade Scorpions have mutated. I wonder if there’s anything now that can heal the emotional instability at Morning Star?’ Leylin thought as he touched his skin. Then, he had only used a peak rank 1 Icy Jade Scorpion Emperor to suppress his emotional instability until he became a Morning Star.

Now, even the regular Icy Jade Scorpions had strength equivalent to a rank 2 Magus, so the Icy Breath of a rank 3 elite or emperor would definitely be effective at dealing with the emotional instability of Giant Kemoyin Serpent Warlocks at the Morning Star realm.

This was especially true for Leylin. The A.I. Chip managed to deduce that the Icy Breath of an Icy Jade Scorpion was very



suitable for his Warlock physique, and therefore he would have no more issues in that aspect.

‘After I extract the bloodline of the female bronze giant, the world of ice underground will probably collapse due to losing the icy radiation. I should capture an Icy Jade Scorpion Emperor.

‘Of course, things don’t need to be so complicated! The bloodline of the Icy Jade Scorpion Emperor comes from the Scorpion Man, and as long as I obtain his remains, the effects will definitely be better than from regular emperors. Perhaps it could solve the issue permanently...’

“Let’s go!”

The laboratory was completely empty. When Leylin left previously, he had brought everything inside with him. Now, he was only here to determine the coordinates.

After a brief moment recalling it, Leylin patted the head of the Icy Jade Scorpion under him.

Chik chik... The large Icy Jade Scorpion whined as it brought Leylin into the depths of the world of ice.

This place was out of the bounds of the map he possessed and had many dead ends filled with unknown mysteries. Of course, there was also danger!

Whoosh... The chilly gale howled as it accompanied the Icy Jade Scorpion deeper in, the surrounding temperatures lowering continuously. The ferocious icy radiation became even more violent.

A green luster began to form on the shell of the Icy Jade Scorpion; even it was starting to find it difficult to withstand the temperature.

The tremendous darkness completely shrouded the region, and only the green light from the Icy Jade Scorpion's body could light up the path ahead.

Pairs of large eyes were filled with bloodthirst and greed as they appeared around Leylin like flames hidden in the night.

Chik chik... The large Icy Jade Scorpion did not really want to move forward anymore. It was merely a rank 2 creature, and while it was considered powerful in Twilight Zone, it was nothing in the world of ice that was deep within.

Any of the creatures shrouded in the darkness could capture and kill it easily. Normally, the Icy Jade Scorpion would scurry away in retreat, but right now it was quite confident. It was not alone now, and its owner possessed a terrifying power!

“Rank 2 and 3 creatures?” Leylin, who was sitting on the Icy Jade Scorpion's back, suddenly laughed.

Though these creatures didn't seem like much to him, they would definitely be a disaster for the Twilight Zone if they ever left the Icy Cave.

Rank 2 Magi were already considered powerful in Twilight Zone, while rank 3s were rulers. If they were to see the world of ice, this miniature version of the Icy World, their eyes would probably fall out of their sockets.

“Even Celine probably doesn't know how dangerous the interior of the Icy Cave is.” Leylin shook his head, the void behind him distorting and exerting a terrifying pressure. The phantom of a terrifying snake that was tens of thousands of metres long came into view, producing loud snarls.

Winds surged, bringing with them the might of an ancient being at the top of the food chain as they spread in all directions.

The spying eyes were immediately filled with fear, and the sounds of footsteps and bumping sounded. Large numbers of eyes quickly retreated, bloody battles occurring in the darkness just for the escape route. Explosions and shrieks of horror sounded everywhere.

No matter how intense these battles were, none of the icy creatures dared take another glimpse in Leylin's direction.

“You useless thing!” Leylin was annoyed at the incompetence of the Icy Jade Scorpion under him. It had lain on the ground the moment the Giant Kemoyin Serpent figure appeared, and would

not get up no matter how he shouted at it.

Hss... The large Kemoyin Serpent phantom lowered its head and looked at the little green thing that could pass between the gaps in its teeth. It opened its mouth threateningly, revealing a crimson tongue and fierce teeth that were like little hills.

Chik chik! Chik chik! The Icy Jade Scorpion that had been lying on the ground suddenly got up, and began to run like lightning.

Strong winds constantly blew at Leylin's ears, and he didn't know whether to laugh or cry. "This scorpion is really..."

Explosions boomed as a large amount of icy rocks flew into the sky. A layer of ice broke from the top, and a large scorpion that was carrying a black figure jumped through the hole and landed firmly on the ground.

"Hah... Here!" Leylin led the Icy Jade Scorpion to higher ground, looking over the surroundings.

This was a world of ice! Ice and snow covered the place, leading the ground to sparkle. Even the hills and rivers were made of ice! The vegetation that was spread around the area was covered with frost as well. Flowers bloomed and trees bore fruit, all with a terrifying chill.

Things that looked like ribbons hung from large trees, with eyeballs that looked like longans on them, emitting a blue lustre.

‘This scene is so similar to the Icy World in the Scorpion Man’s memories!’ Leylin touched his chin, and a powerful soul force scanned over a large area.

The beings within hundreds of kilometers seemed to have met their natural predator. Whether it was the mountainous icy monsters or the tiny snowflake bugs, everything fell to the ground, trembling.

After a long moment, Leylin opened his eyes once more.

“Just from what I’m able to see, this place is already more than a tenth of the size of Twilight Zone. Could this be the second layer to the subterranean world?” There was naturally more than just one layer underneath the Magus World. It was rumoured that there were seven layers that the ancient Magi had taken over, and the further one went the more dangerous it was. There were even existences like Matriarch of the Abyss.

Of course, the resources there were more plentiful as well. They could be called places where risk met reward.

Twilight Zone was merely in the first layer, and it was quite a normal place. It was only a region which was isolated from the external world.

‘No, that’s not right! The distance is far too small, it can’t be the second layer. It should be in the empty space between the first two layers instead...’ Leylin stroked his chin.

‘When the Scorpion Man fell through the spatial rifts that popped up during that ancient battle, he was transported here. The continuous radiation from the blood of the female bronze giant had transformed this area until it grew similar to the Icy World. It even included the formation of a large number of creatures of the ice.’

Leylin’s expression turned solemn. Existences like these that had stepped across the two-thirds of realms and entered rank 7 were the most troublesome, as they had grasped laws.

Just a droplet of fresh blood from the original body had such a powerful effect. How powerful would the original body have been?

“With such a large area, I wouldn’t find it strange even if I found icy beings of the Morning Star level...” Leylin sighed. The Morning Star realm was a threshold, and if there were Morning Star icy beings here, the difficulty in exploring this place would increase severalfold.

To be direct, if Leylin had come here when he was rank 3, he would definitely have died. Even after he’d advanced to Morning Star, he might not have been able to completely unravel the mysteries of the Icy World.

Of course, Leylin was no longer the same as before. He had improved through his excursions to both the Lava World and Sky City. His true strength now far surpassed the Morning Star realm, and he could even rival Radiant Moons!

Hence, after entering the Icy World, he could use his soul force and probe the area without fear of inadvertently alerting any enemy. Power was enough to pulverise all conspiracies.

‘From the reaction to my soul force just now, the life undulations from here are the strongest!’ Leylin patted the Icy Jade Scorpion that was now seated, and it immediately budged. Jade green limbs began to move with rhythm, each step carrying them a good distance as it crawled in the direction Leylin pointed.

# Chapter 607 - Arctic Tribe

---

When the formidable soul force of a peak Morning Star, which could even rival a Radiant Moon, swept across the area, the entire world of ice started to bubble with activity.

The power of a rank 4 was something that a great many of the icy beasts could not resist. When Leylin's soul force swept over, they could only lower their heads to express their humility, hoping that they wouldn't anger the owner of this soul force.

The energy of a Morning Star, however, also awakened other presences.

In the depths of a castle constructed completely with ice, the frost radiation was so rich that it had hit its limit. Colourful streams of light could even be seen twinkling continuously in the air.

“Arwen!” A cold voice resonated in thin air. Although there was no radiation of energy, it could make the surrounding space tremble faintly.

“Your Majesty, your most loyal servant Arwen is here!” An elderly man dressed in the clothes of a butler walked out of thin air and kneeled towards the source of the voice. He looked incomparably respectful. This man's hair was combed so neatly that not a single strand was out of place, yet his eyes shone with a strange crimson radiance.



His skin was eerily fair, exposing translucent green veins and red arteries.

“Did you sense it?” The female voice asked.

“Yes! A foreign Morning Star has arrived in your territory!” The old man spoke with respect. He was able to sense that Leylin’s soul force was different, which had to be of Morning Star rank at the very least!

“A foreign Morning Star is very important to my evolution. Go! Capture him and bring him to me!” the female voice said.

“Your wish is my command!” The old man accepted his orders respectfully and retreated.

It was when he got up that an abnormality appeared. While the top half of his body had the appearance of a human, the bottom half strangely took the form of a scorpion.

When the butler left, the entire icy castle immediately started to rouse from its slumber like a lion and went into operations.

“All of you, go! Immediately send out a signal once you discover an unfamiliar strong intruder!” The butler, Arwen, stood on top of the tall castle, his voice spreading to every corner below.

As he overlooked everything, large amounts of icy giants in armour started to roar, circular icy shields and blue spears in hand.

The huge door of the icy castle creaked open, and squadrons of icy giants headed out just like human patrol teams. They disappeared into a flurry of snow as far as the eye could see in minutes.

Only Arwen was left standing alone at the highest point of the castle, his thoughts a mystery.

Leylin, of course, had no idea about what was happening there. However, he had already mentally prepared himself after displaying his soul force. Thus, with the icy scorpion under his control, he hurried towards the place nearby where the life aura was the most concentrated.

The Icy Cave that Nature's Alliance controlled previously was only a passageway. It was here that the real world of ice lay...

The humongous icy scorpion galloped wildly across the ice plains with Leylin on its back. Leylin sat cross-legged, dispatching a few shadow servants in his tracks from time to time to pick a few fruits as well as botanical stems, leaves and the such.

He was now examining a fruit that looked like an apple, his eyes aglow.

[Beep! Unknown fruit detected, composition has been recorded. Please give it a name!]

The A.I. Chip responded faithfully.

“Frozen Apple! Classify under Icy World: Botany.” Leylin ordered.

[Recorded. Graphic and composition have been recorded under Icy World data, subject: Botany.]

“Mm,” Leylin nodded. The apple in his hand was covered with a layer of blue ice. Using his fingernail, he swiftly sliced a piece and popped it in his mouth.

It felt like a piece of ice— no, a sensation even colder than that of ice spread in his mouth. If it was any normal human, a mere touch would perhaps freeze them to death, forget consuming it! Yet, Leylin who had a vitality of above 100 was already immune to most of the dangers in the world of ice. Hence, to him, it was as cold as ice cream was for an average person.

“Tastes pretty good, just that it’s a little too sweet.” Leylin had little interest and threw the frozen apple in his hand to the Icy Scorpion.

Chik chik! The Icy Scorpion whined excitedly and swallowed the frozen apple in one bite. After arriving here, it seemed to have become more lively. Leylin watched this while lost in thought.

‘Judging by the number of rank 3 spies and guardians at the passageway previously, the Icy Jade Scorpion wouldn’t have made it here if it came alone...’ Leylin raised his head and took a look at the world of ice. “The icy radiation here is even more terrifyingly concentrated; maybe if we stay for a while more, this Icy Jade Scorpion will be able to evolve to a higher level...”

Since the world of ice was born from the blood of the female bronze giant, the icy radiation would grow more powerful the closer one was to the source.

As long as he searched for the place on the basis of this rule, all conspiracies and methods of concealment would be rendered useless.

Moreover, Leylin discovered that more icy creatures gathered at the places with more icy radiation. They seemed to serve as a form of all-around protection.

“Hmm... The source of the radiation... there’s a Morning Star there, but there’s also an even stranger aura...” Leylin furrowed his brows. Initially, though the aura was very weak, it felt exceptionally dangerous, hence he did not dare to act rashly.

“They should have discovered me already. I wonder how they will deal with me?” The corners of Leylin’s lips curled into a faint smile. At this moment, the huge Icy Scorpion had broken through an ice tornado, and it arrived opposite an ice canyon.

Enormous icicles littered the place, layering on top of each other to form a fortified hill village. There were even a few icy creatures patrolling above.

“Intelligent icy beings?” Leylin exclaimed, and then he urged the Icy Scorpion to head towards it.

“Stand still, intruder! If not, you will suffer from the combined attack of the Aufker Canyon!” The guards on the fort had long discovered Leylin, and hence began to yell at him.

With his astonishing vitality came powerful vision; it allowed Leylin to clearly spot the creatures in the canyon in a split second.

They both belonged to entirely different species. One was a giant more than three metres tall with icy-blue skin, patterned with ice elemental runes. It was covered in a layer of frost.

These giants had boorish facial features, and the harsh lines across their faces emphasised their manliness, a distinctive feature of male creatures.

The other type was an elegant snow fairy with translucent wings and a slim figure. Large amounts of ice energy particles condensed around them, much like a miniature tornado. Most of these fairies were very pretty, and they were likely all female.

‘Wait, are these the two genders of the same race? The frost giant males being exceedingly strong in terms of physical strength and

defensive capabilities, and the snow fairy females that specialise in ice element spells?’

Leylin noticed one other thing as he made his conjecture. He understood their language, and this was because it was some variant of the ancient Byron language.

Seeing that their language was centered around the Byron language, it seemed like the influence that the Magus World had on the Icy World had was not small.

“I am a foreign Magus, and I wish to see your leader!” Leylin made the Icy Scorpion stop in front of the village, and slowly started to speak. Although his voice was not very loud, it was somehow transmitted far away.

There was some movement, and soon after, a few frost giants came running down.

Leylin seemed to be waiting quietly, but he was actually using the A.I. Chip to scan for information and statistics on these intelligent icy creatures.

[Frost Giant (unnamed)]

Strength: 50.9, Agility: 10.1, Vitality: 40.1, Spiritual force: 80,

Innate skill:

1) Frost Skin: The skin of the frost giant has extremely high resistance towards frost radiation, which may even cause the natural formation of a spell rune. It is an important material in the manufacture of some frost magic weapons.

2) Freeze Rebirth: Its astonishing vitality gives the frost giant terrifying recovering powers. In the Icy World, if increased by two energy levels, such recovering powers may even achieve the effect of regrowth of broken limbs!]

[Snow Fairy (unnamed)

Strength: 10.3, Agility: 37.6, Vitality: 20.5, Spirit: 157.3, Magic Power: 157,

Innate skill:

1) Frost Attraction: Snow fairies have a natural affinity for ice energy particles, and may produce innate ice spells following advancements in rank.

2) Ice Tornado: The rich ice energy particles provide extremely strong defence for snow fairies. They automatically generate an ice tornado for protection, that has a similar effect to the Magi's Defiant Ring of Flame.]

He randomly drew data from two of them, and the A.I. Chip immediately displayed specific statistics on the targets. The current A.I. Chip could get information about even those in the Morning Star realm without their knowledge. These members of this race were only at rank 1 or 2, and would not be able to detect it at all.

“Indeed, these two races, which have such glaring differences in body size, are in fact just two forms of the same race!”

Leylin gasped secretly. The work of nature, and the mysterious majesty of the other worlds, all contributed to his strong thirst for knowledge.

They didn't make him wait for long. In practically a few minutes, the gigantic ice doors opened with a rumble. Squadrons of frost knights riding on huge icy monsters came forth.

These riders were all frost giants, and they were seated on all kinds of monsters, all with strange, unique appearances. There were wolves, bears, cheetahs and other forms, but they were all covered in blue frost. It was as though humongous ice sculptures were roaring at Leylin with deep voices.

In the centre of the riders' formation were many snow fairies who had rich concentrations of ice energy particles swirling around them. They stood guard around a double-headed creature.

This creature examined Leylin, and although its eyes revealed a trace of bewilderment, it still spread open its arms, “I am the



leader here, Yamos Andre. Welcome, guest from a foreign place!”

Leylin sized up this leader. He was flabbergasted but instantly restrained himself.

# Chapter 608 - Duchess Rose

---

The leader of the Arctic Tribe who had appeared in front of Leylin was an impressive double-headed creature. Not only that, its body shared characteristics unique to both the frost giants and snow fairies.

A blue radiance flashed in Leylin’s eyes for a moment, unbeknownst to the leader opposite him. A three-dimensional hologram formed in Leylin’s mind, projecting information on this creature.

It was almost three metres tall and had a sturdy yet well-proportioned body, a pair of beautiful translucent wings on its back. What was special was that above its shoulder were two heads, one of a frost giant and another of a snow fairy. They both looked somewhat aged.

The A.I. Chip displayed the rest of the statistics at lightning speed.

[Arctic Tribe (fully grown, unnamed)]

Strength: 55.7, Agility: 41.9, Vitality: 40.1, Spiritual Force: 261.2, Magic Power: 261.

Innate skills:

- 1) Twins: A fully grown member of the Arctic Tribe integrates

the features of both the frost giant and the snow fairy. It has two hearts and two sets of body organs, and thus they two lives. They can recover from any attack that does not completely devastate the body, and also make up for a deficiency in vitality in their other halves.

2) Frost Skin: The Arctic Tribe's skin has extremely high resistance to icy radiation, and will even cause the natural formation of a spell rune, which is an important material in the manufacture of certain frost magic weapons.

3) Frost Affinity: The Arctic Tribe possesses an affinity for ice that surpasses that of the snow fairy, and has the ability to produce innate ice spells following advancements in rank.

4) Ice Tornado: The rich ice energy particles provide extremely strong defence for the Arctic Tribe. They automatically generate an ice tornado for protection, that has a similar effect to the Magi's Defiant Ring of Flame.]

‘These stats show that the members of the Arctic Tribe are an amalgamation of the snow fairy and frost giant, completely inheriting the advantages of both. It’s quite strong for a rank 3.’ Leylin’s pupils glowed.

“Hehe... Does our guest find our tribe’s form very astonishing?” Yamos Andre discovered Leylin’s amazement and started to explain to him, “During infancy, a member of our tribe has two different forms. Only upon reaching adulthood and finding their other half will they conduct the Arctic Blessing Ceremony, after

which they join together as one body and become a true member of the Arctic Tribe!”

The one who explained was the head belonging to a snow fairy, its voice was similar to a female’s.

“Oh, my apologies!” Leylin hurriedly waved his hands. Peeking into another party’s private affairs was considered disrespectful no matter which world one was in. “I was just curious for a moment!”

“Haha... Our Arctic Tribe members appear somewhat odd indeed. Even the other creatures in the Icy World were surprised when they first saw us, so it’s understandable for a guest to feel this way...” The speaker this time was the frost giant head. His voice seemed to be filled with a bold, heroic air.

“Since you are a visitor from far away, we would like to invite you to rest in our village...” The double-headed chief of the tribe, Yamos Andre, invited him in cordially.

At this moment, the low-pitched sound of a bugle horn sounded from the lookout post, following the trembling voice of a frost giant. “Chi... Chief! Ice troops have been discovered headed our way!”

“What?” Both of Yamos’ heads cried out together involuntarily. The frost horsemen on the sides even started to fall back one after another, incessant dread written across their faces.

“Why would they come here? Is it because of you?” Doubtful gazes instantly focused on Leylin.

“Oh? I didn’t expect that the Morning Star here holds a decent amount of power!” Leylin stroked his chin. He didn’t say it directly, but he’d already admitted it with his words, and there was no more room for doubt.

“We do not welcome you here. Please leave immediately. Do not bring disaster to our tribe!” Yamos immediately became hostile, and the frost horsemen lifted the spears in their hands, angling the points towards Leylin. It seemed like they were ready to attack him at a moment’s command.

“May I know who’s coming?” Leylin seemed as if he did not care about the Arctic Tribe’s attacking stance, and instead asked a question while engrossed in thought.

“You’ve already provoked the Arctic Queen, and you still pretend to be unaware?” The female head of Yamos seemed furious, already about to break down.

“The Arctic Queen is the dictator here, and the source of all fear. She is the root cause of all calamity and suffering, and everyone who is related to her will suffer from a curse...” The female head muttered a few words. Leylin was not sure if it was a prophecy or an ancient expression, but it was eminent that its dread towards the Arctic Queen was present.

“The Arctic Queen?” Leylin stroked his chin, “I’m actually

interested in meeting her...”

“Foreigner, leave at once! Do not bring disaster to our village!” The female head of Yamos screeched once more, an ice element storm already formed on her hand.

Thump! Thump! Thump! The tightly packed sounds of many footsteps sounded, and another frost giant sighed. “Yamos, it’s too late!”

As their chief sighed, the guards from the castle had already surrounded the place under the lead of someone mounted on a huge horse.

The cavalry riding the arctic horse was covered in a set of heavy blue armour from head to toe, and in their hand was a large translucent sword that was burning with ice-cold flames.

Two balls of pale soul fires lit up from within their mask, first scanning coldly across Yamos and the rest of the Arctic Tribe, then focusing all of the attention on Leylin.

“Noble Arctic Knight, Duchess Rose! You are the most dazzling star in the Icy World; even the most beautiful snowflake is not comparable to your beauty!” Leylin was rendered speechless as he saw the members of the Arctic Tribe all crouch on the ground, loudly praising the Arctic Knight. This made him roll his eyes.

‘They really speak without thinking. This is a creature who even

revealed its soul fire! Perhaps under her mask is nothing but a human skeleton. You're seeking your own death...' However, much to Leylin's surprise, the Arctic Knight appeared to enjoy their praise. "All of you have committed a crime! You actually dared to interact with this criminal here. But seeing that you did not let him enter the hill village, I will spare you this time..."

The Arctic Knight brandished her huge sword, but did not take further action.

"Ah! Duchess Rose, our lord! Your benevolence is just as boundless as all the oceans in the universe..." Sparkling teardrops flowed out of both of Yamos Andre's heads, forming something similar to a glass ball before falling to the ground. It made a crisp sound.

Hearing their response, Leylin felt goosebumps rise all over his body.

"As for you, foreigner, return with me to the castle! The Arctic Queen wishes to see you!"

Swish! The many giant guards turned their spears towards Leylin.

With their physique and their resistance towards the cold, an average rank 3 Magus would be unable to handle the all-round attack of this small team.

But Leylin didn't seem to mind a single bit, and even asked with interest, "Was it that empress' order to capture me?"

"It was General Arwen's command. But his word is the same as that of the empress." The Arctic Knight clearly did not wish to speak much to Leylin. She straddled her giant horse and was about to escort Leylin away.

"Then... Did he tell you that you have to be careful and immediately send out a signal once you see me, particularly that you should not confront me alone?" Leylin laughed lightly, which gave Duchess Rose a bad feeling.

"Be careful..." Almost the moment these words left her mouth, a few black sparks appeared on the bodies of the surrounding troops.

Boom! More than ten black columns of flames burst out in human form. The guards who had an even stronger physique than frost giants were burnt to ashes without a chance to resist.

"You citizens are to blame!" Duchess Rose roared, and the huge ice horse that she was on suddenly leapt up. The Duchess on the horse's back brandished the gigantic translucent sword in her hand. The flames on the sword rose suddenly and ruthlessly came down upon Leylin.

Ting! The huge sword with terrifying strength that had advanced without fear was stopped by a single finger, unable to budge an inch.



“If we were to use the Magus World’s classification, you’re at least a Crystal Phase Magus, and you even cultivate pure physical strength. It’s quite a rare thing to see, but it’s such a pity that all that’s useless...” Leylin seemed to sigh as his finger slashed out.

A crescent of light hummed as it pierced through the Arctic Knight’s armour, forming a humongous slit. Her body was flung backwards as fast as an incoming train, leaving a deep gutter trail in the solid ice, which extended far into the distance.

Even the huge arctic horse she’d ridden was smashed and shattered by the tremendous force, splintering apart into a heap of sparkling fragments.

“.....”

“...”

Silence. The entire scene had fallen into a deathly silence. Yamos Andre found it hard to even swallow his saliva. He looked at Leylin, unable to believe his eyes.

‘Almighty Arctic Queen, what did I just see?’ The Duchess Rose who had been renowned for her strength, the Arctic Knight who struck fear into the hearts of all the denizens of the world of ice, was defeated by this mysterious Magus with just a single finger?

It was not just Yamos Andre. The other frost giants and snow fairies had lifeless looks on their faces as well. They felt like they

were hallucinating.

“So? Do you still welcome me now?” Leylin turned and smiled at Yamos Andre. Yet, to Yamos it seemed like the smile of a demon.

A few timid snow fairies were so intimidated that they hid behind the frost giants, as though Leylin was some ancient fearsome creature.

“Of... Of course!” The frost giant head of Yamos nodded, “Please forgive my rude behaviour earlier. Respected lord, you are the saviour of the world of ice, our new master!”

Leylin rolled his eyes, dumbfounded. The Arctic Tribe was completely hopeless when it came to morals.

# Chapter 609 - Arwen

---

“Found it! It’s there!” The moment Leylin defeated the Arctic Knight, a hint of happiness emerged on Arwen’s face. He’d been waiting in the castle at the core of this world of ice the whole time.

He pulled out a few pieces of black crystal from his arms, among which one had already cracked quite obviously.

“It’s the canyon area that Rose is in charge of!” After discovering the target, Arwen’s entire person blurred into a phantom as he shot towards the canyon area.

Of course, he’d never hoped that his subordinates would capture a Morning Star; that would just be a joke. Those he’d sent out this time would serve as nothing more than a warning.

Once they came into contact with that Morning Star, Arwen who was in control of their spirit sources would know immediately.

Hence, that Duchess Rose from before was just cannon fodder in his eyes.

Arwen who was far away had an indifferent and emotionless expression. In a battle between Morning Stars, it was in fact very extraordinary that Duchess Rose ended up being cannon fodder.

---

At the same time, in canyon area within the hill village of the Arctic Tribe, Leylin looked at Yamos speechlessly as the creature crawled and knelt at his feet, both hands clinging to his boots.

“My Lord! The Arctic Queen is the most evil of demons! She greedily exploited our Arctic Tribe’s resources, and even asked our matured members to become blood sacrifices... She has brought us great suffering and tears of blood. We beg you, Sire must help us with our vengeance! Defeat the Arctic Queen...”

Yamos was over two metres tall, veritably a small giant. For such a creature to kneel before him and cry so hard left Leylin at a loss for words.

The chief of the snow elves, Amos, was also apologising with tears in his eyes, complaining about the Arctic Queen’s evil deeds simultaneously.

“Actually, other than a regular tribute and having your matured members become blood sacrifices, it seems as if this Arctic Queen hasn’t committed any evil?”

Yamos was clearly just one person, but there were different thoughts from two different brains buzzing beside Leylin’s ears continuously, making him feel a little fed up.

However, he still endured it by force of will in order to obtain the information, all the while plotting something in his heart.

The situation in the world of ice also grew clearer to him. From Yamos' introduction, he learned that the place was very vast, with many tribes scattered across it. They were all being ruled by someone called the Arctic Queen.

This queen seldom appeared in public, and it could be said that she had almost never shown her face before.

All the affairs were handled by her butler, Arwen. The man possessed a formidable strength. The tribes that had been exploited and oppressed had allied together in several crusades but had easily been defeated by him. After a few bloodbaths, there was no one else in this miniature Icy World who dared to go against the Arctic Queen's regime.

Leylin felt like the tribute this Arctic Queen demanded was still quite mild. It was only her demand for blood sacrifices that was terrifyingly huge.

There were almost no adults other than the chief in the Arctic Tribe. Based on Yamos' accusations, they had either fled or were sent to the castle to be used as blood sacrifices.

'It seems like the Scorpion Man's remains and the female bronze giant's bloodline are definitely related to the Arctic Queen. They may even be right in her castle!' Leylin stroked his chin, thinking of something, 'All these blood sacrifices, could it be...'

His eyes sparkled, and soon after he suddenly lifted his head and looked into the distant sky.

A small black dot grew larger and larger, pressing down like a small mountain. The approaching figure was that of an icy creature who was half human, half scorpion. His upper body was dressed in a butler's suit, the bloodshot eyes leaving a deep impression.

“It's Arwen! Oh God, Sir Arwen has come personally!” Yamos burst out at a shocking speed, and with a whoosh it arrived at the platform where Yamos had arrived and knelt down. Emotional tears flowed down from all four eyes.

“Sir Arwen, you're finally here! This criminal has committed a grave mistake, we need you to judge him! Yamos is your loyal servant—”

Before Yamos could finish speaking, a faint blue light enveloped it in a moment, turning it into an ice sculpture.

A web of cracks emerged on this sculpture, covering it up entirely before it shattered into pieces. It sounded like a glass cup had fallen to the ground.

Yamos, along with the ice sculpture, had turned into dust. Faced with such strength, even the Arctic Tribe's innate ability of symbiosis was rendered completely ineffective.

“Greetings, foreign Morning Star!” After killing Yamos, Arwen pulled out a clean, white handkerchief and wiped his palms, greeting Leylin as if he was an unconcerned person.

“Hello, powerhouse of the world of ice!” Leylin bowed.

Arwen’s form was slightly similar to the Scorpion Man he had previously seen. However, there were also major differences. His figure was smaller and did not carry the fierce aura that came with the bloodline of an ancient creature. Having the Giant Kemoyin Serpent Bloodline himself, Leylin could easily identify it.

But seeing how he had shown up here, and also his appearance, he was related to the Scorpion Man.

“I represent my master, the Arctic Queen, in inviting you to her castle. I wonder if Sir is willing to accept her invitation?” Arwen bowed humbly.

“I’ve admired the Arctic Queen for a long time. But what if I refuse?” A mocking smile emerged at the corners of Leylin’s lips.

“That would be a great pity!” Arwen shook his head, as if he was feeling sorry for Leylin’s irrationality.

A blood-red light shot out of his eyes in a flash. As if the entire earth was shaken, thunder roared and his entire body jumped into motion from his stationary state, coming before Leylin as if he had broken through the boundaries of time and space,

Swoosh! A long and translucent dark green needle rushed towards Leylin, a bright, dazzling radiance at its tip.

A tail was attached to the long needle. It was the tail section of a scorpion!

However, Leylin already knew about the Scorpion Man's strong body from the Icy Jade Scorpion Emperor's memories. How would he let Arwen get his way?

A small round shield emerged to block the stinger almost the same moment it rushed forth, blocking the unavoidable strike. Giant Kemoyin Serpents moved around on the shield's surface, hissing on occasion.

The dark green needle broke through the center of the bloodline shield with a snip, arriving in front of Leylin.

"Kemoyin's Scales!" Instantaneously, the innate defence emerged on the surface of Leylin's body. After his vitality surpassed 100, this rank 1 innate spell seemed to have undergone an intriguing change. Not only was there an additional layer of blazing stripes on the scales, they had even grown dazzling.

Ka-cha! A small white dot emerged on the black scales and Leylin's figure retreated. At the same time, the red crescent of light from his earring swept across Arwen's chest. Dazzling sparks flew out as it collided with a translucent icy armour that suddenly appeared.

"High-grade magic artifact?" Arwen looked at the huge crack on his chestplate as a trace of apprehension appeared on his face.



Large amounts of white, icy fog solidified, mending the damage to the armour.

‘There are no weaknesses to exploit in a Morning Star!’

The confrontation just now had occurred very quickly, and was very dangerous. Although the spells that Morning Star Magi took most pride in were not used, the mere confrontation in strength and vitality created a lingering fear in Leylin.

Arwen’s previous attack was very strange. If not for his vitality breaking past 100 and the addition of his bloodline, an attack at such close quarters would have probably injured him severely.

‘Morning Stars from a foreign place may not excel in magical abilities! Hence there’s a need to pay attention to all aspects!’ After opening up some distance between them, Leylin directed a cold gaze at Arwen.

“You’re the first person who was able to escape my ‘Breath of Doom’!” Arwen looked at his own stinger, his face seeming a little regretful yet gratified.

“Damn you! In this world of ice, is there another Morning Star apart from you and your queen?” Leylin secretly rolled his eyes.

Because the outside world did not have any icy radiation, it was very rare for Arwen to go out even after he advanced to Morning Star. In fact, because he had to protect the Arctic Queen, he

probably even rarely left the castle. He used Morning Star strength to bully the aboriginals of the world of ice, yet he still had the nerve to act like an expert.

Although he felt a little speechless, Leylin still looked at his opponent carefully. Arwen would rank as a Four Star Morning Star according to Sky City's rankings. If his body's special abilities were included, his strength would probably even reach Five Stars.

A certain amount of effort would be needed to take down such an enemy.

A splendid starry sky suddenly emerged behind Leylin, illuminating a sea of blood. Facing Arwen, Leylin emitted his own Morning Star domain. His terrifying pull on bloodlines attracted Arwen's own, making his face flush slightly red.

With him being a Warlock with an ancient bloodline who had also received that bloodline's legacy, Leylin's Morning Star domain was naturally connected to it.

"So this is the Morning Star domain of a Magus... In our world of ice, we call it the 'Power Aura' or 'Vitality's Forcefield'!" A realm of ice emerged behind Arwen as he spoke, offsetting Leylin's Morning Star domain.

The two huge domains collided, making even the void vibrate. The illusory walls shattered, creating the feeling as if the world being destroyed.

However, Arwen's icy realm was evidently suppressed by Leylin's domain, causing his expression to change.

“Did you know the most terrifying thing about us Magi is still our spells?” Leylin's smile made Arwen's hair stand on end...

# Chapter 610 - Capture

---

Magi mastered the usage of laws through knowledge and comprehension. Using their spiritual force, they manipulated elemental particles to form all sorts of spells. This was their path to power.

They didn't stop at that, though. Along with comprehending laws, they also integrated other power systems into their own spells. This was what led to the glory of ancient times.

Leylin knew from the Scorpion Man's memories that the creatures of the Icy World were famed for their strength and vitality. Arwen, who stood opposite him, had evidently inherited these traits.

Although Leylin was a bloodline Warlock, he still did not measure up in a contest against an actual ancient creature. Hence, as a true Magus should, he tried to shift the battlefield to one in his favour.

As in the words from his previous life, one had to match one's strengths to their opponent's weaknesses.

After widening the distance between them and using the domain to restrict movement, the efficacy of Arwen's frightening speed and strength, as well as his powerful stinger, had been minimised.

In the meanwhile, Leylin could unleash a barrage of spells, obtaining the greatest result at the lowest cost. This was what

‘Knowledge is Power’ meant!

“I’ve experienced the Morning Star creatures of the Icy World. Now, it’s your turn to taste the terror that is a bloodline Warlock...”

The enormous phantom of a Giant Kemoyin Serpent emerged behind Leylin. Two starry pupils shot out petrifying rays of light as the huge snake’s body coiled up, covering Arwen within.

The earth rumbled as terrifying energy ripples were transmitted across the sky, completely annihilating the Arctic Tribe in an instant. The frightening energy ripple destroyed the entire fortified hill village to a state beyond recognition, and it happened in a flash. It was like the apocalypse had hit the village.

Arctic Tribe members who had previously been sluggish due to the death of the chief were now all shrieking, running out of the fortified hill village in hopes of getting far away from this place.

To put it bluntly, this place was completely destroyed.

Explosions sounded one after another. The competition between the two Morning Stars even affected the void, causing space to splinter away.

“What’s going on? How is this Morning Star infiltrator so powerful?” Arwen grew more and more shocked. He had a bloodline’s legacy and even the guidance of a mysterious presence,

which made him think himself a powerhouse in the Morning Star realm.

But today, the foreign Morning Star that the queen wanted him to capture was much more powerful than he was. Those casting of spells that emerged endlessly and the strange innate skill of the bloodline made it very troublesome for him.

As the void shattered with a bang, Arwen and Leylin both fell into the crack between the worlds.

“I have to seize him! It’s an order from Her Highness!” Arwen looked at Leylin who was in front of him with a determined gaze. Streaks of dark green energy suddenly emerged from his body, forming strange patterns that covered it. The skin on his back exploded with a boom and a huge figure rushed out from his back.

This huge mountain-like scorpion’s entire body was dark green in colour and there was the extremely distinct face of a woman on its back.

Arwen’s previous human body was now like a piece of skin, floating in the void.

“Icy Jade Scorpion!” Leylin cried out involuntarily. Arwen’s true form was actually a large Icy Jade Scorpion! With such a figure, it probably surpassed the existence of species like that Icy Jade Scorpion Emperor he’d fought before.

“Chik chik!” The large scorpion yelled. The huge claws in its hands were like falling meteorites as they smashed towards Leylin with a terrifying force.

This frightening strength caused even the void to shudder.

“Hoho... It seems like I share a destiny with you Icy Jade Scorpions. Moreover, the breath of an Icy Jade Scorpion at the Morning Star realm will surely have an unimaginable effect on my bloodline disease. I’ll have to modify my plans...” Leylin’s pupils sparkled.

Although his battle prowess was comparable to a New Moon, and he had killed a Radiant Moon Magi before, all of that power was only acquired using the imprint of the Sun’s Child bloodline.

As for his true power, he could still take down a Five Star Morning Star, but it would require a great fight and there was a chance that he’d let the enemy escape.

Now that his opponent had revealed his true form as an Icy Jade Scorpion. Leylin’s desire to capture him alive grew even greater.

If he used the bloodline imprint to cast Sun Scorching Nirvana, Arwen would undoubtedly be burnt to nothingness. But Leylin still hoped to obtain his breath to try and treat the bloodline disease at the Morning Star realm.

“I admit you are very useful, Arwen! I won’t kill you that easily as

you have things that I want!”

Leylin spoke indifferently. Four scarlet halos lit up behind him. and even fused together to form a terrifying spell.

“Rank 1 bloodline innate spells, Kemoyin’s Scales, Eyes of Petrification! Rank 2 innate spell, Toxic Bile. rank 3 innate spell, Intimidating Gaze! Rank 4 innate spell, Bloodline Metamorphosis! Combining to form the Morning Star Arcane Art— Kemoyin Serpent Transformation!”

With Leylin’s point mass and bloodline giving him Six Stars of strength, the power of the Kemoyin Serpent Transformation had almost reached the peak that all Kemoyin Warlocks desired.

The earth rumbled as a giant serpent, nearly a hundred thousand metres in length and with blazing stripes on its body as well as starry pupils emerged.

The Icy Jade Scorpion from before was like a tiny toy in front of this behemoth.

Its huge claws slashed across the serpent’s scales. They managed to cause some sparks to fly, but could not even push the giant serpent away slightly.

“WHAT? You’re not a bloodline creature, why can you carry out atavism?” A voice full of disbelief echoed forth from the Icy Jade Scorpion. Before the terrifying Giant Kemoyin Serpent, almost all



of the stubbornness and pride inside Arwen disappeared.

This was the technique that only Morning Star Kemoyin Warlocks possessed, the Morning Star Arcane Art— Kemoyin Serpent Transformation! Once again, it displayed its monstrous might in front of this foreign tribe!

Although the ancient Morning Star Magi possessed a large variety of spells, they were nothing much to flaunt in front of the powerful Morning Stars of other worlds. Amongst the many Morning Star tribes, there were plenty of Magi whose abilities surpassed those of Morning Stars.

However, the greatest strength of ancient Magi was that they were good at learning.

By imitating their opponents, ancient Magi obtained all sorts of powerful abilities and even figured out the way to modify and stabilise innate spells through meditation techniques, creating the first of the Morning Star Arcane Arts!

Against the terrifying Morning Star Arcane Arts, the powerhouses of all the other worlds retreated one after another. Even the World of Gods had suffered heavy casualties.

Arwen was someone who'd only been born much later. He hadn't even left this world of ice in his entire life, and thus he naturally couldn't understand such terror. It led to him receiving a great shock.

Hissss... Of course, Leylin would not explain anything to Arwen. The enormous Giant Kemoyin Serpent directly crushed the creature down, firmly binding the Icy Jade Scorpion. At the same time, a petrifying light danced about on its body.

The large Icy Jade Scorpion wailed continuously for a short while...

---

With the writhing of the void, a dark passageway opened up. Leylin, dressed in a black robe, walked out with one hand holding the petrified Arwen.

Arwen had already regained his human form, just that his entire body was covered in a layer of stone. He was like a statue.

Only, the fearful expression on this opponent's face had not disappeared. It was as if he had seen something extremely terrifying before he was petrified.

“Too easy, simply too easy!” Leylin sighed, “In fact, Morning Star Magi and strong Morning Stars of the other worlds don't have much of a difference in their nature. Their energies are almost at the same level, but once the Morning Star Arcane Art is used, we can steamroll over the other worlds' powerhouses!”

Take for example this instance. Both he and Arwen were Morning Stars, one at Five Stars and the other at Six Stars. Common sense dictated that, if he were facing another of the

Magus World, he could defeat his opponent but without using the Sun's Child imprint, it would be relatively difficult for him to kill them. The opponent could always use his Morning Star Arcane Art and flee.

However, Arwen was different. When confronted with his Morning Star Arcane Art, he seemed to be suppressed without any resistance.

“No wonder the ancient Magi could crush a lot of the other worlds!” Leylin could not help but admire the ancient Magi who attempted high-level meditation techniques and used point mass to activate the innate spell fusions to create a terrifying killer move. Even for him at the present, it would require a lot of time to deduct things from scratch, and it may not even be successful. However, the ancient Magi managed to do it and from this, the strong foundation of the Magus World was established!

“It's not such a bad harvest this time! I can probably use his Morning Star icy breath to curb the emotional instability that comes from the Purgatory World.” Leylin analysed Arwen's statue as he stroked his chin.

The bloodline disease of Giant Kemoyin Serpent Warlocks originated from the Purgatory World. Due to their defeat in the Shadow World, the Snake Dowager brought all her clan members with her and migrated to the Purgatory World.

However, descendants of the Snake Dowager that were originally had darkness element attribute were all contaminated by the chaotic World's Will in the Purgatory World, giving rise to berserk

characteristics. In order to solve this problem completely, the Snake Dowager thought of the using Icy World, and that was the battle that Leylin had witnessed.

According to the A.I. Chip's deductions, the Icy Jade Scorpion tribe here possessed excellent curbing effects for Leylin's own emotional instability. Last time, he'd managed to use just a peak rank 1 Icy Jade Scorpion Emperor's Icy Breath to suppress his emotional instability all the way up to Morning Star.

And now, with an Icy Jade Scorpion at the Morning Star realm, Leylin was confident in eradicating his bloodline disease.

With the A.I. Chip having completed its database on the soul recently, Leylin could now control his influence on the soul much easier, boosting his power even further.

Leylin tilted his head as he pondered. Arwen's statue in hand, he transformed into a black streak that disappeared into the horizon.

Only after that did the frost giants and snow fairies who did not manage to leave in time pop their heads out from various corners, eyes full of consternation as they looked towards the direction that had Leylin departed in.

What had they just seen? The Arctic Queen's chief lackey— mass murderer Arwen, was actually defeated by a foreigner just like that?

Their fear towards Arwen even exceeded that towards the Arctic Queen. After all, although this place was ruled in the name of the Arctic Queen, she basically did not appear in public at all, and all affairs were taken care of by Arwen.

One could imagine the kind of shock that Arwen's defeat brought them.

# Chapter 611 - Extraction And Elimination

---

CHIIII— The very moment Arwen was taken away, a piercing sound exploded in the icy castle, causing the air to quiver and the ground to tremble.

Large numbers of guards knelt on the ground, shuddering as they begged the Arctic Queen to quell her anger.

However, their prayers were to no avail.

A dazzling blue light swept out, wrapping up the entire castle within. The icy beings in the castle, be they guards, maids, servants, or prisoners, all turned into ice sculptures. Streams of blue light gathered from their bodies, tunnelling into the ground like earthworms.

Whoosh! When all the blue lustre disappeared from the ice sculptures, numerous cracks appeared on them as they crumbled apart to form a snow-white powder. The castle sank into a deathly silence.

Meanwhile, in another place deep underground.

The steel-like ice opened up automatically, showing a structure similar to a basement. An Eternal Light spell illuminated the entire area.

Many beakers and tools were placed on a translucent tabletop,

seemingly in a mess yet possessing some kind of order. Some of the beakers were full of colourful, even smelly fluids.

Leylin stood at the simplified laboratory table, watching the stone statue that was once Arwen at the centre of the spell formation, a teasing look on his face.

This Five Star Morning Star, someone who was considered the leader of the world of ice, had now been turned into a mere stone statue. Even his soul had been frozen completely, leaving behind a shell that still had life force within.

Based on previous experience, he would get the best results when the breath of the Icy Jade Scorpion was used together with icy radiation.

And in order to preserve the freshness of the material, Arwen was forced to suffer, becoming Leylin's captive. He would definitely not meet a good end.

'When I probed the area during my entry to this place, there was still a more mysterious aura than Arwen's in the icy castle. Was that the Arctic Queen?' Leylin frowned, and threads of blood-red light were emitted by a spell formation with but a thought. They began to spread to the inner parts of the stone sculpture.

"Hand over your memories, little lamb that has lost its way!" Leylin's eyes were serene as he chanted some kind of ancient incantation with a strange pitch. Runes began to disappear into the spell formation.

Ooooo— A woman’s wail sounded out, and three long-haired female figures appeared within the spell formation.

These three female youths wore blood-red dresses, not looking a day over thirty years of age. They seemed very pretty, but their expressions were varied.

One was beaming, the crescent of her eyes so pronounced that they were practically closed. The other showed distress, while the one in the middle was emotionless, like a block of ice.

“Go!” Leylin pointed towards the statue. The three female figures floated and circled the stone statue, occasionally extending translucent hands into the stone statue’s brain.

Afterwards, three red figures entered Arwen’s mind, and the stone statue shook continuously. The spell formation had no choice but to strengthen the seal.

“Arghhh—” In that moment, the ghastly wailing increased tenfold in volume, a layer of demonic blood emanating from Arwen’s body.

[Reached critical period. Target is about to break down.]

The A.I. Chip produced a timely reminder.



“Come back, my darlings!” Leylin’s eyes were filled with a strange light as he made a very attractive sound.

As if some invisible force-field had appeared, the three figures were pulled out from within the stone statue.

The three figures’ varying expressions had been enhanced further. They shrank to a tenth of their original size, gathering on top of Leylin’s palm. Boiling hot, complicated emotions flooded Leylin’s mind.

“Chaotic emotions as well as memory fragments.... A.I. Chip!” Leylin immediately commanded.

Rumble! The surge of complicated emotions seemed to have hit a tall mountain. Though Morning Star Warlocks had intense emotions, they were merely complicated hormone secretions to be recorded down for the unfeeling A.I. Chip.

Once the emotions were intercepted, the A.I. Chip began to arrange the scattered and fragmented memories.

One after another, scattered images were formed in front of Leylin’s eyes. They were very fragmented, and even with the A.I. Chip’s reorganisation Leylin could not find any information that was significant.

After the extensive data was transmitted, the three spirits in

Leylin's hands exploded, dissipating like a fog. Leylin's expression did not change as he sighed.

“Extracting the memories of a Morning Star is truly troublesome...” The soul force of a Morning Star Magus was extremely powerful, and memories protected by it were akin to the most stable fort. Leylin could destroy it with ease, but he would find it difficult to find the content within, even with the support of the A.I. Chip.

However, with its strengthened abilities and the database on the soul, the A.I. Chip was able to give Leylin a nice surprise.

An image that was not quite as incomplete was projected before Leylin. This was a map of the world of ice, with a red dot of light at the centre. It was extremely dazzling.

As he zoomed in, the red light was magnified, revealing a castle built entirely of ice. Multicolour light formed a splendid view of it.

“Such dense icy radiation?” Leylin sucked in a cold breath. He could now confirm that the bloodline of the female bronze giant was within the palace.

“But where's the Arctic Queen?” Leylin asked with doubt as he skimmed through the other information found by the A.I. Chip. However, there were no records of this Queen, which was rather interesting.

Even if the Arctic Queen rarely showed herself, Arwen who was her number one subordinate should have had opportunities to meet her.

“Memory seals?” Leylin touched his chin. Some Magi could choose to store or seal their important memories, and that was an even easier task for Morning Star Magi.

‘It looks like this mysterious Arctic Queen has a lot of secrets...’ Leylin shook his head and commanded, “A.I. Chip, begin the second phase. Obtain the Icy Breath and purify the bloodline.”

Arwen’s memories were merely an appetiser. The full course that Leylin was waiting on was the unique Icy Breath that belonged to the Icy Jade Scorpion. It was very effective for his emotional instability.

On top of that, Leylin had the premonition that for Giant Kemoyin Serpents, rank 4 should not be the limit. However for some reason, be it because of genes restrictions or the influences from the Purgatory World, Giant Kemoyin Serpents had lost the ability to evolve further.

If he could completely treat his emotional imbalance, his grasp of the Kemoyin bloodline would reach unprecedented levels.

Only after reaching this state would he have the confidence to attempt at tackling the Giant Kemoyin Serpent bloodline issue.

With Leylin's command, the A.I. Chip began its precise task. Arwen's statistics in all aspects were recorded, and it formulated the most accurate plan of operation, presenting it before Leylin.

“Record all the information in its entirety!” Leylin took out a silver surgical knife with complicated patterns on it, eyes emanating a heated radiance.

‘Dissecting an ancient bloodline creature completely, especially one at the Morning Star realm, is not an easy opportunity to come by...’

[Mission established. Beginning recording.]

The A.I. Chip intoned loyally.

“Begin!” Leylin was now wearing a snow-white gown, the plastic gloves on his hands having gone through rigorous sterilisation. With the power of magic, while it looked primal, the level of this laboratory was rather similar with the one in Leylin's previous world, and in certain ways even surpassed it!

Thud! A layer of rocky skin fell, revealing the skin and flesh on Arwen's arm.

Under Leylin's surgical knife, the two were easily separated to reveal translucent blood vessels...

Swish! A black ray of light streaked through the horizon, as glorious as a shooting star.

Leylin's eyes were like stars, a hint of glee in his expression.

"I feel better than I've ever felt before!" Feeling the coldness in his mind and no longer having any jittery emotions, Leylin was in a great mood.

The icy breath from the Morning Star ranked Arwen was the best medicine for Leylin's emotional instability. Added to the soul treatment with help from the A.I. Chip, the negative effects that came together with fusing with the Giant Kemoyin Serpent's soul had been completely eliminated.

In other words, the chaotic World Will that had come from the Snake Dowager migrating the entire species to the Purgatory World was now forever gone from his body!

[Beep! Host has removed influence from chaotic World Will. Kemoyin bloodline being purified...]

the A.I. Chip called to his attention.

When he looked with his soul force, the purplish-red bloodline in his body now ran deeper, and each time his heart pulsed a

purifying force was pumped to all parts of his body. The various parts of his body reacted strangely to this purifying force, resulting in a complete transformation from head to toe.

‘Morning Star soul force is supposed to nourish a Magus’ body, transforming it qualitatively in order to form the perfect Morning Star body... That is supposed to be equivalent to the standard of a normal Heavenly Astral. Not only does my current body already surpass this so-called standard, it even has a chance of evolving further...’

Leylin felt that after his bloodline’s transformation was complete, he would be able to peek at an even more terrifying realm. The natural rank of their bloodline was what prevented Kemoyin Warlocks from ever advancing to rank 5. However, there was currently a high possibility that he would be able to break past that!

# Chapter 612 - Arctic Queen

---

A black shooting star streaked across the horizon, its magnificence amplified under the translucent icy sky.

Leylin was sending out a thread of soul force every once in a while, scanning the energies of the surrounding beings.

‘It seems like Arwen’s fall caused some sort of chain reaction.’ As far as he could see, the various regions in this world of ice had been disturbed at least on some level. Many of the intellectual icy beings, such as the Arctic Tribe, and even the ice leopards and the frost dragons were beginning to rebel against the Arctic Queen’s rule.

‘It’s understandable though. The other races never could stand being under her rule anyway. Since she’s fallen, a frenzied rebellion is only to be expected,’ Leylin thought as he touched his pouch. Extracting the Icy Breath to treat his emotional stability was not the only thing he’d done. He hadn’t wasted any part of the body, not even his bloodline. It was all currently stored in his pouch.

There were still many survivors who had seen Leylin defeat Arwen, and news had spread quickly. Without the suppression of a Morning Star, the rebellion of these various races was not surprising.

‘But the Arctic Queen has been in power for so many years... It doesn’t make sense for everything to fall apart so bad so quickly...’

Leylin's eyes twinkled with a distinct light. Even with Arwen's death, the Arctic Queen's guards should not have been defeated so quickly. It was like the headquarters had been destroyed with no clear commands given.

At this point, Leylin suddenly had a thought, 'Could there be something wrong at the Arctic Queen's palace?'

That was all he managed to think of. The shooting star that was Leylin whizzed faster into the horizon, only leaving behind after-images in the sky.

Even rank 3 creatures could only crouch on the ground, unable to move after seeing Leylin hurtling past. They were terrified by his speed and prowess...

The castle of ice was located at the heart of this world, and when Leylin came here he found that the vicinity of the place had gone up in smoke.

The many suppressed races had formed an alliance, gathering troops at the centre of the icy plains.

The few remaining guards were led by Arctic Knights as they used the terrain of the great valley at their stronghold to fight back, but it was a losing battle. It looked like this alliance would be able to enter the castle in no time at all.

'Keke... With Arwen's death, the entire castle's defence is



rendered useless!’ Watching the bustling camp of the allied forces, a smirk rose about Leylin’s lips, ‘When they breach the walls of the palace and, instead of victory, see the Arctic Queen who’s even more terrifying than Arwen, what kind of expression will they have?’

Leylin’s eyes did not stop on the battlefield, and instead switched to the castle.

There were a few loyal guards and the like who wanted to stop him, but they were no match for him at all. They were not even able to hold him back for a few seconds.

What Leylin found strange was that the closer he got to the castle, the weaker the resistance grew. The moment he arrived on top of the place, the guards only dared to look at him from afar, not advancing. It was as if there was some kind of terrifying danger within the castle.

‘This is the place? There’s no life force in here at all, only some kind of absorptive force...’ Leylin hovered above the castle of ice and observed its magnificence, though his eyes only held solemnness.

The icy radiation had peaked here, and the concentration was hundreds, even thousands of times greater than in the outer world. It was constantly changing and growing, distorting continuously.

“Those below Morning Star probably won’t be able to survive here...” The radiation was far too powerful, to the point that no

ordinary beings could handle it; it had become a life-threatening poison!

However, what astonished Leylin was not the concentration of the radiation, but the mysterious absorptive force coming from the ground.

The area under this castle of ice was like a terrifying black hole to his senses, continuously absorbing the life force of everything on the ground. On top of that, it was expanding without end.

A thick layer of white, icy powder had formed on the ground, left behind by some unlucky fighters.

Blue light shot out from Leylin's eyes, and he cried out involuntarily. "No! It's not their life force that's being absorbed... It's the frost energy and the icy nature of their bloodlines..."

Suddenly, as if having sensed Leylin's arrival, the entire surface of the castle began to quiver.

That vague scent and aura Leylin had sensed began to awaken, its strength increasing.

"Ugh..." The mumble of a female voice resounded above the icy castle.

Large amounts of winds and snow gathered, forming the statue of a female giant.

The woman had a crown on her head, a dignified pair of freezing eyes under slender eyelashes. She extended her arms towards the distant battle.

Rumble! Terrifying blue pillars of light emerged from the ground, and seemed to break through into the heavens, releasing endless ripples of energy.

The eyes of those who had been embroiled in the bloody battle were suddenly filled with confusion and regret.

“All hail the Queen!” “All hail the Queen!” “All hail the Queen!”

A guard was the first to toss away his lance and shield, running towards the danger zone that he’d avoided as if it was a den of scorpions and snakes, looking extremely enthusiastic.

His legs were frozen as a blue light emerged from them and travelled underground. They then cracked off.

The guard did not notice at all. Even when his two legs were torn off, he still tried to get to the castle on his hands, the injury clotted with a layer of frost.

The frost continued to expand, covering the entirety of the guard. Traces of blue light were absorbed by the ground, causing his life force to weaken continuously.

He was zealous unto death, as if the Arctic Queen was his goddess to whom he was willing to sacrifice his everything.

‘This is even more terrifying than an illusion. Even his soul isn’t his own anymore...’ Leylin sighed from high in the sky, watching everything apathetically.

It was not just the guards. Even the opposing allied forces threw their weapons away, showing the same fanaticism after one glance at the female giant. They rushed towards the castle as well.

Countless icy statues formed and then broke down, forming a thick layer of white powder on the ground. Yet, even that did not prevent them from surging forth, wave upon wave.

Blue light was emitted from Leylin’s eyes, and great amounts of information were stored in his database. With the A.I. Chip’s collection of statistical data, everything was presented before him.

‘The attraction of the bloodline? The icy radiation too had affected their behaviour!’ Leylin touched his chin. This was not a temporary control from illusory spells, but a terrifying effect that was formed over a long period of time. That was why the effects were so good, such that even rank 3 beings could not escape.

“Looks like this is a blood sacrifice...” Leylin suddenly guessed. Perhaps the Arctic Queen had herded the various races in this world like livestock. Every once in a while, they would be harvested after reaching maturity.

“If that’s so, the Arctic Queen is probably...” A flash of determination appeared in Leylin’s eyes, Morning Star radiation engulfing the area.

The void itself seemed to tremble, and the world instantly turned black and white.

The scope of the radiation continuously widened, and the few that had yet to enter the range of the castle suddenly showed looks of pain and suffering as they collapsed to the ground, their faces distorting. Even their internal organs swelled and ruptured.

Leylin had already reached the peak of Morning Star. He usually kept his radiation sealed, which was how he brought no harm to his surroundings wherever he went. Now, his suddenly unleashing it was difficult for the rank 3 beings to bear.

The sufferance was enough for these icy beings to regain their senses. They raised their heads, eyes full of terror as they stared hard at the floating Leylin and the female giant. Making some strange sounds, they escaped without turning back.

Even so, they’d come into contact with Leylin’s powerful radiation. There were a few rank 2s and 3s at the side who could still use their own strength to rid themselves of the contamination, but those weaker than that would probably die if they were contaminated. It was only a matter of time.

Before their lives were completely burnt through, they would still have to deal with bearing the pain from the contamination.

The disturbance seemed to spread further and further as more of these tribals regained their sanity. No matter what camp they were in, these life-and-death enemies all escaped pitifully, only wanting to get as far away as possible.

The female giant in the air suddenly turned back, her eyes focussing on Leylin. Coldness was laid bare in them, but Leylin met her gaze head on.

He hadn't interfered at first because he needed to collect information and calculate the way the energy was used. Yet, once all was said and done, he wouldn't be so stupid as to let his opponent grow in power.

The giant made of ice snarled, and a large icy tornado was formed at her fist, hurtling towards Leylin.

A gigantic Giant Kemoyin Serpent appeared at Leylin's back. Compared to before, it was now even larger, and its eyes glowed with greater intelligence as it hissed at the giant.

Boom! Formless sound waves clashed with the tornado, and snow filled the sky.

# Chapter 613 - Illusion And Manipulation

---

“A mere clone wants to attack me?” Leylin sneered, the phantom Giant Kemoyin Serpent behind him rapidly shrinking. Its body was now more substantial, and its scales reflected a dazzling luster.

The Giant Kemoyin Serpent snarled, its tremendous tail whipping at the female giant like a mace.

Boom! The female giant’s body blew up, and snowflakes fluttered in the sky.

The aftershocks were transmitted to the castle below, and large cracks began to appear on the walls.

Whoosh! As the wind and snow calmed, the entire area turned strangely silent.

The white powder formed from the life energy and consumption of frost energy of the many icy races covered the ground. There were also the remains of armour and weapons, which made the area seem even more desolate.

Leylin heaved a long sigh, producing a test tube from his spatial pouch that was filled with a purple liquid.

The seal at the mouth of the test tube opened automatically and a liquid dripped down to the ground, spreading quickly.

Large amounts of white powder were dissolved by the potion, creating a gigantic pool of water. There were countless bubbles constantly being produced on the surface, and they instantly turned the surroundings of the castle into a purple swamp.

The purple swamp continued to expand, also showing signs of going deeper.

‘I’ve made calculations with the A.I. Chip and developed this potion from Arwen’s blood and flesh using his memories. Let’s hope this is effective.’ By this point, Leylin had guessed the origin of this Arctic Queen. Hence, he was currently feeling very serious, hoping that his conjecture was wrong.

However, what he had just seen had validated his suspicion.

Large amounts of purple bubbles were constantly produced, and the original castle of ice was beginning to be eaten into, the main body of the building slowly sinking down.

Buzz! A pure, powerful spiritual force extended and began to fuse with the surroundings.

Almost instantly, Leylin found himself in another wondrous environment.

The sky was no longer filled with ice, it wasn’t the crust of the earth. The moon sparkled in a starry sky, and below was a white continent that spread a vast ocean, as far as the eye could see.



Ice Mountain Wyverns, Chilly Giants and other creatures were roaring out, and most had surpassed the limits of Morning Star.

“This is... the real Icy World!” Leylin muttered to himself. He, who possessed some of the memories of the ancient Scorpion Man, was naturally somewhat familiar with this place.

“Yes. The real Icy World, my homeland! Foreign Magus, can you fulfil my wish of returning to my homeland?” The Arctic Queen spoke with a gentle tone as she appeared by his side. Looking somewhat similar to the giant from before, she had on a crown and platinum imperial robes.

“Arctic Queen?” Leylin’s pupils shrank as he scanned the surroundings. “Not a bad illusion!”

“The most beautiful of illusions is still not reality. Even the fake world of ice in reality does not measure up to a smidgen of the splendour of the real Icy World...” The Arctic Queen sighed, her tone so sorrowful Leylin couldn’t bear it. He wanted to speak up, helping her solve the issue.

“As long as you’re willing to help me, you shall be the sole emperor of the entire Icy World!” As if she had seen Leylin wavering, the Arctic Queen added a bargaining chip.

“Pretty good conditions! It’s a pity that I don’t see any sincerity in them at all. How can someone who uses illusory magic on potential allies be trusted to abide by their promises?” Leylin

shook his head, his words causing the expression on the Arctic Queen's face to change.

Blood-red flames came into being on Leylin's hands. They crackled as they were shot to the Arctic Queen's feet without hesitation, starting to burn her.

"You'll regret this!" The Arctic Queen, who was now covered in flames, showed a wavering energy. Yet, she was like an expressionless paper doll as she spoke.

"If I agree to your conditions, I might regret it even more!" Leylin was still slightly fearful at this time. He'd believed that he had a very powerful resistance to illusory magic, and yet he had easily been pulled into the illusion that his opponent had created, and almost lost his senses.

If not for the A.I. Chip's timely warning, as well as the many secret techniques of Spirit Warlocks he'd learnt from Paul, he might very well have died here.

After all, who would have thought that the ruler of the Icy World was proficient in illusory psychological hints?

"You'll regret this!" "You'll regret this!"

An icy female voice resounded in the illusion, causing his hair to stand.

Paper dolls that resembled the Arctic Queen sprang up one after another, the icy world collapsing with a rumble. Whether it was the stars in the sky, the continent, or the creatures upon it, everything turned into an Arctic Queen, giving Leylin a terrifying glare.

[Beep! Host's brain is suffering from an unknown influence. Determined to be illusory magic,]

the A.I. Chip's voice sounded.

“That's obvious damn it, but my connection to the real world hasn't been severed. If I die here, my main body outside will probably die as well...”

Morning Star energy rippled as traces of soul force lingered around the surface of Leylin's body, giving him a few layers of protection.

Such a high-level illusion could render a Magus' spiritual force useless. However, it could not restrict a Morning Star's soul force, which still had a good effect.

However, this was the opponent's home ground. If he used up all of his soul force, he would be in trouble.

“A.I. Chip, scan the structure of the illusion and search for the

point of three-dimensional construct and Wors' Space!" Leylin silently sent down the order.

The A.I. Chip did not have a good method of dealing with such a situation before, but now with the database on the soul, its ability at analysis had improved by leaps and bounds.

"You can't escape!" Like the many galaxies in the universe, countless three-dimensional Arctic Queens were formed. These clones that looked like inverted images of the original held weapons in their hands, going on the offensive against him.

Ting! Soul force condensed to form a blood-red cross blade in Leylin's hands.

Leylin quickly took a step forward, the cross blade blocking large numbers of icy blades that produced dazzling rays of light.

"Cross Slash!" A cross-shaped light flashed, and tens of paper dolls turned into fragments that filled the skies.

"It's of no use. This is my spiritual world! No number of deaths will cause any exhaustion to me. How long do you think your soul force can last you?" The doll accompanying this icy voice was torn to shreds, but it then reformed into the Arctic Queen once more.

"Stop resisting when it doesn't even matter. Together, we can—"

Schlick! Before the Arctic Queen could finish her words, her head

was chopped off.

The flat head that was like a piece of paper fell to the ground, and continued to chatter on, “Your only choice is to serve me! Hand over your soul source and become my servant. This way, I might even let you off!”

Rumble! Red flames flashed and burnt the paper into ashes.

There was a cold smirk on Leylin’s face. “I’d be a fool to listen to your commands!”

“Kill him!” As if the Arctic Queen had been enraged, large numbers of two-dimensional paper clones pounced on him.

“Cross Slash!” Leylin’s expression was cool as he launched attack after attack, sending fragmented paper flying into the skies, filling it like butterflies. They even covered Leylin’s clothes, his weapon, and his hair.

“I told you, you can’t escape!” The paper on Leylin’s body became as heavy as lead, a few pieces joining to form the face of the Arctic Queen.

Leylin’s body grew sluggish as a blade swiped at his chest. The fine Kemoyin’s Scales unexpectedly could not hinder the blade at all, and a wound opened up on his chest, blood spurting out.

“I told you this is my mental world. Even if your defences are

extremely powerful in the external world, I am the ruler here!” The paper doll standing in front of Leylin spoke slowly.

“Is that so?” Leylin’s face was pale, his body in the external world evidently receiving a real injury.

“If it’s true, wouldn’t you have killed me long ago? Why would you still be here spouting so much nonsense?”

“Nonsense?” The Arctic Queen’s brows lifted and raised her arms. Leylin had no idea which part of his speech had irritated her.

The number of illusory figures increased greatly, and in practically an instant the area was completely filled with paper dolls of various colours.

“Since you wish to die, let me fulfil your wish!” Countless Arctic Queens pounced forth.

At this moment, however, a slight smile appeared about Leylin’s lips. “Found it!”

He suddenly moved forward, soul force undulating at his body and gathering on the cross blade, resulting in rays of flaming light that seemed endless.

“Cross Slash!” The gleaming cross blade sliced at a point in the sky.

Crack! Crack! It was like a mirror being shattered, and numerous shivering, spotted lights that resembled tadpoles appeared behind it.

“No! Impossible! How did you find out?” The Arctic Queen’s voice became high-pitched and piercing.

“Haha...” Leylin laughed maniacally, ignoring the fury of the Arctic Queen behind him and rushed headfirst into the sea of tadpoles.

“A.I. Chip! Begin destruction based on the previous plan...” Countless black threads appeared in Leylin’s hands and quickly dispersed. Even more mirrors shattered.

Bang! A slight tremor was produced by Leylin’s body, and his eyes instantly focused. He glanced at the icy castle and purple swamp as well as the cut on his chest and sighed, “I’m finally out!”

Chi chi... At this moment, a furious, high-pitched sound was emitted from under the castle.

“The opponent’s illusory spells are too powerful. I need to leave for now!” Just now, Leylin had lucked out. Depending on the A.I. Chip’s ability to find the gaps in the illusion, he’d managed to escape. The next time, the situation would be different. Even if he could find the gaps again, successfully breaking through them was still an issue.

Leylin's eyes flashed as he moved a long distance away in an instant.



# Chapter 614 - Deduction And Advancement

---

The central region of the icy plains, outside the castle.

Dazzling blue pillars emitted bright light, the most radiant of landmarks.

Groups of icy race clansmen and even beasts were attracted by the blue rays of light. The appeal was so strong that anyone who barred their paths was considered an enemy to be attacked.

Leylin thought the pillars were like terrifying large-scale summoning spell formations. Anyone that possessed a bloodline related to ice and had grown up here could not resist the allure.

Currently in front of him was a strange group. Savage icy beasts mingled with snow fairies and other intelligent beings, the only thing they had in common the desire and fervour in their eyes. They crossed land and water, heading in the direction of the palace as if on a pilgrimage.

Leylin had seen this many times already. After the illusory fight at the icy castle, the Arctic Queen had not moved to chase him, evidently being limited somehow. Instead, the range of her spell formation extended further, encompassing the entire world of ice. Icy beings flooded into the area day after day, nourishing their Queen.

Leylin obviously would not just watch on. Looking apathetic, he pressed down with his right arm.

Rumble! A gigantic palmprint appeared on the surface that was formed of solid ice. The snow fairies, ice leopards, and other creatures all turned to powder.

Having taken care of this, Leylin's brows furrowed as he hurried in another direction in which an even larger group had formed.

How populous was the world of ice? Even if Leylin did all he could to intercept them, many still managed to break through, turning into powder at the icy castle.

"Such absolute control... It's a tragedy for the other races." Watching the scene, Leylin sighed a little. It was obvious that the bloodlines of the various races in this world of ice had originated from the Arctic Queen, so when she decided to take them back, they could not resist at all.

The same situation would apply with the Snake Dowager. With her might and bloodline control, Leylin would probably be unable to rebel even if he was ordered to die. This was also what Leylin was trying his utmost to avoid.

'It looks like the Arctic Queen has some sort of restriction on her body, which was why she had to groom Arwen. She also had to groom the many races in this world of ice, and use regular blood sacrifices to obtain strength, life force, and...'

Lights flashed in Leylin's eyes. 'The previous incident obviously enraged her. She actually summoned all the races in this miniature

Icy World to their sacrificial deaths! Her aura is strengthening every day...’

At this thought, Leylin produced a few test tubes and flicked them out with his fingers.

Streaks of purple splashed on the backs of a few gigantic rank 3 beasts, forming strange runes that sank in. Noticing Leylin wasn’t blocking them anymore, they roared as they pressed forward towards the castle of ice.

Leylin frowned and arrived at a temporary dwelling. He’d been doing such a thing every day, but could not determine the efficacy of such an act.

“A.I. Chip, how’s the simulation of the soul defence coming along?”

[Beep! Soul defence spell pattern deduction at 97.6%!]

The A.I. Chip loyally intoned. It projected a faint phantom of a spell model that was almost complete.

[Rank 4 spell— Soul Guard! Summing up the bloodline models of the Spirit Warlocks, the information from the database on the soul has been used to deduce a spell to defend against soul invasions. Referenced material: ‘Way of the Soul’, ‘A Primer on

There was a detailed introduction under this model, including the referenced materials which made up a long list.

Leylin wanted to deal with the Arctic Queen's invasion into his soul. That she could actually break through his point mass to drag his truesoul into an illusion had horrified him.

The moment a Morning Star Magus' truesoul lost the protection of their point mass, it was extremely fragile. He had been lucky enough to escape the last time, or else with the opponent's ability at connecting her illusions with reality, he would have died in the real world if he died in the illusion. This was why he'd had the A.I. Chip simulate a spell model urgently to protect his soul.

With the opponent not able to move freely, Leylin had a good opportunity. However, with the terrifying summoning currently underway and the vast region within which she could absorb life force, Leylin had no choice but to plan his move quickly.

He had considered using his Morning Star Arcane Art to destroy the castle, but he had no idea where the bloodline and remains of the Scorpion Man were. Furthermore, even the Giant Kemoyin Serpent would be restricted by the opponent's main body, and wouldn't be able to destroy the place in a single move.

An ancient bloodline creature's usage of soul force could not compare to that of a Morning Star Magus, and they were

particularly vulnerable to such attacks.

“Based on the current progress, it should be completed by tomorrow!” Leylin’s eyes glowed with intelligence.

A normal Morning Star Magus would have to spend decades, even centuries, to deduce a rank 4 spell. This was especially true for one that dealt with the mysteries of the soul, and it would take even more time. With the A.I. Chip, it was merely a matter of how much processing power was allocated to the task. Once the model was done, it could directly be transmitted to Leylin’s memory, and even the process of familiarising himself with it could be done away with, saving him much time.

---

A day later, above the castle of ice.

Creatures and other beings with bloodlines related to ice would approach this place with a dazed look in their eyes, turning to powder at the place.

The region of the energy absorption had grown several fold, and even the purple swamp had been weakened.

“It looks like the Arctic Queen’s been working hard!” Blue light shone from Leylin’s eyes, and an energy beam struck down, opening up a pathway.

Through continued observation and calculations, he’d long since

learnt the details of this method of absorption. Finding an energy node based on the distribution was a simple task.

“Rank 4 spell— Soul Guard!” A green lustre appeared in Leylin’s eyes, spreading throughout his body.

Fine runic chains formed in his sea of consciousness, yielding an even tighter defensive layer around the point mass.

Footsteps sounded in the pathway that had been created by the explosion. What was formerly only a basement currently had a number of roads and spaces below it.

The surface was full of solid ice, forming intricate patterns and images on the top.

Leylin took in a deep breath and stepped into the basement, “Arctic Queen, I’m here!”

The path was long, and light was sparse, only some feeble jade-green light leaking from the walls on both sides.

The terrifying icy radiation even affected spacetime here, causing Leylin to feel a sense of disorder.

A dense smell of rust spread throughout the channel as a multicolour light spread from the end. It was piercing to the eyes.

“Do not... come...” “Sinner...”

Deformed sounds were intermittently transmitted to Leylin’s ears, the contents only faintly discernible. The soul force of the Arctic Queen spread out, attempting to break through Leylin’s point mass and pull his true soul into another illusion.

Prepared as he was, the green rays grew brighter on the surface of Leylin’s body, creating an illusory layer that began to tremble vigorously.

Large amounts of soul force were consumed as Leylin persevered under the Arctic Queen’s relentless attack on his soul.

[Soul invasion detected. Soul Guard has been engaged to resist. Beginning automatic adjustment of defensive structure.]

The A.I. Chip’s voice sounded continuously. With its precise calculations, Leylin’s soul force consumption was suddenly reduced. The external layer of green light somewhat stabilised.

“You will regret it!” “You will regret it!”

As she noticed that she was unable to break through Leylin’s defences, the Arctic Queen’s voice became piercing and seemed to hold within a poisonous curse. It then disappeared.

“I will only truly feel regret if I don’t get what I want!” Leylin sneered, eyes full of an intense resolution as he stepped onto the unknown path ahead.

Boom! Large amounts of solid ice turned into powder, the jade-green runes breaking apart and then revealing the exit.

“You even needed Arwen to help you set up the defensive spell pattern! Seems like your body can’t move at all!” Leylin sighed as he walked out. After leaving the pathway, everything suddenly seemed spacious.

Leylin surveyed his surroundings. This seemed to be a natural underground cave. At the top was a tremendous slanting passageway. Deep imprints could be seen in it.

At the heart of the cave was a large depression, rays of jade light flickering within like fine threads that formed an enormous network.

Terrifying radiations were being emitted from within the depression, so dense they were practically tangible.

Leylin advanced grimly, finding a terrifying corpse at the centre of the depression. It was emitting Morning Star ranked energy undulations.

This was the real aura of an ancient bloodline; deep and lofty, bringing with it a sense of history that was filled with grandeur.



Arwen seemed like a mere inferior product in comparison to the giant corpse in front of him, full of flaws.

“We meet again, Scorpion Man!”

Leylin could not help but recall the ancient memory fragments that he had acquired from the Icy Jade Scorpion Emperor’s bloodline. Those fragmented pieces of information had originated from the Morning Star creature before him.

Leylin glanced at the depression and then the trail at the top, a scene appearing in his mind. The void had shattered, and Scorpion Man had dropped into the crust of the earth like a meteor, forming a tremendous depression. The radiation from his body had altered the area, forming the world of ice, and the being that succeeded him had built the icy castle above the depression!

# Chapter 615 - Scorpion Man And Scorpion Woman

---

“This is the source, the source of everything!” Leylin sighed. If not for the Scorpion Man dying here while carrying the bloodline of the female bronze giant, the entire world of ice would not have been formed. Hence, it wasn’t too much of a stretch to call him this world’s progenitor.

Leylin’s body floated up to the place and slowly descended, arriving at the floor of the hollowed-out area. After seeing the Scorpion Man in full view, his pupils suddenly narrowed.

In front of him was reclined the corpse of an enormous creature, half human half scorpion. Streaks of icy blue connected to the Scorpion Man through his skin like a spider web, injecting great amounts of life force and icy energy into him.

And on the back of the Scorpion Man, strange green blood wriggled as if it had a life of its own. It even covered the Scorpion Man’s entire back, spreading in all directions.

Green veins bulged all over the Scorpion Man’s body, writhing around. They were like lifeless pupils, full of eeriness.

The corrosion of the green blood and blood vessels had slightly transformed the Scorpion Man’s appearance.

Compared to the body in Leylin’s memory, the Scorpion Man’s

now seemed thinner. Even its face had become more exquisite, appearing more feminine. Female characteristics were showing on its upper body as well.

“Oh, no no no! This isn’t a corpse!” Leylin was astonished. Only after drawing close had he realised that the Scorpion Man had a weak breath, his chest slowly throbbing.

However, the small waves of life force seemed incomparably small when paired with the huge body, so small in fact that Leylin had neglected them at the start.

“This Scorpion Man is actually alive!” Leylin stumbled a few steps back. At the same time, the Scorpion Man suddenly opened his eyes.

“You’re here!” A familiar soul force wave began to attack Leylin’s defences.

“You’re not the Scorpion Man! You’re the Arctic Queen... No, you’re the guardian of the Icy World, the female bronze giant!” Leylin blurted out. Dense black scales covered his entire body, and a few test tubes containing potions exploded out, forming a huge screen of light. His earring was activated, in standby to attack.

Even as he was currently, Leylin did not dare to take the risk of facing an ancient creature that comprehended laws. Although he had made a rough guess before, the truth coming out still dazed him slightly.

As he saw this scene, all the events flashed across Leylin's mind rapidly, and he managed to establish a picture of what had happened quite quickly. The Snake Dowager had attacked the Icy World, and the female bronze giant had died during the war. A drop of her blood fell on the Scorpion Man's body as he fell into a spatial crack, accompanying him as he arrived here by chance. The Scorpion Man had died on the spot, but the green blood on his back had survived!

The female bronze giant was a terrifying creature that had crossed rank 7! She could even control certain laws and can reborn from a single drop of blood!

Her bloodline inherited a part of her spiritual imprint. On top of that, even if the Scorpion Man's Morning Star strength faded, his body retained its vitality. The drop of such an ancient bloodline could obtain a new life here after separating from the main body.

Yet, it was incomparably difficult to be reborn from a single drop of blood. Hence, it acted like a virus, seeking life to live off of, attempting to infect another party and transform it as required.

And in Twilight Zone, was there any creature more suitable for this than the Scorpion Man? Without considering other factors, the mere problem of distance was enough to make a decision!

Thus, the giant's bloodline began living off the Scorpion Man's corpse, even transforming it. This led to the emergence of female characteristics in his appearance.

Such transformations not only required a large amount of time, but also a terrifying amount of life energy.

Hence, the imprint of the giant formed a miniature Icy World through icy radiation, even producing life in this world of ice!

Soon after, she used a portion of the Scorpion Man's flesh to create a guardian for herself, Arwen. A guardian at the Morning Star realm was enough to suppress anything else in Twilight Zone.

Hence, the giant hid behind the scenes while Arwen took charge of all the matters on the surface, regularly gathering icy creatures as blood sacrifices. This was to strengthen the Scorpion Man's life energy, so as to nourish the giant's blood.

Initially, all of this was close to success. Once the transformation was successful, the giant would be reborn from the Scorpion Man's body and become a new life. That is, it would have if Leylin hadn't appeared.

However, there are no ifs in life. Leylin's appearance, and especially Arwen's death, left the giant with no choice but to come forth personally and hasten the collection of flesh and life energy until this point.

The Scorpion Man stared at Leylin and a calm soul force was transmitted from his body. "No! I am only a part of the giant. The current me is a combination of a synthesised memory imprint and this Scorpion Man's body! Thus, I am indeed the Arctic Queen!"

Upon hearing that, Leylin heaved a deep sigh of relief. Even if the opponent had the blood of a creature that controlled laws, its body was still not done with the transformation. It could not be considered a full resurrection yet, only a bloodline imprint struggling at death's door.

Hence, the current Scorpion Man could not move at all. Even speaking needed to be accomplished through soul force, never mind anything else.

“If it's like that, I still have a chance!” A brilliant glow burst forth from Leylin's eyes.

Even if the Scorpion Man was done with its body's transformation, it would only be a peak rank 4 at most, and by relying on the bloodline's strength be comparable to a rank 5 Radiant Moon Magus. However, Leylin had many cards in his hands and could still put up a fight. The opponent's inability to move even gave him an advantage.

“Scorpion Man? This is the creature's name?” Leylin asked.

“Yes! But I don't like this appearance and need to modify him to draw him closer towards a Scorpion Woman. After all, the Scorpion Woman's illusory ability is well known in the entire Icy World. Coincidentally, this innate skill matches with my bloodline as well. It's just that this process and the reincarnation both require a lot of time...”

The Arctic Queen began answering Leylin like she was obliged to,

as if she had suddenly become a different person.

“No wonder...” Leylin nodded but his pupils reflected a mocking look.

With a bang, the ground shook and something that seemed like a blue root emerged. Branches and leaves merged with the blue antennae on the Scorpion Man’s body, forming a cage which sealed Leylin in it.

Snow white fog emerged from the Scorpion Man’s pores continuously, merging with the blue antennae and even forming a natural frosty rune on the surface.

“But luckily you’re here! With a human Morning Star’s flesh, by using Wor’s Sacrificial Rites to offer your point mass to the Ice Sovereign, I believe I can speed up the transformation process, even take it till completion!”

The Arctic Queen’s voice was cold, “Since you’ve killed Arwen, use your flesh to pay back your debt!”

A blood-red light blade emerged on Leylin’s palms, slashing the cage suddenly and causing a piercing boom.

Many snow white runes flickered, even forming a layer of hard blue ice. It froze the blade on the cage, and many more blue arms stretched towards Leylin.

“A 700 degree attack is also ineffective?”

Leylin dodged and retreated, analysing the runes on the cage, “Mere energy loops cannot have such an effect, could it be these runes?”

“Frost confinement runes from the ancient Icy World, with a record of imprisoning even Radiant Moon Magi! If you won’t believe that, you can try it for yourself!” The Arctic Queen began laughing hysterically, “Did you think that I won’t have the strength to strike back because I cannot move? I’ve said this before, you’ll definitely regret coming in!”

Leylin was not bothered by her piercing laughter, instead minding his own business as he came to the edge of the cage. “A.I. Chip, conduct a scan.”

[Beep! Ancient frost confinement runes discovered. Effect: Enhances the firmness of the attached item by 5 levels, and frost resistance by 7. Provides reflective abilities to ice. Estimated strength: 890-1120]

the A.I. Chip quickly responded.

“I’m afraid, with such a level, I could only escape from this place by attacking a few times with full strength, using Kemoyin Serpent Transformation,” Leylin sighed, “Only, is there a need to?”



He stretched out both his hands, revealing a purple radiance. The moment this purple radiance came into contact with the cage, something bizarre happened. Black spots began spreading across the cage, unstoppable even by the ancient confinement runes.

The entire cage was like an old wooden frame. It began to corrode rapidly, and thousands of holes appeared on it.

Leylin only exerted a slight force with his hands, and a huge hole opened up in the cage. He then walked out.

“Impossible!” The Arctic Queen’s piercing laughter immediately stopped.

“Nothing’s impossible! You ‘analysed’ my potion in detail, even removing the poison, but how can a potion I created be so easy to defeat?” Leylin laughed as a purple rune on his fingertip flickered irregularly.

As if this rune triggered some sort of chain reaction, large amounts of purple dots appeared on the Scorpion Man’s body, even sealing off the blood on his back.

Through his previous setup at the castle of ice and the trick he’d played on the icy creatures, Leylin had turned the tables in an instant, gaining the power to take the initiative.

“Hmph! Mere poison!” The Arctic Queen hummed coldly.

“I know. A bit of poison won’t affect an ancient Morning Star creature, unable to even last a few minutes. However, I only need a few minutes anyway...” Leylin averted his gaze from the Scorpion Man, watching the green blood on his back.

“You still don’t know right? I’m actually a Warlock, even a bloodline descendant of the Snake Dowager that caused your death! And for us Warlocks, separating blood and purifying genes are the simplest things ever...”

# Chapter 616 - Successful Planning

---

Leylin's voice held no enthusiasm as he mercilessly released thread-like rays of crimson light that pierced into the Scorpion Man's back. The green blood began to squirm as if it had just seen its worst enemy.

Unfortunately, it was not just the blood of the female bronze giant that was affected by the poison. Even the voice of the Arctic Queen was turning sluggish.

Leylin paid no attention to the fervent pleas and offers of the Arctic Queen, instead focussing on refining the bloodline in his hands.

With his manipulations, the green blood from the Scorpion Man's back was slowly extracted, veins showing themselves one after the other.

"Ahhh! The Snake Dowager... The Snake Dowager again." The Arctic Queen's voice calmed. "Even if I'll die right away and be damned for eternity, I won't let the Snake Dowager prevail!"

The green blood began to boil and rumble, bursting into verdant flames.

'Hmm? The toxins were removed ahead of time... As expected, the vitality of an ancient Morning Star creature is more powerful than that of one from the present. The potion's been counteracted...' 'Leylin's brows furrowed, but he did not do

anything to indicate he would give up.

It was way too rare to acquire the chance to refine the bloodline of an ancient creature, especially one that could comprehend laws. Such a thing was almost never seen! Obviously, Leylin didn't want to give up just like this.

Hss! A large phantom snake appeared, and space immediately froze. Great power burst forth from Leylin's body, locking onto the Scorpion Man and the blood.

"Plan B then," Leylin's voice was cold, his eyes without any emotion.

Great amounts of blood-coloured threads dug into the Scorpion Man's back, forming forbidden runes after mixing with the poison. It caused the Arctic Queen's movements to grow even more sluggish.

"Give up! I know everything already, and have come up with a method specifically to deal with you!" Leylin's voice held no sympathy, he spoke the truth.

After a period of external observation, he'd run over ten thousand simulations with the A.I. Chip, preparing many contingency plans for this trip underground. He'd predicted this situation already, and prepared specific countermeasures against it.

Leylin had stored tens of spell patterns to seal ancient bloodline in the A.I. Chip's database.

The Arctic Queen could not move about freely and had not finished her resurrection. In front of Leylin who had made meticulous preparations, her various attacks were destroyed in practically a single blow.

Her cries had transformed into mournful wails. Even her sorrowful cries grew softer and softer. Her soul was being suppressed and weakened.

“If your main body was around, you'd definitely be able to crush me like an ant, but it's a pity that you're only a droplet of her blood. You haven't even revived yourself completely...” Leylin spoke calmly, eyes flashing with a peculiar light.

There was no reply as the soul force from the other side died down, and then began to weaken at a terrifying rate. Large amounts of green blood withdrew and returned to the back of the Scorpion Man, and the green blood vessels rejoined with the blood.

Green blood mixed together, decreasing in volume yet becoming brighter and more vibrant. It emitted a dark, bronze light.

‘What's going on? Has she really given up?’ Suspicion flickered in Leylin's mind. He put his guard up, but still retained the same front.

With the Arctic Queen's movements, the green blood that had been spread out gathered to form a single droplet of resplendent bronze blood.

"The original blood of the Icy World's Guardian?" Leylin's eyes grew dazed, his voice full of emotion.

This was the blood of an existence that controlled laws, an existence with rank 7 strength at the very least! It even held the imprint of its original owner, able to revive the being from this single drop.

The effects of Leylin's purification began to show themselves as the blood condensed on the Scorpion Man's body.

"Yield!" Leylin took out a notebook with a slightly yellow cover. He opened it up to reveal a slight lustre from the title page. At the centre of the page was a round sealing spell formation.

"Bloodline Sealing Tome? No!" The Arctic Queen's originally feeble energy undulations suddenly reverberated once more, her voice distorting, becoming androgynous as it turned hoarse.

"The Snake Dowager and her blood, the Icy World shall forever be your enemy!" Her voice became masculine, awakening some sort of ancient memories and sending a malicious curse Leylin's way.

"As the bronze empress, the Guardian of the Icy World, I offer a

sacrifice... skmgkl...” Leylin did not recognize who exactly she was making a sacrifice to.

“You may have had the upper hand today, but you could never have thought of laws! That is a strength that surpasses your understanding...”

“I offer up all the laws I possess. Strength of skmgkl, descend!”

The dark green flames crackled as their strength grew tenfold, and even the tremendous Morning Star body of the Scorpion man was eaten into rapidly.

Large amounts of runic chains cracked, and the poison withdrew. Even Leylin’s bloodline extraction spell was forcefully interrupted.

“This is... the power of laws? Unthinkable! It’s only a single drop of blood...” Leylin’s face grew pale, suffering the backlash from a spell being interrupted.

However, he did not have the time to think further. That droplet of blood which contained laws had already been offered. After breaking the seal, it turned into a shooting star as it charged towards Leylin.

The energy defences shattered layer by layer as the blood advanced, unimpeded even by the Kemoyin Scales and the Scarlet Earring.

The blood slammed into Leylin's chest, splattering all across his body. One could hear the hissing as it corroded him away.

White fumes shot up as the Kemoyin Scales on Leylin's chest fell apart visibly, piece by piece. A pool of green liquid had latched onto his chest, burning into it.

The Kemoyin Scales softened and fell off one after another with no end in sight, revealing charred flesh and bones.

[Beep! Host's chest has severe burns. Immediate treatment recommended.]

[Beep! Detected corrosion of host by unknown energy. Expulsion procedures recommended]

the A.I. Chip reported immediately.

"I've burned the power of the laws in my body as well as the remains of the Scorpion Man. The result is an explosive force that can kill even Radiant Moons...

"Let us be buried together in the ice and snow, you who contain the bloodline of the Snake Dowager!" The Arctic Queen's voice grew lower and lower as it eventually disappeared.

The terrifying green blood had spread from his torso to his limbs,



verdant blood vessels crawling over Leylin's face. It caused him to look sinister and horrifying.

[Beep! Warning! Warning! Life and soul force of host is being consumed at a heavy rate. Immediate action required. Time until collapse of genes: 34s...]

The prompt box that the A.I. Chip ejected had a very dense blood-red colour in the frame, displaying the danger of the situation. If he was not careful, he could lose his life.

“It's finally reached this point...”

Though half of Leylin's body was being corroded by the green blood as he laid on the ground, there was no trace of dismay on his ice-cold face. Instead, it seemed as if a scheme of his had succeeded.

“With 3410 possible scenarios as well as 982 sudden occurrences, the opponent chose the method of mutual destruction. Not like that was a surprise...”

Even with preparations, the corrosion from the bloodline of a creature that comprehended laws caused Leylin to cough violently, large amounts of fresh blood seeping through his fingers.

Hss... Behind him, the tremendous figure of a Giant Kemoyin

Serpent came into view once more. Now, however, its energy was unstable. Tinted dark green, were burning on the body of the giant serpent.

It was not just the figure behind him. Leylin felt even the Giant Kemoyin bloodline in his body being eaten into; expelled and even destroyed!

“Bloodline Ignition!” Blood-red light surged from Leylin’s eyes as the purple blood of the Kemoyin Serpent was enriched several fold which was now filled with insanity and fury.

A large amount of his own blood bubbled up, purple confronting green.

Leylin rolled to his side and got up. Though using Bloodline Ignition to fight was like fixing thirst by drinking poison, he now had control over his own body again, albeit temporarily.

“The A.I. Chip has already simulated this several times, and the rate of success is as high as at 90%!” Leylin clenched his fists tightly. “A 90% chance is enough for me to take the risk!”

A resolute look appeared on Leylin’s face. “If I can’t climb to the top in this lifetime, I would rather die and rot as sludge!

“Sun’s Child imprint!”

He abruptly took off the white glove on his right hand, the

golden-red bloodline imprint emitting dazzling light.

[Activating plan 'Thoroughfare'. Support and trajectory activated!]

The A.I. Chip intoned.

An enormous blazing light spread in this underground world, as if a sun had risen within.

Everywhere the flaming light, be it soil, rocks, or spells of ice, everything was vapourised immediately, causing the underground cave to expand rapidly.

The beings still in the world of ice could see a tremendous sun rising from the castle, imparting heat and light to this underground world. The ever-unchanging ice began to melt, mountains collapsing as doomsday seemed to have arrived.

Ice melted into flowing water, which quickly evaporated itself. The white vapour spread everywhere, turning into a layer of fog in the surroundings. Quickly, the original dark brown soil was revealed once more.

The range of this heat continued to expand, as if ready to transform the entire world of ice.

# Chapter 617 - Snake Emperor

---

Sun Scorching Nirvana! Formed from the similarly ranked bloodline of the Sun's Child, this was a rank 6 spell that Leylin had spent a lot of effort to create. It had finally displayed its terrifying prowess. The last time it was used, not only had this spell caused the fall of a Radiant Moon Magus, but it also caused near irreparable harm to Sky City.

And now, the emergence of the golden sun was about to completely melt this world of ice.

“Here we go!” Leylin's right palm was placed on his chest, terrifying rank 6 spell undulations flowing out berserkly like a stormy tide. The rank 6 spell this time was going to be used on himself!

Boiling heat caused Leylin's body to immediately turn transparent as if turning him into a human-shaped light bulb.

If not for his outstanding vitality and Fireplume operating at full strength, Leylin would probably have turned into ashes in that instant. Perhaps it wouldn't even be ashes; his body and soul might just have been burned to nothingness.

However, with his high resistance towards fire, the fact that he had experience using this spell, and Fireplume, he could somewhat control the strength of the spell. With the immense control of the A.I. Chip, golden energy flowed past Leylin's body, tangling with the greenish bronze blood.

“Energy of the sun, destroy the power of laws found in the bronze bloodline” Leylin howled maliciously, his facial muscles contorting.

Rumble! Boiling golden flames vapourised the green blood. In the process, threads of energy that had been purified to the extreme began to emanate from the bronze blood, flowing into Leylin’s limbs and bones.

The Giant Kemoyin Serpent bloodline that had been bubbling and boiling began to absorb this energy frantically, resulting in a strange transformation. The colour of the blood grew deeper, and the phantom serpent grew silent as it was surrounded by a layer of greenish gold flames.

By now, the Kemoyin bloodline was rid of the contamination of the Purgatory World’s will and its seals were unlocked. It operated and surged madly in Leylin’s body like the bluster of a gigantic dragon.

[Beep! Host bloodline absorbing unknown energy. Evolution has begun...]

the A.I. Chip loyally intoned, at the same time displaying a progress bar that rose quickly with help of that bronze blood.

“It’s a success!” Leylin’s lips twitched, though the tremendous

pressure on his body made even such a small action difficult.

Indeed, this has been his original plan! Leylin had no better options regarding the bloodline shackles, and had been looking for a way to bypass them. Through the database he'd acquired at Sky City as well as the A.I. Chip's terrifying calculation and simulation abilities, he'd acquired two methods to do it.

One was to try changing his bloodline, though that would cause issues with the soul. With the A.I. Chip as it was now, though, he had some confidence in achieving this.

The second method was to dig deeper into the power of his own bloodline. Bloodline shackles restricted Warlocks to the upper limit of their base bloodline. Practically everyone thought this was rank 4 in the case of Kemoyin Warlocks, but what if he could dig into the roots of the Kemoyin's genes itself, evolving the bloodline further into the realms of rank 5 and above? That way, he could advance to Radiant Moon successfully!

Of course, both these methods still had the same fundamental problem. They could not break the bloodline shackles themselves. Whether it be changing bloodlines or improving his own, it would only push the bar higher. The bloodline shackles would remain, waiting to present themselves at a higher rank.

However, Leylin still had the method given to him by the Wisdom Tree. Although it was feasible, it was not something he could accomplish with his current strength. Thus, he was confident that once he possessed more strength, he could execute his other plans. This was why his main objective in this journey to

the subterranean world was to strengthen his bloodline.

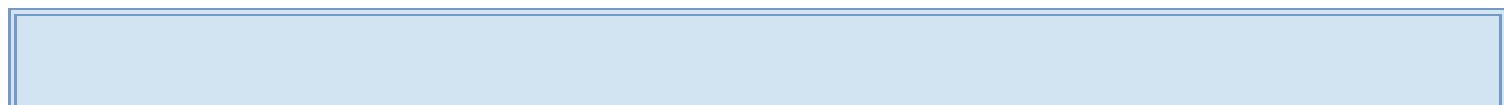
Leylin's soul had already fused with that of the Giant Kemoyin Serpent, so he would not be foolish enough to try and change his bloodline. Even if he could succeed somehow, it would still cause devastating damage to his fragile soul once he did it. Thus, digging deeper into the power of his own bloodline was the only method.

Through Arwen's Icy Breath helping him resolve the problem of his emotional instability, the purity of his bloodline had reached an unprecedented level. Now, it had a chance to advance further. And the bronze giant's bloodline? It was just the kind of powerful force that could push this sort of advancement!

With the Sun's Flames suppressing the world of ice, he had burned away the miscellaneous soul imprints, spirit imprints, and other such things out of the bronze blood, leaving behind only the primal strength of the bloodline itself. This was what allowed him to advance the power of the Giant Kemoyin Serpent.

This was the plan Leylin had come up with. For this reason, he had deliberately provoked the Arctic Queen. For this reason, he'd forced her to offer up the laws in her body in an attempt to deal him a fatal blow!

Now, with no more free will, the bronze blood could no longer stand the burning of the Sun's Flames. Not only did it reduce in volume, even the bronze lustre on its surface gradually died down.



[Beep! Host body igniting ancient bloodline. Giant Kemoyin Serpent bloodline in process of evolution. Progress: 80%... 95% ... 99%...]

the A.I. Chip loyally intoned.

Rumble! At this moment, the bloodline imprint on Leylin's right hand completely dissipated, and the Sun's flames grew to their greatest intensity. Terrifying golden flames fused with the bronze bloodline and the two suddenly exploded, destroying each other.

A bloodline energy that seemed as vast as the starry sky burst forth from that explosion. Leylin cried out as this burst of strength pushed it over the edge. The A.I. Chip showed that the progress bar had been completely filled!

[Beep! Host bloodline evolution complete. Searching for information... Determined to be Kemoyin Serpent Emperor!]  
[Kemoyin Serpent Emperor: A rare evolved form of the Giant Kemoyin Serpent. Possess a great strength and magical ability. Having broken through their original limits to enter a higher level, these creatures rule colonies of Kemoyin Serpents. Rank 5. Attributes: Darkness, Fire. Supplementary abilities:

1. Control: The Kemoyin Serpent Emperor possesses sovereignty over all Giant Kemoyin Serpents and their descendants.



2. Devouring. The Kemoyin Serpent Emperor can digest all energy not supported by laws to supplement its own life force.]

The A.I. Chip's voice sounded once more, but Leylin was unaware of this all. The moment his bloodline evolution had succeeded, he felt dizzy, his body practically floating.

Large amounts of images streaked past his eyes. In the boundlessly vast starry skies, numerous Giant Kemoyin Serpent figures appeared, lowering their gigantic serpent heads to him as if welcoming their ruler.

At the same time, a terrifying giant serpent that was over a hundred thousand metres long appeared behind him. It had beautiful scales and flowing, graceful curves. On the head, a few protruding bones formed something similar to a crown.

The whole serpent was filled with an elegance and grandeur typical to a ruler, the original savage and terrifying aura having dulled. However, Leylin knew that this ruler of snakes was far more terrifying than before. This graceful demeanor was a facade, concealing the bloodthirst and insanity within.

With but a slight though, Leylin could sense Freya, Gilbert, Emma, and the other Kemoyin Warlocks through their bloodlines.

'This terrifying control... truly worthy of the emperor of Giant Kemoyin Serpents!' Leylin smiled as he observed his truesoul. His soul had gained the most through this evolution.

Crimson light expanded rapidly. His true soul was now several times larger than before, half as large as the soul of a Radiant Moon Magus. The light within it even surpassed that within the soul of a New Moon Magus!

The soul had begun to expand, about to transform into a full moon.

“With the strength of my soul, I can probably be considered a rank 5 already. As long as I go back and settle things, it won’t be a problem to break through.” Leylin huffed roughly, but the elation was evident in his expression.

He was currently not in very good shape. Though he had prepared ample defensive measures, it was still no easy task to let his body be a battlefield between the Sun’s Flames and the bronze blood.

Leylin laughed wryly as he scanned his body. The injuries to his chest were the most serious of all; skin, blood and flesh had melted away, revealing internal organs that were pulsing slightly. An arm had disappeared, and the rest of his body was severely damaged as well.

If this were a regular Magus or Warlock, such grave injuries would probably have long since resulted in their deaths. However, Leylin’s heart was still throbbing powerfully, displaying his tenacious life force!

---

[Beep! Damage to host body at 45%. Recommendation: Immediate cryostasis in combination with the usage of bloodline force to recuperate.]

the A.I. Chip loyally reminded him.

“That isn’t urgent. Show me information on the fifth level of Kemoyin’s Pupil!” Leylin commanded. Immediately after, he was delighted to see that after attaining the bloodline of the Kemoyin Serpent Emperor, the A.I. Chip’s deduction of Kemoyin’s Pupil had proceeded successfully. The fifth layer of the meditation technique was completed!

“The last piece of the puzzle is in place...” Leylin muttered.

Having reached Morning Star, he had been thinking about how to break through to Radiant Moon. The bloodline shackles and meditation technique were the two biggest problems, and now that he’d evolved to an emperor bloodline and the fifth level of Kemoyin’s Pupil had been deduced, Leylin had spent much effort on them, and now, the fifth level of Kemoyin’s Pupil had been deduced, there were no more problems in this aspect. It could be said that all his problems had disappeared.

Hss! The phantom of an enormous Kemoyin Serpent Emperor appeared behind Leylin, wrapping him in bloodline energy.

# Chapter 618 - Rank 5 And The Snake Dowager

---

Gigantic and graceful, the phantom of a Kemoyin Serpent Emperor that held an elegance befitting a ruler appeared behind Leylin's back. Large amounts of blood-coloured energy shrouded him. The serpent emperor snarled as a black hole appeared in front of it, sucking in the surrounding ice, earth, rocks, the remains and even the air.

Once large amounts of materials disappeared into its mouth, Leylin felt a powerful life force begin to circulate within his body. His body buzzed as first the skeleton, then his internal organs, blood, flesh, and finally the skin was regenerated. With the help of a powerful life force, the injuries on his body recovered at a frightening rate.

‘Could this be the rumoured devouring ability of the Kemoyin Serpent Emperor?’ Leylin had a thought.

Immediately after, he felt his arm go numb, and the limb that had been broken off began to regenerate. In just ten or so seconds, the grave injury was completely recovered.

This speed left even Leylin in shock. ‘With this rate of recovery, I can recover quickly even in a battle against a Radiant Moon. I could even endure a Morning Star Arcane Art with just my body, immediately restoring myself afterwards! If the devouring ability is already so terrifying, what about that of control?’ he wondered.

The information about the Kemoyin Serpent Emperor had been lost in ancient times, and a large portion of the information that was gathered had been derived by the A.I. Chip from his bloodline memories. It was rather small, but just looking at the description he could tell that his control over Kemoyin Warlocks was great. Great enough, in fact, that if he commanded a Morning Star Kemoyin Warlock to die, the other party would not be able to resist at all.

Hss— Though he had completely recovered, the Giant Kemoyin Serpent figure at Leylin's back was still unsatisfied. It abruptly broke through the layer of soil and soared into the air.

A terrifying suction force appeared, and everything, be it living or otherwise, was dragged towards the black hole that had appeared in the serpent's mouth.

The force spread out farther than even the bounds of the castle, radiating into the surroundings. Leylin could see several powerful creatures, many at the Crystal Phase, dragged from the sky by force as they disappeared into the black hole.

Practically every being in this world of ice automatically bowed their heads in respect and fear, trembling bodies paralysed under the suppression of the Kemoyin Serpent Emperor.

The accumulated life force was enormous, eventually forming a cocoon that covered Leylin. The Kemoyin Serpent Emperor at Leylin's back continued to snarl unceasingly, and only after almost devouring the entirety of the central icy plains did it pull back into the cocoon of light, satisfied.

Leylin was undergoing a wondrous transformation within. Powerful bloodline energy fused with boundless life force, aiding Leylin in his bid to charge into rank 5.

He was becoming a rank 5 Warlock, a Radiant Moon! There were likely no more than twenty Radiant Moons in the entire central continent, second only to the Breaking Dawn Monarchs. It was also precisely due to the Radiant Moons in the Union that bloodline Warlocks still survived to this day.

On top of that, this event was even more significant for Leylin. He had finally moved past the bloodline shackles of the Giant Kemoyin Serpent, and now had the wherewithal to try to become a rank 5.

“I already reached the peak of Morning Star after fusing Fireplume into my point mass, so I already meet the requirements for the advancement. And now that the bloodline and technique that were holding me back are solved...” Leylin chuckled lightly.

With the cooperation of the bloodline of the rank 5 Kemoyin Serpent Emperor, his advancement was smooth. The fifth level of Kemoyin’s Pupil that the A.I. Chip had just deduced began to operate slowly.

The point mass in his sea of consciousness buzzed as it revolved quickly, growing in density as the nebula surrounding it began another round of frantic expansion. Another layer of fine black runes emerged on top of it.

With the probing of the soul through the A.I. Chip, Leylin could see the truesoul located at the heart of the point mass beginning to evolve.

Probing through his A.I. Chip, Leylin saw his truesoul at the heart of his point mass breaking through its limits at the peak of Morning Star, expanding to form the shape of a moon. It was glittering with a fine radiance that filled it with a sense of perfection.

Soul force was constantly poured in, causing the round moon to emanate a cool lustre. Once that was completed, his soul that was a size larger than that of normal Radiant Moon Magi had on it a layer of soul force that looked like a crescent moon that emitted an intense radiance.

‘I don’t have enough soul force to fill my truesoul. In fact, I don’t even have enough to fill half the volume... It seems like I’m a New Moon...’ Leylin suddenly came to an understanding of how Radiant Moons trained.

Ranks 4 to 6 involved the training of soul force. Morning Stars were still fumbling around without direction; it was when one advanced to Radiant Moon that they began true training.

The soul, which was in the shape of a moon showed how much soul force one had with its radiance. Rank 5 Magi had to train and fill it up. The different amounts of fullness represented the different stages of New Moon, Half Moon, and Full Moon Magi.

[Beep! Host's soul force has been strengthened. Chip upgrade commencing... Time to completion: 4m24s.]

With the advancement of his soul, the A.I. Chip was undergoing its upgrade immediately as well, having been fused into it. Perhaps it was because it had already gained quite a bit from Sky City, the advancement this time was quite rapid. In less than five minutes, it had completed its upgrade and rebooted.

The sounds of the A.I. Chip rang once more.

[Beep! Host's Kemoyin's Pupil meditation technique has reached the fifth level. Advancing to rank 5 Warlock!]

[Beep! Host has advanced to become a Radiant Moon Warlock. All statistics have been significantly strengthened, recalculating...]

The familiar robotic voice seemed to be accompanied with a changed interface, the screen projected in Leylin's mind even more solid than before.

'Looks like the A.I. Chip has undergone a huge transformation!' Leylin touched his chin.



[Data collection complete. Display?]

The A.I. Chip launched another prompt. Leylin nodded as he voiced his approval. The A.I Chip immediately projected the refreshed numbers before Leylin's eyes.

[Leylin Farlier, Rank 5 Warlock. Bloodline: Kemoyin Serpent Emperor. Strength: 75, Agility: 61, Vitality: 137.5, Spiritual force: 1326.7, Magic power: 1326(Magic power is in synchronisation with spiritual force). Soul force: 133 (New Moon)]

“It really deserves to be called the bloodline of the Kemoyin Emperor. The numbers were raised to such a huge extent!” Leylin's expression was filled with glee. Not only had his spiritual force broken through 1000, his strength and agility which had not improved in a very long while had increased as well. His vitality had been raised by over 30 points, which was just terrifying!

“I never expected that the growth of Kemoyin Warlocks would only become more frightful with time!” Leylin read through his stats and could not help but sigh.

He felt the soul energy in his body that was as cool as water. It was soul force that had reached rank 5, and was of a higher quality than that at Morning Star, therefore having better effects. However, there was no elation in Leylin's expression.

“The issue of the bloodline shackles still has not been dealt with. I’ve only pushed it back by a rank, and this time there’s no such thing as raising the rank of my bloodline anymore!” Leylin gazed at the prompt at the bottom of the stats frame and turned grim.

[Host’s Kemoyin bloodline has reached limits of genes. Unable to advance further.]

The A.I. Chip was plainly telling Leylin that after reaching the Kemoyin Serpent Emperor, he had reached the limits of his bloodline. At least Kemoyin Serpents had no way to advance to a higher realm.

An ominous feeling, like his future path had been cut off, emerged in Leylin’s mind...

BOOM! The cocoon of light in the world of ice burst apart, revealing Leylin within.

“Whatever it is, I’ve finally attained my goal in coming to the subterranean world this time. I just didn’t expect the remains of the Scorpion Man to be burnt up along with my opponent. It’s slightly regretful that I didn’t manage to obtain the coordinates to the Icy World...” Leylin sighed ruefully, turning into a black figure that disappeared into the void.

---

The long majestic river that was the astral plane flowed on, many foreign worlds like the stars in the galaxy. They were a brightly coloured array, twinkling with varying lustres.

In one such world, full of flames and shadows, a boundless darkness formed a dense fog that completely covered the continent.

Numerous ancient, terrifying serpents grew and multiplied in this place, terrifying auras at Morning Star advancements appearing everywhere.

At the heart of the continent, the holy land of all snakes, Morning Star serpents could be seen everywhere. The closer one got to the centre, the more horrifying they became, as rank 5 and even rank 6 snakes flashed by on occasion.

In a gigantic spatial crack, a coiled ball of snake the size of a star revealed the alluring figure of the Snake Dowager. The moment Leylin reached rank 5, she opened a pair of misty eyes that seemed like water.

“I’d never thought that today, after the end of the ancient era, an Emperor would awaken among the Kemoyin race!” The eyes of the Snake Dowager seemed to penetrate across multiple worlds and the astral plane, locking onto the Magus World and a young Warlock.

To her, a Morning Star was just a basic soldier. Rank 5s and 6s

were worthy of attention, and such a thing as the Kemoyin Serpent Emperor that could control the Giant Kemoyin Serpents was even more worthy of interest.

“The power of destiny is guiding you here...” The life and death of multiple worlds flashed across her beautiful eyes. Two mandara flowers, one bright and one dark, bloomed in them before dissipating.

Destiny, seen through the eyes of the Snake Dowager!

# Chapter 619 - Tracking And The Statue

---

The beautiful eyes of the Snake Dowager seemed to see into fragments of the future, penetrating the long river of destiny.

After her prophecy, the Snake Dowager coiled back into the ball, seeming to sink back into a deep slumber.

“What’s going on? I feel like somebody’s watching me and I have an ominous feeling!”

The very instant the Snake Dowager’s sight set into the Magus World, Leylin who was in the midst of flying, felt his hair stand on end. An odd mixture of terror and reverence appeared in his mind.

“The Snake Dowager...” Leylin felt a bitterness in his mouth. Never had he expected that once he had advanced into a rank 5 Warlock, he would arouse her interest.

‘But this is the Magus World. It isn’t that easy for her to come over!’ Whether this sort of attention was good or bad, Leylin had no wish to form any sort of relationship with an existence at such a level. He’d always liked to operate after careful planning, and even if it was the Snake Dowager, he hoped to seek her out only after making his own preparations. That was better than being passive and letting her find him.

‘A Radiant Moon strength shouldn’t be enough to arouse the interest of the Snake Dowager, unless...’ Leylin touched his chin, light flickering in his eyes, ‘Could it be that my Kemoyin Serpent

Emperor bloodline is making her feel... threatened?’

Leylin couldn’t help but turn his attention back to the summary the A.I. Chip had given him about his bloodline, specifically the row that detailed his control ability.

“Kemoyin Serpent Emperors have a total dominance over Giant Kemoyin Serpents and all their descendants. Could this result in some overlap and conflict with the Snake Dowager’s own rule?”

Leylin suddenly had the urge to try it out. If he and the Snake Dowager were to give a Kemoyin Warlock an order at the same time, what would they do?

However, such an insane idea was quickly suppressed. With his current strength, challenging the Snake Dowager’s authority is equivalent to death.

The ability of the Kemoyin Serpent Emperor to rule over others was, in fact, a breakthrough for him to resist the Snake Dowager’s control over himself. It was like a seedling that needed to be watered regularly until it bloomed and bore fruit.

Before all this, he needed to keep a low profile, silently amassing strength and prepare to soar, waiting till he completely broke through the bloodline shackles and also broke free from the control of the Snake Dowager!

---

“I’ve found it! This is it— Mount Asura...” A few figures robed in black appeared over a volcano. Large amounts of lava spurted into the sky, but it bypassed their bodies without even so much as a ripple.

“Time Recall!” One of the black robed figures looked solemn as he used a spell, dazzling light being generated at his fingertips.

The translucent face of a mirror suddenly appeared before him, revealing a blurred scenery.

After summoning this mirror, the black-robed figure seemed fatigued as he spoke to another Magus behind him, “Carol, it’s up to you now, you’re the most adept in this aspect...”

“Alright!” While the Magus behind him was wearing a black robe, her physique was evidently smaller than the others, and her voice was gentle and agreeable.

“Aura Extraction!” She stood before the screen, right arm as smooth and bright as jade as it went through the surface, grabbing hold of a black gas.

Wooh wooh... After this stream of gas appeared, the magic equipment on the bodies of these people displayed a dazzling luster and made noises.

“The nose of the hound has reacted. Looks like he was here before, and not too long ago either!” The leading Magus spoke with

conviction.

A Magus began to gnash his teeth. “And here we were thinking he’d return to the south coast. Who’d have thought he’d escape into the underground like a mouse!”

Leylin’s concealing techniques were far too complicated, and even Magi who excelled in prophecies could do nothing against him. Things were even more complicated for these Magi.

However, the powerful organisation backing them had gathered a lot of information, and through the method of elimination, they’d found a trace of Leylin’s whereabouts.

The Magus who had spoken before evidently was very hostile towards Leylin, emanating a dangerous air. “Warlocks have enhanced bodies, and their skin is the best raw material for art pieces. This Leylin’s skin will be a perfect addition to my study room!”

The female Magus from before shrieked, “Eugene, if you don’t change that disgusting hobby, I’ll break off all relations with you!”

“Enough! Though the target is merely a Morning Star, it’s publicly acknowledged that he possesses battle strength at the Radiant Moon realm. Don’t underestimate him!” The leader said, putting a stop to their conversation, “Be more careful. He’s taken a Radiant Moon down before; if you don’t want your truesoul to be thrown back into the astral plane, buck up and don’t look down on your opponent!”



“Hmph! I alone can take care of two Radiant Moons like Stuart!” Eugene huffed disdainfully, but did not continue speaking after that.

After all, he believed that he could defeat Stuart, but he had no methods that could cause the other party’s death.

Not even a peak Radiant Moon or Breaking Dawn Monarch dared guarantee that they could eliminate a Radiant Moon Magus without letting their opponent escape. Leylin, who possessed the power to kill a Radiant Moon Magus, was very outstanding.

“Though he made use of a bloodline imprint to kill Stuart, even I have to admit that he’s a genius to be able to push the Giant Kemoyin bloodline to the peak of Morning Star until it is comparable to Radiant Moons. He’s a real genius! Even in ancient times, he would be one of the most dazzling stars!” Carol’s voice held a sigh within.

“A genius amongst Warlocks!” The leader spoke coldly, causing Carol to fall silent, “The more geniuses the enemy has, the weaker we are. Leylin must be erased!” His voice was icy cold, and Eugene and Carol nodded solemnly.

“Boss, I just don’t understand. Even if Leylin’s amazing now, he has the Giant Kemoyin Serpent bloodline. Kemoyin’s Pupil only has up to four levels, and the Morning Star realm is his limit. Why are we hunting him down so fervently? Even while we were chasing Golden Lion Wayde when he was a Morning Star, we

didn't operate on such a large scale..." Carol's face was full of doubt, and Eugene's ears perked up.

"That's because you don't understand the terror that is the Giant Kemoyin Serpent..." The leading Magus answered coldly, but did not continue, leaving Carol and Eugene bewildered.

"I don't care what you think, but whatever it is, killing Leylin Farlier is the most important task sent down by our organisation. It must be completed, even at the cost of our lives!" The leader's expression was solemn.

Carol and Eugene nodded coldly. Amongst Magi, this was truly a rare sight. To be able to bind the ever-rational Magi to this extent meant the organisation backing them was exceptionally powerful.

"In addition, Leylin as he is right now is very difficult to deal with, especially with people from the Warlock Union meddling. They're rather protective of this younger generation..."

In spite of the warning, Eugene was full of confidence. "Don't worry, boss! If the real bodies of those Warlocks dare emerge from the Morning Star area, our Monarch wouldn't let them off so easily..."

"Mm! Based on the intel, the target had been a ruler of Twilight Zone for a period of time and must be extremely familiar with the situation there. We need to act very cautiously when we go down there..."

The leading Magus continued to express his caution before three flickering rays of light pierced into the lava like sharp blades, following the lava pathway and sinking downwards.

If even Morning Star Magi could pass through the barrier, there was no issue at all for Radiant Moons.

---

In Twilight Zone, the headquarters of Nature's Alliance Academy.

The academy had now regained its previous vibrance. Ever since Leylin's return, the humans of Twilight Zone broke away from the darkness of war, and even gained a glorious victory! All this would have been unimaginable in the past, but had been easily attained with Leylin's arrival.

Leylin's gigantic black stone statue was still at the center of the bustling square in all its glory, but now there was another in the corner.

This statue had a distorted human face, nose and eyes squeezed together due to extreme shock and terror; it seemed rather comical. Coupled with the assumed motion of the body, it looked like a clown, creating a stark contrast with Leylin's statue in the middle.

Whenever a few of the official Magi in the academy passed by the statue, their eyes filled with a trace of panic that did not dissipate

for a long while.

This clownish stone statue was naturally that Banker from before. Though he was a rank 3 Magus who was once regarded as the strongest human, he'd been killed by Leylin without any chance to retaliate. Even his body had become a stone figure, exhibited here for eternity to be sneered at by later generations.

This method immediately resulted in incessant terror in the Magi's hearts. There were also some who were filled with reverence towards Leylin.

“What is it? Is there anything else?” In the luxurious villa, Leylin reclined on the sofa, watching the Magus that seemed to be short of time.

It was obvious that this young man was extremely nervous, his eyes showed his admiration and apprehension at meeting his idol face to face.

“Lord Protector!” Will's face was filled with emotion and uneasiness, “If you knew my mother, would you know about my father?”

“Jenny never told you?” Leylin watched Will with interest. It had to be said that he was still somewhat similar to his father.

“No. Everytime she talked about it, she got so sorrowful...” Will hanged his head low.

“There are some things we don’t know, and something things we can’t tell you even if we knew!” Leylin laughed as he stroked Will’s head. “The only thing I can tell you is that I’d chosen to bring you into Nature’s Alliance Academy...”

# Chapter 620 - Of Curses And Dreams

---

Will walked out dejectedly. He had gained no further insight than Leylin's encouragement. Other than that, he felt that this father whom he had never seen before was shrouded in a layer of dense fog.

"What's wrong with Will?" Celine had instantly noticed this anomaly as she walked into Leylin's villa carrying a silver plate.

"Freshly grounded coffee, personally made by me!" On the silver plate, white mist floated above the beige can and mug.

"Nothing much! Just a youth's confusion!" Leylin smiled, held up a cup of coffee and said, "The taste is still as good as before!"

"You... How long are you going to be staying this time?" Celine bit her lips, watching Leylin with an evasive gaze. Compared to the previous time they met, Leylin now seemed like an ordinary man; there were no powerful energy waves being transmitted from his body anymore.

And yet, she knew that this was only a sign of Leylin becoming more powerful. It seemed like he had gained many things during his journey to the Icy Cave.

However, even if she'd known beforehand, Celine could only smile bitterly. One could only gain as much as their strength allowed them. Even if she knew about the existence of the world of ice before Leylin, any one of the giant icy creatures in there could

kill her without even leaving her corpse behind.

And now, Celine keenly sensed that Leylin had already gained what he wanted, which was why Twilight Zone no longer attracted him. This discovery immediately made her uneasy.

“It may be quite some time, but it won’t be longer than a year!” Leylin took a sip of the rich and mellow coffee. However, the words he said caused Celine’s face to turn pale.

For a Magus, a year’s time was too short. Regardless of what was being done, it was not nearly enough. Even an experiment required a lot more time than this.

Seeing Celine’s unwilling expression, Leylin secretly sighed, but he did not say anything else. The entire Twilight Zone was just too barren. This place where even a rank 3 Magus could act like a tyrant and become a ruler was honestly too small. Only the larger central continent and the astral plane where there were endless profound mysteries were worthy of Leylin’s residence, allowing him to travel as much as he wanted in the future.

“In that case, can you let me follow you to the central continent?” Celine clenched her teeth.

“Of course you can, but I have to tell you a few things first!” Leylin looked at Celine with a profound expression in his pupils, “In the central continent, rank 2 Magi are merely like ants, their sheer number inconceivable. With your current strength, you will only be in the lowest rung of society there. Also, I already have a

wife... Are you going to be willing to give up everything in Twilight Zone and leave with me?"

After hearing Leylin speak honestly about him already having a wife, Celine stumbled a few steps back, obviously not expecting it. And upon hearing that she had to give up the entirety of Twilight Zone, her expression darkened even further.

After a long silence, she finally made a decision. Smiling bitterly, she said, "Alright! I cannot give up on Mentor's wish, nor on Twilight Zone. This is my home!"

Leylin smiled, "Perhaps I can make it up to you in other aspects! For example, didn't you want my bloodline very badly before?"

This was a decision Leylin had made after long and careful deliberation. His current Kemoyin's bloodline had already evolved to an extreme point, even reaching its genetic limits. There was no more room for improvement. Hence, the time was finally right to grow his family.

A rank 5 Warlock's bloodline would be sufficient to form a terrifying power in a short period of time. With the restriction of the bloodline and his own ability as emperor to control all Giant Kemoyin Serpents, these bloodline descendants would become his most capable assistants in the future. Since he was prepared to grow the Farlier Family after his return, there was no harm in leaving another child behind in Twilight Zone.

"Really?" Celine's eyes sparkled, and her face even flushed red



with excitement. The terrifying innate abilities Leylin had displayed was proof enough that his descendants definitely wouldn't turn out too bad. They might even inherit some powerful abilities from him. Such a bloodline was one that many female Magi sought, but few could obtain.

One Morning Star's family always had a great chance of producing another among their ranks, much greater than that of other Magus clans. Perhaps one of her own descendants would be a strong Morning Star as well!

As she thought along this line, Celine's breathing could not help but gradually get heavier.

Seeing Celine in such a state, Leylin could not help but burst out laughing. Although this woman had changed slightly, she was still that same old Celine in essence.

However, he did not hold much hope for her at all. Even if she was willing to give up everything in Twilight Zone and return to the central continent with him, she would at most be another good friend for Freya.

Furthermore, letting his bloodline grow in multiple places was also safer overall.

Leylin stroked his chin. His decision to grow his bloodline in many different places was certainly not about something as simple as expanding his influence.

Through his endless study on bloodline mutations and gene changing, he'd come to know that, with enough descendants, there was a chance that a genetic mutation would occur, allowing the individual's strength to rise further than normal. Although such odds were small enough to be disregarded, there was always hope.

In fact, many Kemoyin Warlocks and other bloodline Warlocks practised this method. Whenever descendants of exceptionally rich bloodlines appeared, they would perceive it as fate's blessing.

'I have to go back once my Kemoyin Serpent Emperor bloodline has fully matured and I develop my Radiant Moon strength.' Leylin's pupils dimmed...

The boiling lava boomed endlessly. Many fiery dragons splashed about, and rocks shattered to expose a passageway that led upwards. A few black figures rushed out of the place directly.

"Damned Leylin and damned Twilight Zone! Chief, don't you know that concentrated fire elemental particles are a great enemy for a female Magus' skin? My maintenance charges for this mission are going to increase!" Carol pouted coquettishly, taking out a mirror and looking her skin over carefully.

However, the leader and the Magus called Eugene evidently did not care much.

"As long as this mission can be completed, no one would care even if you rested for a hundred years!" the leader snorted coldly. He ignored his subordinate's complaints, much more interested in

this territory.

“Tsk... This underground... the elemental particles are already so barren... It’s simply a desert for Magi!” On the other hand, Eugene also sighed while clicking his tongue, showing his disdain towards the barrenness of the Twilight Zone.

“Compared to the central continent, this place is indeed a desert. However, the darkness and earth elemental particle concentration is still passable, even if barely. Use spells of these two elements as much as possible to conserve your soul force...” The chief’s head tilted to one side, looking at Carol, “Carol, found the opponent yet?”

“Let me see...” Carol took out a transparent crystal ball. In the core of this ball was a black wisp of air that swayed back and forth. This was Leylin’s aura, collected from Mount Asura.

Although Leylin had covered his traces very carefully, as long as such Magi had the correct location and suitable spells, finding his tracks was only a matter of time.

A black stream of air emerged on Carol’s face. After pondering for a moment with her eyes closed, she pointed towards the north and spoke confidently. “He’s in that direction, I’m sure of it.”

“Good! Now that we’ve discovered the opponent’s position, won’t three Radiant Moons like us be able to deal with a simple Morning Star?” Eugene licked his lips, “That rascal made me run about outside for such a long time. I want him!”

This leader nodded, “We can. But the target is still as strong as a Radiant Moon himself, do not underestimate him. However, I have information that the target still has a weakness. Even if he has fighting strength at the Radiant Moon realm and powerful bloodline imprints, he is still a Morning Star at his core. The strength of his truesoul is limited to the peak of Morning Star. If we cast curses or attack the soul...”

“It’ll be very safe!” Carol nodded. “Just nice, there’s been some progress in my research on soul curses recently, just leave it to me!”

“The two of us will assist!” The leader looked at Eugene, and the latter agreed with a little reluctance, “Alright! You’re the leader. Whatever you say goes!” Evidently, he was a little depressed because he was unable to draw blood directly.

---

“Leylin! Hurry to school, you’re going to be late!” A foreign yet familiar voice echoed in his ears, making Leylin a little confused.

“Where is this? A.I. Chip?” Around him was a road, cherry blossom trees in full bloom on both sides. Blossoms drifted down to the street one after the other.

The ground was very clean, without any sorts of paper scraps. Leylin looked at his own hands, his skin that was milky white without much musculature was full of youth.

“...” There was no response from the A.I. Chip, causing Leylin to fall into a deep silence.

At this moment, a large chunk of memory entered his brain. “I’m Leylin! Innocent Saints High School, year 3 student! I also have an elder sister and a younger sister in my family, I’m supposed to go to the campus festival....”

“Why... Why do I feel like I’ve forgotten something important, and what is an A.I. Chip? Why did I remember it subconsciously?” Looking at the checkered shirt on his body and the student name tag on his chest, Leylin became quiet in an instant.

“Hey Leylin, what’s wrong with you?” A blonde haired student walked over, pulling Leylin’s arm along with him.

“Serway...” Leylin called out the student’s once he opened his mouth, which made him fall into greater confusion, ‘I need to calm down... Why do I know his name? Where exactly is this?’

“What are you waiting for? We won’t make it in time!” Serway stopped a taxi, shoving Leylin into it before following closely behind, “Driver, Innocent Saints High School!”

“Have you lost your mind? The famous singer, Carol has a concert at the campus festival today...”

# Chapter 621 - Carol

---

“Carol?” Leylin leaned back against the couch while feeling the familiar rumble of the engine, his mind fuzzy. ‘Seems to be a very famous singer, said to be the idol of teenagers in the Furze Federation... Also seems to be slightly related to me, but... I don’t remember anymore...’

Memories related to the other person immediately emerged in Leylin’s brain, ‘Only, why do I keep feeling that something’s wrong? This shouldn’t be my life... My life...’

Leylin stretched out his right hand and a word suddenly emerged in his brain: “Fire!” This was pronounced in the ancient Byron language, but tens of seconds passed and nothing happened.

“What’s wrong with you Leylin? Devising new words? Why haven’t I heard this before, is this German or Spanish?” Serway asked thoughtlessly as he looked at the scenery outside the window from time to time.

“Neither! I may have pronounced it wrongly...” Leylin’s face was slightly flushed, but his heart was stirring, ‘What happened just now, why did I have a premonition that something interesting would happen after reading that phone... No! Why do I remember this syllable?’

Skrrrrrr! Following the sound of sudden brakes, the taxi stopped in front of a beautiful institution.

A large coniferous tree and a holly tree stood on both sides of a white marble statue. In front of the entrance was a banner—Innocent Saints 57th Campus Festival.

Below the banner, there was a row of tiny words written in black ink using felt-tip pens and spray paint — Welcoming the beautiful Miss Carol's arrival. We will support you forever! A smiley face was even drawn after it, and Leylin felt like laughing upon seeing it.

“This lad is a student of Innocents Saints High School? Work hard...” The taxi driver waved his hand and disappeared into the road. Leylin secretly rolled his eyes at the hand that was stretched out of the car's window.

After walking into the school, Leylin could see the bustle of a large crowd. Many teenage boys in shirts and teenage girls in dresses hovered around a colourful tent that was set up temporarily. From time to time, playful giggles also echoed from within. Colourful confetti fluttered gently while a sweet, symphonic music permeated the place.

“Brother! Why aren't you moving? You were the last one we were missing!” A small girl came over and pulled Leylin by the hands, giving him a feeling of warmth.

Leylin fell into a trance for a moment as chunks of memories emerged one after the other in his mind. This young lady was his younger sister Gail, currently in year one. And yet, this familiar face seemed foreign as well, causing him to be somewhat dazed. “Aren't I here now?” he said in reply.

“Let’s go! Let’s go!” Serway and Gail, one behind the other, brought Leylin to the side of a large open stage.

“Hurry and start work, oh Debugging Master!” Serway pushed Leylin to a mechanical platform that was filled with joysticks and buttons, taking out a huge heart shaped bouquet of roses from his back as if he was performing magic. He shifted his attention towards a tall girl in the dance team, a sight that caused Leylin to roll his eyes.

“What’s the matter? Is there a problem? Nooo! Miss Carol will be here soon!” Gail was looking at Leylin who stood looking silly in front of the debugging platform. Thinking that the machine malfunctioned or something, she couldn’t help but pace back and forth as a layer of tears appeared in her eyes.

Seeing Gail like that, Leylin secretly heaved a sigh of relief and came before the debugging platform, “Oh it’s fine, I was just thinking about something and my mind kind of wandered off...”

The moment he came in front of the platform, his hands moved to its surface, beginning to work subconsciously. Numerous lights lit up, and the curtains on the stage were slowly drawn back.

‘Okay! The joysticks and sliding platforms are all normal, just do it according to the previous procedure and it’ll be fine...’ Leylin rubbed his forehead, feeling that things had grown more unexpected. The knowledge of the debugging machine seemed to have been shoved into his brain all of a sudden, and although he



felt extremely familiar with it fear began to rise in his heart.

“Yay! My brother is the best, you’re awesome!” Gail jumped in glee. Seeing her like that, along with the gentle and kind memory of his elder sister, Leylin suddenly felt that such a life... didn’t seem all that bad.

This thought seemed to have only come up for a moment, but it made his heart stir as if he discovered something incredible. Fragments of memories poured into his mind, as if he was watching some sort of movie.

He’d seen an ignorant and underdeveloped world that was filled with a mysterious force called magic. He seemed to have been exploring that place.

‘Hmm... Is this what I dreamt of last night? Maybe I can use it as an idea for a novel or something...’ Leylin stroked his chin, but he still had the nagging feeling that things weren’t so simple.

While Leylin had sunk into deep thought, a loud, deafening clamour sounded out. Many people rushed out to gather at the front of the stage in a flood, breaking his train of thought.

“Look! Sister Carol is here!” Gail shouted in excitement as well, squeezing forward on tiptoes.

“Isn’t she just a celebrity? Just you wait, I’ll get a few autographed photos and postcards for you later!” Leylin snorted.

“Of course you can take as many photos of her as you want, but the current scenario is different! I’m so excited...” Gail squeezed forward even more, but Leylin grew confused, “Wait, what do you mean I can take as many as I want, am I very close to her?”

But Gail had already disappeared into the crowd, making Leylin lose someone to question.

Carol slowly walked to the centre of the stage, accompanied by the hysterical shouts of the crowd. The many spotlights emitted a dazzling brilliance even in the day as colourful mist spread out and surrounded her.

“Carol!” “Carol!” “Carol!” “We love you!”

Numerous teenagers screamed at the top of their lungs, almost to the point that Leylin could not help but cover his ears, feeling as if his eardrums had been destroyed.

At the same time, his gaze shifted, attracted to the girl at the centre of the stage. Carol wore a magnificent costume that wasn’t the dazzling kind, with two plaits hanging down gently from her hair. Her face was so exquisite she looked like a doll.

“Thank you! I love you all too!” Carol looked at the fans below and smiled sweetly, causing many fanatical fans to cover her in another round of adulation.

Her voice was very airy, melding well with her personality to form a unique aura. Even a few words from her generated an extraordinary attraction.

“Next, let’s invite Miss Carol to perform her famous song for us — Flight!” Because of Carol’s presence, the two emcees were almost forgotten. Patiently waiting for their chance, they immediately announced the song.

“Okay! Start the background music!” Leylin wore his headphones, but Carol who was on the stage, made a signal to stop.

“Wait! I have another piece of news here for everyone,” Carol smiled, carrying a rare hint of excitement in her voice. “My trip to Innocent Saints’ campus this time was on my boyfriend’s invitation. Yes! I’m in love!”

The place instantly fell into a deathly silence. Carol, who was famous across the entirety of the Furze Federation and had always been lovely idol, was actually in love, and with a high school student?

This storm immediately petrified the surrounding audience. Soon after, a howl echoed, livening the atmosphere at the scene.

“What? No! Carol, you’re my goddess, how can you...” “Oh! No! How is that possible?” Many teenage boys clenched their chests in pain and collapsed. Leylin even felt like he could hear the sound of their glass hearts shattering.

But even more of the audience waved the fresh flowers, lightsticks and other items in their hands and said, “Carol, we support you!”

“Thank you!” Carol bowed at the audience below with reddened eyes, “I’d like to invite my boyfriend up to sing Flight with me! To commemorate this day...” Upon hearing this, many of the students looked at one another, as if they were trying to identify Carol’s boyfriend.

‘Wahaha... This Carol’s boyfriend is going to get unlucky!’ Leylin thought gloatingly.

“Then, aren’t you going to hurry up there?” Who knew since when, Serway and Gail had appeared beside Leylin again, pulling him onto the stage.

“Brother! Sister Carol has already mustered her courage like that, what are you still waiting for?” Gail tugged on Leylin’s sleeve, laughing like a small fox that had successfully stolen a chicken.

“Eh? What what? It’s me?” Leylin pointed at his own nose, “Carol’s boyfriend is me?” Suddenly, another memory appeared again.

“Leylin, remember our promise!” Wearing a pretty ribbon on her head, Carol pulled Leylin’s hand.

Only at this moment did Leylin recall. it seemed... As if... Should

be... Roughly... Carol had actually been his neighbour for 3 years, and it was at that time that the two had embarked on a romantic relationship.

After being dragged onto the stage with Carol pulling his hand, facing the multiple spotlights and the fervent gazes of many geeks, Leylin's face was still a little stiff.

“Are you serious? This scenario just isn't right...” Leylin felt slightly dizzy. At this moment, the gentle background music started playing, and an angelic voice echoed from beside him.

Leylin looked slightly dazed as he watched this beautiful fairy-like girl beside him. Her voice was airy like no other, as clear as spring water. It seemed like even her spirit could cleanse him, it was extremely refreshing. This was especially true of her eyes. Those eyes were full of emotion as she sang, making it extremely difficult for him to part with her.

‘An affluent life, and the admiration of a celebrity, all this is so wonderful... What am I still waiting for?’ Leylin could not help but question himself.

But at the same time, the uneasiness in his heart grew stronger, a feeling that he would regret the wrong decision here for the rest of his life.

‘That's right! My dreams, my goals, my original pursuits, what exactly are they?’ Leylin asked himself repeatedly.

# Chapter 622 - Fleeing And Awakening

---

“My goal?” Leylin stood on the stage. Although he was the focus of attention of thousands of people, his mind still wandered off.

“Is it to live my life ordinarily and peacefully? Yes! With time, money, and a wife who loves you, what’s there to hesitate?”

‘But why, why do I still feel a little indignant deep in my heart?’ Leylin touched his chest, ‘If everyone is like that, then fine. But if there is a path leading to eternal life, and I don’t try and pursue it, how could I face myself?’

Eternity? Eternity! Yes, pursuing the ultimate of everything and obtaining eternal life, that is my pursuit!’

Leylin’s pupils instantly grew resolute. Grabbing Carol’s hand, he gently said, “Sister Carol... S-Sorry...”

Right at this moment, an intense rumbling explosion echoed, engulfing the place in crimson flames. The crowd screamed and dispersed as a black, armoured car barged recklessly into the campus, stopping at the side of the stage.

Numerous figures in steel armour jumped out in an orderly manner. Clearly, they were well-trained.

”External armour? And nuclear-powered laser guns?” As Leylin looked at the metal skeleton in their appearances and the oddly

shaped gun barrels, he could not help but show a shocked expression, his pupils narrowing rapidly.

“Seize her!” These armoured men did not even notice the other students running about, as if all of them were ants in their eyes. They lunged towards the centre of the stage directly with cold expressions in their eyes. This was the disregard one developed for life through years of bloody warfare.

“Carol! Their target is Carol!” Leylin was surprised.

“Brother Leylin!” The girl shrieked, holding Leylin’s hand. Given that she was a celebrity, she naturally had a few bodyguards by her side, but they’d been burnt to ashes by the lasers before they could even pull out their weapons, becoming what seemed like piles of charcoal.

In an instant, the screams of the crowd grew more intense. Those armed soldiers looked like steel mountains. All obstructions they encountered on their way, be it furniture or even human life, were ruthlessly destroyed.

‘These people... they’re definitely not normal soldiers or mercenaries...’ Leylin’s pupils narrowed and every muscle on his body stiffened. And yet, the moment he looked at the pathetic Carol beside him, her face full of panic as she nearly fell limp to the floor, he suddenly started running.

“Go!” He shrieked, pulling her along. Using the obstruction from the crowd, he successfully brought her off stage and headed in the

direction of a teaching block.

“Seize her, we don’t need that boy alive!” A person who seemed like the leader of the soldiers commanded. Immediately, Leylin saw many laser guns aimed at him.

“Get down!” He suddenly pressed Carol’s head down, pinning her to the ground.

A dazzling radiance shot out as laser blasts sounded everywhere. When they stopped, the stage behind him had already become flat ground. A broken, burnt arm fell in front of him.

“Leylin!” Carol’s eyes turned white, her fingernails tearing into Leylin’s hand and causing it to bleed.

“I know! Go quickly!” For some unknown reason, Leylin felt very used to such bloody scenes and did not feel the slightest bit of discomfort. He was still able to think calmly in this situation.

‘The opponent’s target is Carol... At a crucial time, if I abandon her it’ll give me the chance to survive!’ He then glanced at Carol, ‘Still, we’re neighbours and lovers after all. I’ll escape with her for a while, but if we’re unable to pull away from the enemy even with our best efforts, I can only give up...’

Although a bad thought stirred in his heart, a determined look emerged in Leylin’s face as he grabbed Carol and ran. At a corner, he glanced at the entrance where many students had gathered in a



crowd, no longer daring to look at the figures in black. It was like they were some sort of monsters.

He caught a glimpse of Serway's eye-catching blonde hair and the small girl beside him.

‘Hmm... Serway and Gail are both there, I can't draw fire to the place...’ Immediately giving up on the entrance where the students were, he brought Carol along as he ran into another crowd.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Large amounts of flesh flew into the sky. With Leylin and Carol drawing the enemy's firepower to this place, these people were instantly met with annihilation.

With the bombardment of laser guns, these students grew more panicked in their frantic running, Under the bombardment of the laser guns, these students ran around in an even more panicky way, making it difficult for the enemy to recognise people.

And with this as a cover, Leylin successfully brought Carol and escaped to the teaching block.

“Stay here! Don't run!” Leylin shoved Carol into the changing room's cabinet as he chose another ventilation duct for himself and crawled in.

‘There's another way out here. I should be able to escape through this duct if Carol gets caught...’ Leylin's eyes glowed from their depths. His relationship with Carol only consisted of fragmented

memories. Although both Serway and Gail said that Carol was his girlfriend, Leylin still felt a strong sense of disconnect. The weight of these ‘feelings’ in his heart had dissipated completely during their escape. Or, put in other words, this relationship was only worth so much to him.

After this, she would have to rely on her own luck. If she faced the fate of being captured, Leylin would not rescue her, as in doubt as he was right now.

Furthermore, the enemy evidently wanted to capture Carol alive and did not care about others’ lives. Leylin would certainly not risk so much for her. Carol would still have a chance of survival after falling into the enemy’s hands, but for him, it would be game over. Thus, he naturally knew his choice.

“Close this place off! I saw them escaping into the building and they never came out!!” A large boom echoed, accompanied by footsteps. They were heavy footsteps, every thud beating right into his heart like the steps of Death itself.

“Search every room. Don’t miss even a single corner” the enemy’s cold voice echoed over again.

Now, Leylin could only smile bitterly and pray. How could he and a small girl outrun such elites? It was only because of the cannon fodder that he’d managed to get here successfully. If he’d left the shelter of the building, he would be a sitting duck.

Moreover, this was a school! With something like this happening,

as long as they waited for a period of time there would definitely be some sort of response from the authorities.

As the seconds ticked by, the rummaging sounds coming from the surroundings echoed out without end, drawing closer and closer to the changing room. It made Leylin feel a little suffocated.

“Dammit! The government is useless in this area, I’ll never vote for them again!” Leylin scolded hatefully.

Right at this moment. the changing room’s door was pushed open violently and numerous footsteps invaded the place violently. The rummaging sounds continued for a moment, followed by a girl’s alarmed cry. Leylin’s heart stopped, knowing that Carol had already been captured by the enemy. His body slowly moved backwards, already prepared to retreat at any time.

“And the other student? Where has he gone to?” A buff man asked.

“I’m not saying!” Carol’s stubborn yet airy voice echoed, but it made Leylin roll his eyes instead. Two crisp slaps sounded in reply to it.

“Not saying instead of not knowing, which means he’s nearby. But we don’t have anymore time! Let’s go!” That hefty man waved his hand, taking Carol out with him.

Through the blinds, Leylin saw a member of the troop throw a

round metal object on the ground as they left, the thing shining with light.

Leylin cursed. “Damn it! A High-explosive magnetic grenade!” His entire body suddenly moved backwards as he began crawling desperately.

A blue glow suddenly swept across behind him, followed by many blazing flames. The sound wave caused even Leylin’s ears and nose to bleed.

A blind was kicked opened with a bang, and Leylin suddenly fell down along with large amounts of dust and rubbish.

“Finally out!” Leylin heaved deep breaths and patted his chest. However, when he looked at the surrounding scene, his expression changed.

Dozens of soldiers in steel armoured were walking over with a girl in tow, their faces growing dazed for a moment when they saw Leylin.

“Brother Leylin, I knew that you’d be back to rescue me!” Carol, who was being escorted by them, began cheering instead.

“I...” Leylin rolled his eyes speechlessly. It was like the saying went: Man proposes, but God disposes.

“We meet again, you rascal. What a lucky life you have!” A man

wearing a steel skeletal mask came out, eyes shining with a vicious red radiance, “Kill him!” The opponent looked at Leylin as if he was looking at a piece of garbage.

The dazed Carol then realised something and immediately began begging, “No! Let Brother Leylin go! I’ll go with you!”

However, she seemed unable to change these men’s attitudes even slightly, and a dazzling white light shot out from a cannon. Leylin’s vision went black.

Suddenly, time seemed to stop at the moment, and a voice echoed out of nowhere, “Between Carol and yourself, who do you choose?” Confusion emerged in Leylin’s eyes.

“Of course I choose...” Leylin glanced at Carol, whose face was frozen in a panicked expression.

“Neither, you idiot!” A hint of calmness appeared in Leylin’s eyes once more, “I finally regained a portion of my memories... Trying to trick me into signing a contract?” The stagnated time shattered apart with a crash, as numerous lasers shot to him once more...

“Fire!” Once again, Leylin read out a word from the ancient Byron language. Only this time, the moment the rune syllable was heard, space itself seemed to be mobilised. A large amount of an unknown energy gathered together, combining to result in an amazing transformation.

# Chapter 623 - Trial And Destruction

---

A Magus created spells by using his spiritual force to draw the energy particles in the air. The current Leylin could cause a mysterious change with just a spoken rune syllable and the injection of spiritual force.

A ball of flames formed in front of Leylin and a huge wall of fire spread out, blocking the white light.

The figures that were armoured in black could only see a huge amount of flames appearing out of thin air to collide with the laser. The teen himself was still safe and sound.

Plop! An armoured man loosened his grip and dropped his laser gun. A peculiar scene such as this was still a first for them despite their years of war experience and the gory training they'd undergone.

“Mutants!” The leader cried.

“Mutants? Is this what your world calls people with mysterious powers?” Leylin laughed and placed his hands behind his back, sizing up his surroundings with a sense of nostalgia. ‘Is this a dream? Or a world generated from my memories? Though there are many similarities to my previous world, there are still quite a few differences...’

“Our target is her, you can leave!” The leader said in a low voice. Being one of the few higher-ups that knew of the existence of

Mutants, how could he not be afraid of Leylin's abilities?

"Scram!" But Leylin only looked at them apathetically as if he was looking at prey.

"You-" The leader's face flushed with anger.

He pulled out a glimmering ring from his waist.

"Magnetic Hybrid Storm No. 2! This is specially created to counter weapons created by Mutants! If you are to leave now, we will treat it as nothing happened."

"Hm, interesting!" The ring disappeared from the leader's hand in an instant and showed up in Leylin's.

"Spatial power? Or high-speed movement?" Cold sweat gathered on the leader's forehead.

"How ignorant and stupid!" Leylin looked at them sympathetically and colour drained from the leader's face.

This was a Mutant who allowed him no chance of resistance and who could snatch the weapon from his hand in seconds. Leylin was definitely someone beyond what he could handle, and it was highly possible for his whole team would die here!

"We have to leave quickly!" The leader shouted as a mini laser

gun appeared in his hand. He aimed several fatal beams at Leylin.

Pew! All the laser rays were blocked by a golden curtain before flames burst forth.

The massive flames illuminated the surroundings with a fiery red glow, the last sight this leader would see before he left the world.

Carol stood rooted to the ground, suddenly realising that the Leylin in front of her was very much different from the Leylin she knew. He seemed a lot more confident and exuded a monstrous aura. Although she thought of things such as power and aura as a joke, she learnt then that there was true power in this world.

Just a mere flash of red light could turn those threatening enemies into ashes. If someone with such power wasn't greater than the rest, who was?

"You are Carol, right?" In front of her stood the person she was familiar with speaking with a voice she was familiar with, but she couldn't help but move back.

"Who are you? Don't come near me! Where is Leylin?" Tears gathered in the girl's eyes. She wanted to leave this person, but an invisible force brought her in front of him.

"Are you the focal point in this world?" Leylin smiled gently at her and began to say things that made her mind spin. "Through the allure of choices presented to me and tricking me into making



decisions through emotions, my truesoul will forever be confined in this makeshift world huh?”

Carol knew the meaning of each individual word Leylin was saying but was confused at their intended meaning.

“Seems like someone’s been targeting me...” Leylin touched his chin, “A.I. Chip, how do I get out?”

[Beep! Host body affected by unknown radiation, truesoul at a loss.]

[Beep! Fog appeared in host’s sea of consciousness, affecting cognitive abilities. Beginning projection of guiding coordinates...]

The A.I. Chip’s reply came instantly this time, accompanied with numerous status updates.

The A.I. Chip was fused with leylin’s very soul. No matter where he went, his truesoul’s survival meant the A.I. Chip’s survival. Enemies stood a chance of intercepting this connection for a short while, but they couldn’t break it.

The A.I. Chip was continuously trying to awaken Leylin’s truesoul. This was also why he was so quick to see through the hazy world so quickly.

“A.I. Chip, begin scan. The target is this entire world.” Leylin commanded.

[Beep! Mission established, scan beginning...]

With the update after his advancement to Radiant Moon, the changes were not merely cosmetic. The Chip’s various functions had been updated as well.

[Scanning 3D structure! Instability detected! Absence of plane curves, concluded as unstable world!]

[Curse detected. Concluded as dream curse.]

The A.I. Chip responded quickly.

“As expected, someone dragged me into a trance with a curse...” Leylin’s face slowly warped as he read through the data.

“In order to break out of this trance, we have to start from the ‘key’ of this world and then neutralise the counterattack!” Leylin came to Carol.

“W-What do you want? Don’t come near me!” Carol moved

backwards in fear, but Leylin maintained his poker face and pointed a finger at her forehead.

Boom! The world shook, and Carol fell down.

Though she had yet to die, Leylin could feel the connection between her and some form of entity weakening.

“Carol is only a shell, the counterattack should be coming soon after I’m done dealing with the ‘key’!” Leylin said, floating in mid-air as the very space vibrated.

“Gail, look! That person over there, he looks like Leylin!” Serway’s jaw dropped.

“It, it really is him! Did he become a superhero?” Gail ruffled her hair and seemed to be a little dizzy. Had her useless brother been pretending all along, hiding a secret life as a superhero? Was he one of those who secretly guarding the world’s peace?

A piercing anti-aircraft alarm sounded, and violet light filled the entire city. A large number of UFOs surrounded the area, armoured men flying out from within. Complex energy circuits flashed from on their armours, that worn by the troops from before complete trash in comparison.

These people with peculiar energy undulations should’ve been the Mutants that the leader of those troops was talking about. They looked pretty advanced.

“UFOs... Is this the extraterrestrial colonisation fleet of the federation? God!” Many students and passersby started screaming on the ground. The few figures in front especially made them feel like they were suffocating just by looking at them.

Delusion and reality, illusion and mystery, things that only existed in conjectures, were all suddenly appearing front of everyone’s eyes, giving them a strong sense of intangibility.

A ray of blue light scanned over Leylin’s body, and the scanned data flashed across the glasses of the person leading the troop. It was like he instantly knew Leylin’s identity.

“Leylin, year 3 student of Innocent Saints High School... How dare you use your powers carelessly in public as a Mutant? Return with us to the headquarters to receive your punishment!”

“Well...” Leylin shook his head and sighed, “Why weren’t you here before when we were being attacked? And now you come over with such speed when everything’s solved? I protest!” The mocking tone in Leylin’s voice caused the person to furrow his brows. He decided to teach a good lesson to the arrogant young man in front of him.

“Who do you think you are? The headquarters only take actions against our own kind; humans are exempted. Prepare to be tried for your crimes!”

The troop leader waved his hand, and two figures ran towards

Leylin.

“Hmm... As expected, weakness is a sin no matter what world you're in.” Leylin sighed, and frenzied energy undulations burst forth from his body.

Whoosh! Huge clouds of smog wrapped around two Mutants. The sound of blood dripping was heard, and when the smog cleared, a few damaged bones and metal components fell down. The two people were nowhere to be seen.

Boom! The glasses of the leader's eyes exploded, the scratches from the shrapnel forming blood red lines across his face. Yet, he didn't seem to care at all, only glaring at Leylin as he muttered in disbelief, “Silvan-ranked! He is a Silvan-ranked Mutant!”

Many of them took a step back, as if realising they'd been surrounding a monster all this while.

Mutant of the Silvan-ranked is the highest of all the levels as of current times. They only existed in rumours, and were strong enough to cause energy probes to blow up!

The thought of going against someone of this standard made many of the troop members shudder.

“If the situation is as such, your Grace, shall we...” The leader clenched his teeth and walked forward, but Leylin did not want to waste any more time on them.

“What a group of clowns. The counter-measures of this world are weak, so weak that I’m disappointed!” A tiny black orb appeared on his finger, and he flicked it forward.

“You lot haven’t seen real strength! The pitch-black orb absorbed all light, causing space itself to collapse.

The terrifying turbulence enveloped all the UFOs and enemies.

# Chapter 624 - Dreamscape Realm

---

Storms and turbulence wreaked havoc in the huge space, wiping out the entire troop within seconds. This terrifying scene rendered all onlookers speechless.

“Leylin is... actually so strong?” Gail looked at Leylin’s back view, a little confused. Large amounts of light started to leak out from the spatial crack, the scene within seeming like an entirely separate galaxy.

“First, it was the key, then it was the counterattack. I have to open up a path for myself next!” Leylin muttered under his breath as a dazzling moon rose up behind him. Space stabilised as the translucent moonlight scattered and revealed a silver pathway.

“Come here!” Before he left, Leylin waved his hand. Gail, who was on the floor, flew to him.

“Brother...” The little lass called out hoarsely before she kept silent, realising that Leylin was not the same person she knew.

“The power of destiny gave us a chance to meet in this world. Although I cannot be sure if this is reality or an illusion, let this be my present to you!” Leylin chuckled lightly, and directed a spot of light into Gail’s forehead before stepping through into the pathway.

Twilight Zone, on top of an altar.

The surface of the black altar was filled with runic circuits full of energy, and Carol was seated at the center. Opposite her was the crystal ball that had collected Leylin's aura, streams of black air circulating around it continuously. Eugene and the other Magus could only watch on.

Suddenly, the crystal ball cracked and the black air dispersed. Carol screamed at the top of her lungs before fainting.

“What happened? The curse backfired?” The leader of the Magi knitted his brows together, and a bright green weapon flashed before going into Carol's body and awakening her.

“What's going on? Didn't you say that your soul body spell has reached the state where you can enter any dreams and fool any Morning Star Magus?” Eugene bellowed.

“We've been had! He's already reached the Radiant Moon realm! The truesoul of a Radiant Moon is not something that a low-levelled dream manipulation could confuse...” Carol looked a little out of focus, “Furthermore, even though I couldn't perceive everything in the dream, I'm sure that Leylin is hiding a huge secret!”

“That's obvious. How could someone who broke through to the Radiant Moon realm have no secrets?” The leader's voice turned icy. “Prepare for battle! He has definitely noticed us!”

Leylin was currently floating in the void, feeling weightless. He'd



been in this state ever since he escaped from that dream world, only seeing a misty fog in front of him. There seemed to be no end to it.

“I can’t let this continue. I need to get back quickly!” Leylin pushed ahead, putting in all his strength. His soul exuded a cooling radiance under which the fog dissipated to reveal a small island.

As he stepped foot onto the island, the steady feel of the ground gave him a sense of security. The place wasn’t too big, at most a thousand metres in diameter. At its centre was a miniature fountain, a few lights moving about in the waters.

Grr! Grr! “Hi there!” On top of a black palm tree, a single-eyed owl greeted Leylin happily.

“Hello, friend! Where am I?” Leylin waved.

[Beep! Scan complete. No life force undulations detected. Heat and radiation levels are at zero.]

The A.I Chip reported in secret.

“This is the gap between Dreamscape and the real world. Hmm... the last time someone visited was 572 years after you, that was a very pretty lass!”

Leylin grew confused by the owl. “Wait... Isn’t this the dream world from the curse? How could someone from the future arrive before me?” he asked.

“Dreamscape is a dimension created by the dreams of all intelligent creatures. It is everywhere, and unfathomable. Time and space are intangible here.”

The owl looked at Leylin, “Your dream is, therefore, a part of Dreamscape!”

“Is it?” Leylin grew suspicious. He had heard about Dreamscape before. Even in the ancient era, it was a place that caused many Magi to tremble. There had even been an invasion from Dreamscape once that caused great harm to the Magus World.

There were a lot of demons in Dreamscape that were not weaker than rank 7 Magi which wielded laws.

Of course, there was a lot of instability in this world. Even the weakest worm could grow into a powerful demon the next day, and the strongest demon could disappear in the next moment.

Due to this characteristic, the invasion of Dreamscape dissipated quickly, but to the Magi of the ancient era, this was a taboo, not to be spoken of.

‘Many Magi from the ancient era have explored Dreamscape. I never thought I’d get this chance as well...’ Leylin touched his

chin, ‘Not mentioning anything else, what would happen if I found the dream world of powerful Magi, or even the dream of the ancient Wisdom Tree or the dream of the Snake Dowager... Wouldn’t it be too strange?’

“Then Sir, how does one return to the real world? And if I wish to come back here afterwards, how can I accomplish that?” Leylin bowed to the owl on top of the tree.

“I like your courtesy, lad!” The owl hooted again and shook its wings. A single grey feather fell into his hand.

Leylin looked at this feather. It was very soft, but the tail region seemed to have a certain sort of power to it.

“It’s easy to leave Dreamscape, all you have to do is wake up. As for coming back, that feather over there might be of some help!

“Now, I need to return, I have a dinner appointment with the past me. Have a nice dream, sir!” As the owl disappeared from his sight, Leylin’s grip around the feather tightened.

“Will it be alright as long as I wake up?” He muttered to himself, looking a little perplexed.

---

Boom! Leylin’s muscles tightened as he felt as if he was falling, and he abruptly sat up.

“Dear, are you okay?” Celine switched on the lights and came over in concern.

“This is... Nature’s Alliance Academy?!” Looking at the familiar yet strange ceiling and the surrounding decorations, Leylin’s pupils dilated and he quickly sobered up.

“Are you alright?” Celine looked worried. After all, for such a powerful Magus to have nightmares was something beyond rare.

“I’m fine!” Leylin raised his right hand, and a grey feather appeared in his left palm.

Leylin muttered under his breath, “Dreamscape! The strangest of planes, an ensemble of conscients in a messed up time and space. One day, I will reveal your secrets. A.I. Chip, show me my previous condition!”

[Beep! Host body facing an unknown disturbance, truesoul weakening.]

Various pieces of data showed that Leylin’s experience just now wasn’t merely superficial.

[Beep! Target coordinates found!]

---

In the last line, Leylin saw a position.

This was the location the A.I. Chip had traced back from the curse.

“It isn’t too far... it looks like this sort of dream curse requires a certain amount of proximity...” Leylin’s face darkened, and he began radiating a murderous aura.

“Whoever you are that spied on me, die!” An explosion sounded out as he turned into a phantom, disappearing from the room. Celine could only look into the space Leylin disappeared to, uncertainty filling her face.

“Quick! The curse has been countered, Leylin will find us!”

Carol seemed to wake up from her trance upon hearing the leader’s reminder.

“What should we be scared of? He’s just a newly advanced Radiant Moon. As long the three of us combine powers, we have nothing to be afraid of!” Eugene said indignantly.

“Eugene makes sense. Prepare for battle.” The leader sighed.

“Leader, why are you—” Carol looked anxious at first, before growing shocked as she glanced at the sky not far away.

A black tornado was whirring with energy as it headed for them in full force.

“It’s not that we’re choosing not to leave. He’s already found us,” the leader said bitterly.

Hss! The person heading towards them at full speed was obviously angered by their provocation. The horrifying phantom of a Kemoyin Serpent Emperor appeared behind his back. Concentrated black gases engulfed everything in their path, sweeping in their direction.

Whoosh! The obstructions on the way, be they stones, mud or anything else, turned into nothing in a split second.

Eugene’s pupils constricted as he stared at the person charging at the with the speed of light. “Is that the Giant Kemoyin Serpent? Why do I feel so repressed? It looks so different from the phantom in the data, and...” his hand trembled, “Why does a newly advanced Radiant Moon have such a powerful aura?”

“All of you! Die!” The phantom behind Leylin devoured everything even as he was shouting.

“Shit! We have to leave!” Sparks of black fire flashed, and it seemed as though the serpent took a big bite of every place Leylin passed, loud snaps echoing again and again.

“This is not the Giant Kemoyin Serpent... It’s their ruler! It’s the Kemoyin Serpent Emperor!” The leader seemed to have thought of something as he exclaimed, “That rumour is actually real!”

# Chapter 625 - Discovery And Battle

---

“Legend?” What legend?” Carol wiped off the blood at the corner of her lips. Her true soul had been injured by the curse in the dream, and she was no longer in the best shape.

“I’ve heard the Monarch mention that Giant Kemoyin Serpent Warlocks carry the bloodline of the Snake Dowager. Although very low, there is a chance of a rank 5 emperor appearing amongst them.” The leader’s voice was very low, and Carol and Eugene could even hear a tremble in it, “And after the appearance of the Kemoyin Emperor, the entire Kemoyin Race will unify under them to regain the glory of the bloodline Warlocks...”

”That’s obviously just a prophecy. Who’s going to believe that?” Eugene pursed his lips in disdain.

”If it were merely another prophecy, nobody would believe it, but what if the person who had made it was the great astrologer, Magus Derrick? And what if I told you he sacrificed his life to do it?” The leader glanced at Eugene.

“Derrick? That legendary Radiant Moon Magus who was the most likely prophet to reach Breaking Dawn?” Carol exclaimed, her eyes now full of fear towards Leylin.

“That’s why, even as we suppressed the bloodline Warlocks, we’ve been paying close attention to the Ouroboros Clan. If we hadn’t been afraid of turbulences of ill destiny appearing, which would cause them to join the dark side, we would long since have



eliminated them...”

This Magus slowly revealed some confidential details.

“So Leylin is the hope of their bloodline?” Carol’s expression turned grim.

“Yes! No matter the cost, Leylin must die today!” The Radiant Moon Magi used their soul force to open a communication channel, and made a decision in practically an instant. It was at this moment that a large black serpent attacked them.

A crimson crescent of an energy blade shot out from the giant serpent phantom’s stomach, heading straight for Carol.

“It’s an attack from a piece of high-grade magic equipment!” Their expressions changed, and Carol quickly retreated, her innate defensive spells flickering into existence. The undulations of energy from middle-grade magic equipment burst forth, fighting against the crimson blades of light.

The crimson blades only dissipated after three pieces of middle-grade magic equipment exploded in quick succession, revealing a Carol who looked deathly pale.

“So you’re the ones plotting against me from the shadows?” The giant phantom serpent coiled up, and the devilishly handsome face of a magus was revealed as Leylin stared at these three Magi coldly.

Just the sweep of his gaze caused these three Radiant Moon Magi to feel their scalps go numb, as if they were being watched by some terrifying unmatched being.

Indeed, the opponent had a very handsome face. Even if she'd videos and acquired information about him before, Carol had to admit that a high-ranked Warlock like Leylin was someone who female Magi would go crazy over.

This unwitting charm he was giving off was very similar to a high-grade illusory attack.

“Who are you?” Leylin watched the three Magi, the gears in his mind turning.

His greatest enemy in the central continent, Jupiter's Lightning, only had one Radiant Moon Magus in Zegna. However, none of these three was weaker than Zegna, and were total strangers to him.

‘Could they be from the Monarch of the Skies? Or is it someone else afraid of my development?’ Thoughts flashed quickly past Leylin's mind. At this moment, the A.I. Chip had transmitted to his mind all the information it had gleaned.

‘Two peak New Moons as well as a Full Moon Magus! If it were the past me, I wouldn't be able to kill them even if I used Sun

Scorching Nirvana...' These three Radiant Moon Magi were obviously here to kill him, and Leylin's guard immediately went up.

"Who exactly are you?" He spoke slowly while the A.I. Chip scanned their auras and undulations in detail. There were only a few Radiant Moons in the central continents. He could search them up in the future, and he would eventually find out where they were from.

Currently, Leylin only needed to vent the fury in his heart! It had to be said, that dream curse they'd used on him had enraged him to no end.

The leader of the Magi watched Leylin, his eyes first flickering with terror but then glowing with a staunch resolve. "Leylin Farlier... So you were able to break through the bloodline shackles of the Giant Kemoyin Serpent and reach rank 5! You're the most powerful bloodline genius I've ever seen, but it's a pity that no matter how talented you are, you have to die here today!"

"Radiant Moon spell formation, three souls in one!" The bright figure of a full moon appeared behind the leader's back, and Full Moon soul force burst forth, bringing with it a piercing chill.

Eugene and Carol stepped into formation behind him, each of them at the three corners of a triangle with this leader at the head. The soul force from their truesouls merged as well. Three cold radiant souls unified, appearing in front of Leylin like lightning.

“A competition between truesouls?” The giant Kemoyin Serpent Emperor roared, and crimson runes began to spread across Leylin’s body.

Even after reaching Radiant Moon and becoming a rank 5 Warlock, his truesoul was still weak in comparison to the combined truesouls of his opponents. With their spell formation, they’d suppressed his to the maximum, to the point that even his domain was weakening.

“Though my soul force has been stimulated by my bloodline to reach the peak of New Moon, it’s too strenuous to fight three Magi at the same rank, let alone one with power at Full Moon...” Leylin’s brows furrowed, the image of a truesoul similarly appearing behind him and soul force at rank 5 being released. Cold moonlight that brought with it a terrifying soul force competed with theirs.

The danger of such a battle was far greater than one of the spells. Just a slight misstep could push any of them to a point of no return.

The void was still, with no sound being emitted. A formless

ripple was quickly spreading in all directions, and all beings in range of this battle between soul force, ordinary or otherwise, collapsed without a sound. This even included rank 3 beings. Terrifying soul undulations even spread as far as Nature's Alliance Academy, and even with the defensive formations Leylin had set up before there were massive casualties.

Pu! Leylin abruptly staggered back as his blood flowed down from his eyes. In the battle between soul force, he had clearly been on the losing end.

However, the Radiant Moon Magi weren't faring very well either, the huge loss of soul force causing their faces to turn pale.

"He's already reached peak New Moon?" The leader stared at Leylin in disbelief.

He knew full well how difficult it was for Radiant Moon Magi to advance, and the opponent was a newly-advanced Warlock. In such a short period of time, he had pushed his soul force to peak New Moon, and that was a huge shock for him.

Traces of jealousy began to form in the depths of his heart, even, nibbling at his spirit like a toxic serpent.

"Admit defeat! You're not our match when it comes to soul force. Injuries to soul force will reflect on your body, there's no way out for you!" The Magus Leader watched Leylin, whose blood was seeping from his skin, and hummed coldly.

“Is that so?” Leylin sneered instead, giving his opponent a bad omen.

“Devour!” The tremendous and elegant Kemoyin Serpent Emperor figure appeared behind him, widening its huge mouth towards the three Radiant Moon Magi.

A terrifying black hole was produced, causing everything within range, even light and space, to be sucked in. The powerful attractive force gave rise to a horrifying energy storm.

Rumble! In an instant, the ground under the three Radiant Moon Magi turned nothing as an unending stream of life force flowed to all parts of Leylin’s body, allowing his wounds to heal quickly.

With the Devouring innate skill, he was practically immortal, and could even mend his true soul using his body. No matter how grievous the injury, he could recover quickly. In a battle between Magi, this was completely like a cheat move.

Pu! The opponents cooperated to deal another blow, soul blades carving out a huge wound on Leylin’s chest. However, large amounts of life force were channelled instantly once more, and blood and flesh regenerated. In the blink of an eye, he had recovered.

Leylin exchanged blows like a lunatic, injury for another injury, crimson energy blades flying everywhere and causing the three Magi to find it difficult to keep up. This was especially so for the frail Carol. Due to the backlash from before, she was now on the

verge of collapsing.

“This isn’t working. His regenerative ability is just too terrifying!” The leader of the Magi felt a chill in his heart. They had to fend against not just Leylin’s attacks, but also the devouring force of the black hole. Leylin was contending with them with no qualms whatsoever, and he was finding this precarious situation difficult to manage.

“The opponent evidently regains life force through devouring matter. Let’s go into a spatial rift. There shouldn’t be much for him to absorb there!” His eyes flickered as he found the way to get around this devouring ability, its weakness.

If he were in a void, Leylin’s devouring ability would definitely be affected. While he could devour space, the efficiency would definitely decrease, and the amount of life energy generated would be lessened.

“Trying to leave?” Crimson light flashed in Leylin’s eyes.

Hss hss! The terrifying amber slits of the Kemoyin Serpent Emperor’s eyes fixed onto the weakest member, Carol.

A layer of ash-white stone began to emerge on her body.

Boom! Boom! Leylin let the opponents’ attacks land on his back, scales and flesh flying as he charged into the centre of their spell formation. Numerous black shadow claws appeared and forcefully

grabbed Carol.



# Chapter 626 - Rank 5 Snake Transformation

---

Light burst forth as the spell formation that combined the power of three souls was broken through.

“Let’s go!” Eugene and the leader grasped this opportunity and, quickly pulled Leylin into the spatial crack.

The tremendous snarling figure of the giant serpent was still devouring the dust and space all around it, but the life energy being generated was obviously reduced. It was obvious at the slowed recovery of the injury on Leylin’s back.

“Carol!” At this moment, the opponents were gazing at Carol, who was in Leylin’s control, and a trace of despair appeared on their expressions.

Under the gaze of the Eye of Petrification, the female Magus had turned into a limestone statue. Though there was a layer of soul energy resisting the corrosion from the petrification, Leylin currently possessed a Serpent Emperor’s eyes, and the damage his innate spell could cause had risen greatly. Even Radiant Moon Magi would not be immune to such an attack.

“Carol? She’s the Magus who brought me into that dream? Very well!” Leylin lifted the statue, the Scarlet Earring emanating dazzling rays of light.

“What are you going to do? If you dare to attack Carol, our King won’t let you off!” Eugene exclaimed.

“Hehe... At this stage, there’s no need to discuss anything about letting people off. Don’t treat me like a child. Trying to deceive me like this is an insult to my intelligence!” Leylin’s voice was light, but his tone was ice-cold.

“What I want you to know now is the price of provoking me! Whoever you or your backers are, you will all perish!”

Ka-cha! Ka-cha! Numerous fine rays of light streaked past, and the stone statue that was Carol burst into smithereens.

In that moment, Eugene and the leader were caught in a daze. They had never expected Leylin to be so powerful, and for him to be so merciless.

“You dare— you dare— “ The Magus leader trembled, evidently completely infuriated.

“Did you think that’s all I would do?” Leylin suddenly snickered as he commanded in his mind, ‘A.I. Chip!’

[Beep! Recorded opponent’s soul undulations. Beginning search for corresponding coordinates!]

There were many methods to save one’s life in the Magus World, clones being a popular one. This was especially true for Magi at

Morning Star and above, all of whom had ways to prevent their fall.

Carol naturally had a few Morning Star ranked clones, considered to be a last insurance, but she was facing a Radiant Moon Warlock! His truesoul had already matured, and he had the ability to take care of all of his opponent's clones.

Eugene and the other Magus, their leader, saw the truesoul image on Leylin's back that was like a clear crescent moon turn blood-red.

A terrifying giant claw followed the path that Carol's truesoul had taken after her fall and disappeared into the void, seeming to arrive at some area.

A strange energy undulation was transmitted, and Eugene and the other's expressions changed.

"The astral plane! The astral plane opened up to receive her truesoul! Was there really an issue in Carol's transfer to her clone?" They could not help but gaze at Leylin with fear in their eyes.

Boom! Boom! In the central continent, at almost the very instant the giant claw had appeared, a Morning Star clone of Carol's collapsed onto the ground, eyes blank and void of any aura of life.

Meanwhile, a spell rune emitting green light mysteriously broke

in Carol's Magus Tower, and the spirit genie's voice rang out with ear-piercing warnings, "Suffered unknown attack. Reserve clone has fallen!"

"Magi only have one truesoul. Regardless of how many clones there are, all life-preserving methods are useless once the truesoul is damaged or sent into the astral universe..." Of course, the transfer of truesoul was a speedy process. Most Radiant Moon Magi seldom succeeded in killing others even with their soul force. However, given the help of the A.I. Chip, Leylin did not find such a thing difficult.

A notification wave flashed, and the leader stared at Leylin blankly. "News from headquarters. Carol's clones and the spirit of the life regeneration pool have all fallen!"

When Carol was being killed by Leylin, the fury he had displayed in fact only half true, as he did not believe Leylin could do it. Now, however, seeing that Leylin had actually completely wiped out a similarly ranked Radiant Moon Magus, dread arose within his heart.

"You won't be able to leave today!" In the spatial rift, surrounded by boundless starry rivers, Leylin had his hands behind his back, looking confident.

"Arcane Art— Kemoyin Serpent Transformation!"

Hss... A terrifying ancient might descended, and the two Radiant Magi had to retreat. A gigantic serpent that was over a hundred

thousand metres long appeared, every scale on its body looking very vivid. The intelligence in its eyes made it seem grand and noble.

Compared to the previous Giant Kemoyin Serpent, Leylin had currently turned into a real rank 5 being. He was now the ruler of all Giant Kemoyin Serpents, the Kemoyin Serpent Emperor!

With the serpent's gaze fixed on them, Eugene and the leading Magus started sweating bullets.

The power of an ancient rank 5 existence far exceeded what most Radiant Moons could bring forth. A being like this, a ruler, possessed even more power, taking on the role of a predator.

“We’re going all out!” The leader and Eugene exchanged a glance, looks of determination rising in their eyes.

Dazzling light converged at their bodies, and a terrifying and tremendous might burst forth.

“Ancient rank 5 Arcane Art— Seal of the Abyss!”

“Ancient rank 5 Arcane Art— Spatial Grave!”

With the push from their soul force, the two Radiant Moons each had five innate spells fusing as a tremendous arcane art was used by their hand, surging towards the Kemoyin Serpent Emperor.

“Eye of Petrification! Toxic Bile!” Terrifying rays of petrifying light shot out of the Kemoyin Serpent Emperor’s eyes into the opposing black stream. A large amount of black gas fell as it turned to stone, but was shortly after replaced with more.

A large brass seal charged out from within that abyss even as, under the other Magus’ directions, silver spatial turbulence converged to form an even more horrifying spatial storm that swept up the Kemoyin Serpent Emperor.

“Hss...” The Kemoyin Serpent Emperor thundered, petrifying rays striking the gigantic seal. It instantly froze up, and with a swipe of the Emperor’s tail, the entire abyss crumbled as the large brass seal vanished.

The spatial storm caught up while Leylin was focussed on dealing with the seal. The silver storm wreaked havoc, and piece by piece the Kemoyin Serpent Emperor’s scales fell off, revealing fresh, bloody wounds.

“Devour!” The Kemoyin Serpent Emperor opened its mouth while facing the spatial turbulence, and a terrifying black hole appeared.

Large amounts of this silver spatial turbulence were unexpectedly swallowed, transformed rapidly into life energy that allowed the wounds on its body to heal.

“He can even devour spatial storms. He’s a monster, a monster!”

Personally seeing even rank 5 arcane arts dealing negligible damage against Leylin, the two Magi immediately sunk into depression.

They exchanged a glance, making plans to escape. However, how could Leylin give them another chance like that? In practically the blink of an eye, the Kemoyin Serpent Emperor swept through the region, submerging the figures of Eugene and the leader...

In the spatial crack that was like a universe of its own, the tremendous Giant Kemoyin Serpent snarled. Beside it, two bundles of various-coloured rays gradually grew dimmer, on the verge of disappearing.

At this moment, the bundle that was the more radiant of the two suddenly shattered, revealing the figure of a man who was gravely injured. He glared poisonously at the Kemoyin Serpent Emperor, and no longer daring to dawdle turning into a multi-coloured streak as he left.

A voice full of unwillingness resounded behind him, "You actually abandoned me!" Eugene yelled furiously. However, the bundle of light that represented the strength of his own life dimmed even further, and then finally disappeared.

When the last trace of light dissipated, the Kemoyin Serpent Emperor's body turned into black gas that condensed to form Leylin's actual body once more.

He stood in front of Eugene who no longer had any aura of life,

eyes emitting blue light.

[Opponent's appearance and undulations have been recorded!]

The A.I. Chip loyally intoned.

“Though one ran away, such a result isn’t half bad!” Leylin muttered as he nodded. This time, not only had he killed two Radiant Moons, he had also caused a Full Moon Magus to flee, seriously injured. Even a Breaking Dawn Monarch would feel heartbroken about such a thing for a long while.

It could be said that this was a critical counterattack on his part towards the opposing organisation they were a part of!

Furthermore, once news of him reaching Radiant Moon spread, the stream of Magi who wanted to eliminate him as soon as possible should halt for a while.

Of course, if they decided to proceed further, those coming after him wouldn’t be mere Radiant Moons.

At this point, boundless light filled the void. The astral plane opened up, and traces of starlight moved to take Eugene’s corpse.

The blue light in Leylin’s eyes grew even more pronounced. After



Eugene's body was brought into the astral world, Leylin could vaguely see that the ash-brown rocks that had gathered around Eugene's body had turned him into a bare isle.

The isle seemed extremely sturdy but looked barren as it became to float in the astral plane.

In the limitless void behind it were so, so many barren isles like this one...

“After Morning Star Magi die, their point mass will return to the astral universe. If Radiant Moon Magi fall and if the corpse isn't damaged, it'll turn into a barren isle?” Fear suddenly arose in Leylin's heart.

How many Radiant Moons had fallen in history? Someday in the future, would he turn into an isolated island like that?

“Even so, I must pursue eternal life! If I die while pursuing my dreams, I'll die with no regrets. I would have lived a marvellous life!” Leylin's eyes emitted a boundless spirit.

# Chapter 627 - Shift And Prophecy

---

In the air above a region of Twilight Zone, countless distortions combined to form a spatial channel. Leylin, dressed in loose black robes, stepped out from the passageway.

The battle between rank 5s had resulted in extensive damage even within a spatial crack. Had it been fought in Twilight Zone, perhaps most of it would have been destroyed.

Even so, just the probing attacks from before had led to devastating harm to the land. Even if the affected area was not huge, the radiation and curses that remained would constantly corrode the land, even spreading out further.

In a worse case scenario, there might be the creation of malicious Conscients or attracting different World's Wills to descend here.

Whatever may happen, it would result in nothing good for Twilight Zone.

“A battle amongst Radiant Moons is far too destructive. It's not just the direct damage, but the indirect pollution as well...” Leylin watched the land that was in a terrible state and frowned, “If a Magus were to do this in the central continent, they would become a public enemy...”

Even the A.I. Chip had no quick methods to heal the land from such destructive damage, only waiting for nature to take its course or, at most, conducting some slow, suitable treatment.

Leylin's gaze suddenly turned to another region in the sky. "Now, onto the other guest who's been watching for a long time. Aren't you coming out to meet me?"

Not only could he sense the soul of a Radiant Moon in that direction, there was also the aura of a bloodline. Though it wasn't that of the Giant Kemoyin Serpent's, the person there was a sort of Warlock.

"Hehe... Your Highness has discovered me!" Crimson light flashed, and a large blood-red bat emerged from that direction. On its abdomen was a young face.

The human face on the abdomen of the bat laughed as it spoke, "Your Highness! The last time we met was when you first explored the Morning Star area. I never expected you to catch up to us old things so quickly!"

After an attempt, Leylin quickly identified this person, "Such familiar undulations... You're the protector of the Morning Star area!"

This was the conscient he'd interacted with when he'd entered the Morning Star area. He had long since gotten the A.I. Chip to record the aura of this rank 5 existence, there was no way he could be wrong.

The crimson bat chuckled. "Yes, I'm Jeffrey! I was afraid that they would harm Your Highness, but it looked like my worries

were for naught...”

“Whatever it is, I’m still thankful for your help. How should I address you, Your Highness?” Leylin bowed slightly, and a look of puzzlement appeared on his expression.

“Our Warlock Union uses the same feudal system as your Ouroboros Clan. Rank 4s are Dukes, and rank 5 Warlocks are addressed ‘Your Highness’, we’re basically Archdukes,” the blood-red bat explained.

Leylin nodded. “I see! Well then, what business do you have coming here, as a fellow Archduke?”

“Oh yes! I hereby extend a solemn invitation to Your Highness Leylin. We hope you’ll come to the bloodline Warlocks’ final fort—the Morning Star area!” The human face on the bat’s abdomen looked serious.

Leylin agreed, “Indeed, I should go there. There seem to be some big problems between the Warlocks and Magi in the central continent.”

In actuality, Leylin was feeling somewhat annoyed. Initially, the only mortal enemy that he had provoked was Jupiter’s Lightning. Though the organisation of Sky City was hostile towards him, they wouldn’t go so far as to send people to hunt him down and kill him. Hence, after attaining rank 5 and taking care of Zegna, he was supposed to be able to do as he wished in this place.

However, reality dealt Leylin a huge blow. The appearance of Carol and the others indicated that there was another organisation that stood against Warlocks, and even took up the task of hunting down and eliminating Warlocks as their mission in life.

As the most dazzling of bloodline Warlocks with a meteoric rise, Leylin had unfortunately become their target.

‘Luckily, I’ve already reached rank 5. With the bonus from the Kemoyin Emperor and the aid from the A.I. Chip, I’ll still be able to escape even if I were to face a Breaking Dawn Magus. That’s enough...’ A cold glint flickered in Leylin’s eyes. This sneak attack against him had thoroughly irked him.

‘I don’t care who you are and how large your organisation is. Even if you have a Breaking Dawn Monarch backing you, there will come a day that I, Leylin Farlier, will completely erase you from the central continent. I swear on it!’

---

Leylin was a very clear-cut person. He had little holding him back in Twilight Zone, and after sending Celine a simple message and mentioning what had happened he immediately followed Jeffrey out and into the Morning Star area.

Standing within the Morning Star area that had congealed, Leylin felt extremely emotional as he watched the shattered universe and gigantic stars within the space.

Though he'd visited this place numerous times with his soul force, this was the first time he'd entered the place with his real body. Sending his soul force out, the auras of the many bloodline Warlocks in the surroundings put Leylin's mind and body at ease.

"Your Highness, Leylin. It's nice to meet you again. Or should I say it's nice to meet you again? I'm so happy that you're joining us, our Warlock Union's might has risen once again!" A Warlock with the same face as that on the abdomen of the bat emerged beside Leylin, his long crimson hair untied, flying in the air.

"Your Highness, Jeffrey!" It was obvious that this young man was a rank 5 Warlock. This was the main body of the Morning Star area's protector, Jeffrey.

"Alright. I know you have many questions, but they'll be answered once we reach headquarters." Jeffrey enthusiastically brought Leylin all the way to the Warlocks' headquarters in the Morning Star area.

In a gigantic receiving room, Leylin saw two other rank 5 Warlocks. One had a completely golden body, seemingly able to be likened to a god of battle. He was very familiar with this person—rank 5 Warlock, Golden Lion Wayde. He'd had quite a few transactions with him before.

"Come, let me introduce you. You already know Wayde, the person beside him is Offa," Jeffrey smiled as he pointed to the Warlock beside Wayde.

Leylin took the initiative and bowed, “Your Highnesses!”

“Leylin Farlier! Once a Kemoyin Duke and now an Archduke. We’ve talked through imprints many times, but this is the first time we’re meeting face to face!” Wayne’s smile seemed to be bathed in sunshine, his body emanating a charismatic aura.

“Your Highness is truly a talent. With you joining us, I can be at ease... Cough Cough” Offa who was beside Wayne was like an old man approaching death, his aura full of decay. It seemed like he was but a step from the grave, and yet Leylin wouldn’t dare belittle him.

From this coughing old man’s body, he could feel soul force at the peak of Radiant Moon!

“Based on the previous rumours, the arrival of a few rank 5 Warlocks deterred the Breaking Dawn Monarchs from attacking, thus preserving the inheritance of Warlocks. If my guesses aren’t wrong, Warlock Offa is one of them...”

“Alright, let’s sit! What is it, are you astonished to see there being three rank 5 Warlocks in the Morning Star area?” Jeffrey laughed as he got Leylin and Wayne to sit, beaming as he got the robot servant to serve refreshments.

“A little!” Leylin nodded in admittance. From both his own perception as well as the scanning of the A.I. Chip, these three Warlocks were here in their main bodies.

This meant the ones who were active in the Magus World were merely their clones. At this stage, Leylin knew just how much Warlocks were feared.

“We’re trapped here due to the suppression of the central continent’s Magi. We need to be on our guards against the Blazing Flame Monarch,” Jeffrey said solemnly.

“Blazing Flame Monarch? The Breaking Dawn Magus?” Leylin immediately recalled the Fiery World that he’d found when probing through the astral plane before ruthlessly being expelled by the organisation of the Blazing Flame Monarch.

“Yes. The other party has a terrible attitude, and even wants to attack us...”

Leylin touched his chin, “Then, are there other organisations in the central continent that are on good terms with us Warlocks?”

“No... Basically, all Magi are worried about our rise, and there are people who are just waiting to watch us run out of luck. Still, there’s only one organisation who’ve been attacking us brazenly, hoping to completely exterminate us, and it’s that of the Blazing Flame Monarch.”

Jeffrey and Wayde exchanged a glance before Offa spoke. “I can tell you this: those that attacked you, Carol, Eugene, and the rest, were subordinates of the Blazing Flame Monarch...”



“At the beginning, it was also this Blazing Flame Monarch who wanted to end the inheritances of us Warlocks. If not for Offa and the other elders advancing in time and transforming the Morning Star area into a gigantic battle fort, we Warlocks would probably have gone extinct due to him...” Wayde spoke in a low voice.

“Battle fort?” Leylin thought of something else. ‘Transforming a small world into a gigantic weapon in war to be manipulated by three rank 5 Warlocks is something to be feared, even by Breaking Dawn Magi...’

“Well then, do you know why the Blazing Flame Monarch is hell bent on killing us?” Leylin asked gloomily.

“It could be because of some conflicts of interest and some old grudges...” Jeffrey didn’t seem quite sure about this either. “Our intelligence officers have also discovered an interesting prophecy...”

# Chapter 628 - Clone Creation

---

“What prophecy?” Leylin’s spirits were lifted.

“In this century, before the waves of extreme weather returns, the King of Bloodlines shall rise in splendour, crushing all the other thrones in the central continent!” Jeffrey’s body began to tremble with excitement.

“A Monarch of bloodline Warlocks?” Leylin shook his head, “How could there be something so easy?”

Wayde’s expression turned a little gloomy. “However, once a rank 6 Warlock does appear, they will surely exceed Breaking Dawn Magi in strength. Perhaps the Blazing Flame Monarch intended to nip the danger in the bud. This is also why the other Monarchs in the central continent are supporting it.”

“That certainly makes sense as well!” Leylin stroked his chin.

“And there are only a few candidates left that may fulfill the prophecy, one of them being Your Highness Leylin. Hence, for your safety and considering the futures of us Warlocks, we request that Your Highness stays in the Morning Star area as much as possible. Even if you wish to go out, please use some sort of clone...” Jeffrey said sincerely.

“Why? Do you think I can advance to the Breaking Dawn realm?” Leylin’s heart stirred but his facial expression was that of stupefaction, “Even if my bloodline evolved to become that of a

Kemoyin Emperor, I am still limited to rank 5!”

“Of course, we are aware of the difficulty of bloodline shackles, but even a rank 5 Kemoyin Emperor will be one of our greatest military strengths...” Wayde pointed out meaningfully.

‘This attitude... could it be that they really found a bloodline Warlock that can advance to rank 6?’ Seeing Wayde’s attitude, Leylin already had some ideas in his heart.

“I’m naturally bound to do my duty for the Warlock Union. But there’s one problem. I still have to resolve the grudge between Jupiter’s Lightning and my Ouroboros Clan...” Leylin’s expression showed a hint of hesitation.

“There’s no need for Your Highness to worry about that. Regarding this, there’s no need for Your Highness to worry at all. According to our intelligence, the chief of Jupiter’s Lightning, Night Phantom Zegna, is already dead...”

Jeffrey sneaked a glance at Offa, before he made the report to Leylin.

“What? Zegna has fallen?” This news immediately caused Leylin’s eyes to widen into full circles. He’d never expected that this enemy who’d caused him such tremendous stress before would just die so quietly.

Although he was confident in killing the man on the spot with his

current strength, his opponent meeting an end still left Leylin depressed. It was like he'd punched out with all his might just to hit cotton.

“How did he die?” Morning Stars normally had lifespans of over a thousand years, and Radiant Moons usually lived to several thousand years old.

Given how young Zegna was, his death was definitely not due to old age.

“We don't have any news about that, sadly. But we did receive information that Jupiter's Lightning was taken over by a female Radiant Moon Magus after Zegna's death. On top of that, they announced the end of all current diplomatic and military movements. This means your Ouroboros Clan's emergency has been solved...”

“Female Radiant Moon Magus?” For some unknown reason, Leylin immediately thought of the power hiding behind Zegna.

During their previous fights, he had faintly sensed that Zegna certainly had assistance from a Magus who was more knowledgeable than him. This turn of events led to his instincts saying so even more

‘Was it really an accidental death, or was it man-made?’ Leylin's pupils twinkled in a myriad of colours.

“As for the two Dukes, your wife, and any others, we can totally arrange for them to stay here to ensure their safety!” Wayne guaranteed, seemingly worried that Leylin still had other considerations.

“Thank you so much Your Highness, but let’s wait until I finish everything on hand before visiting Freya and the others.” Leylin nodded in gratitude. He’d had some suspicions and concerns about the Warlock headquarters at this Morning Star area, but now it just seemed like they really wanted to protect a promising bloodline.

Although most of his suspicions had been eliminated, Leylin would still run his own inspections before he’d make a decision.

Leylin now more or less understood the peak military strength of the Warlock Union. The Morning Star area was their base camp, and of the executives among them, Jeffrey, Wayde, and Offa were all here. There was only one mysterious rank 5 Warlock hiding in the outside world, the last card in their hands.

It could be said that the current Leylin was already at the peak of bloodline Warlocks, one of their five magnates. His position in this Morning Star area could no longer be described as just respected. He instead was a partial ruler!

He’d even gotten access to some of the union’s resources, and the first thing he did was to enrich the A.I. Chip’s database with even more information.

---

Morning Star area, in a castle specially built for Leylin.

A few months had passed by in a flash. Now, Freya was putting the books in her hands down and stretched, caressing her stomach. Her face was brimming with joy and love.

Passing through an astral gate, the two Kemoyin Dukes and Freya had seen Leylin in the Morning Star area. She couldn't believe that her husband had advanced to rank 5, even upgrading his bloodline to that of the terrifying Kemoyin Emperor.

Rank 5! This was a painful topic for all Kemoyin Warlocks, but now the bloodline of the Kemoyin Emperor was already growing in her womb.

“Kemoyin Emperor, the ruler of all Kemoyin Warlocks...” Freya mumbled with blurred vision as her eyes brimmed with joy.

This was the right and proper ruling bloodline, one that had a guarantee of being able to advance to rank 5! Freya had a premonition that the Farlier Family would become the royalty of the Ouroboros Clan. All of the female Kemoyin warlocks would go crazy in order to obtain Leylin's bloodline, even resorting to unscrupulous ways!

“With the injection of a rank 5 bloodline also has so many benefits for my Blood Serpent Family. Forget falling, our bloodline will definitely rise in rank now!” Thinking about how she'd successfully gained hold of these things that she wouldn't have

even been able to beg for before, Freya was filled with rejoicement.

And with that admiration came a further increase in her admiration and trust towards her husband... Thinking up to this point, Freya couldn't help but tilt her head to look in another direction.

Outside the translucent glass, not far away from the master bedroom was a large laboratory for experiments on the astral plane as well as a breeding room for bloodlines. The two buildings stood tall like large monsters, even engulfing all the light in their surroundings as they made one feel stifled.

Inside the bloodline experimentation lab, Leylin was looking at a body in the breeding pool, a thoughtful expression emerging on his face.

[Constructing the clone's body! Estimated to be a perfect body of a Morning Star!]

The A.I. Chip's scans and prompts were transmitted continuously.

Leylin was currently trying to create a clone of himself. Generally speaking, such a clone would be a rank below that of the Magi who created it. In order to obtain a clone of a same rank as the main body like Wayde's, one required not only time and large amounts of resources, but a certain amount of luck as well.

“Beginning copying of soul imprint!” Two bright beams of light shot out of Leylin’s eyes and into the clone’s...

Half an hour later, the clone’s eyelids suddenly raised, its eyes containing a slight vigour. Energy undulations at the peak of Morning Star began to spread out.

“Based on the Heavenly Astrals’ blueprint and flesh that has been added to my own body, this clone’s battle prowess pretty decent in the Morning Star level!”

Leylin nodded in satisfaction. Truth be told, such a clone wasn’t very useful. Although they worked when dealing with weak enemies, they were only bugs in front of Radiant Moons.

However, its advantage lay in its simple structure. This type of clone was good cannon fodder that could handle some unimportant matters.

[Based on the main body’s spiritual conditions, at most three imprints can be maintained at once!]

the A.I. Chip’s voice echoed once more.

“In other words, under normal circumstances, I can at most maintain 3 Morning Star ranked clones?” Leylin stroked his chin.



He had a certain understanding towards the situation with this kind of clone.

Because truesouls were inseparable, many Magi had clones like this that only possessed a spiritual imprint. Its death would not have much impact on the main body, but on the main body's death, the truesoul could shift into the clone and successfully revive itself.

Still, this process had its dangers as well. For instance, Leylin had taken a Radiant Moon Magus' clones out with them, causing a thorough death by killing the truesoul itself.

'This kind of method is not very safe... Legends talk of a way during ancient times to break up one's truesoul. A clone formed in that way unifies both sides, but they don't necessarily affect one another. Even if one dies, the other can live on without a hitch. That is true cloning...' Leylin thought of some confidential information he'd acquired before.

'Only, because one is breaking up their truesoul, such a cloning may result in different personalities because of the different environments and experiences. There could even be a situation wherein the clones turn against each other and become enemies. That's too dangerous...'

The technique he was using currently was like that of creating a photocopied substitute. Although it would not have any special abilities, it was better in terms of stability and safety. Of course, another reason for Leylin choosing this method was simply that he had no desire to break up his truesoul.

All such cloning required was a great amount of material resources and a piece of memory he could duplicate by using the A.I. Chip. It could be considered a bargain.

Thinking of this, Leylin could not help but take a look at his own status.

[Leylin Farlier rank 5 bloodline: Kemoyin Serpent Emperor (Complete body), Strength: 76, Agility: 62, Vitality: 138.9, Spiritual force: 1329.7, Magic power: 1329 (Magic power is in synchronisation with spiritual force) Soul Force: 133 (New Moon)]

# Chapter 629 - City And Meeting

---

“There’s a significant increase in all my statistics... The rank 5 Kemoyin Emperor bloodline is truly terrifying!” Leylin let loose a sigh of satisfaction at the sight of his status.

The Giant Kemoyin Serpent bloodline originally provided additional bloodline power to a Warlock, and once it evolved this support only grew greater in magnitude.

Leylin could feel this royal bloodline changing his body with every breath, breaking even into his truesoul and colouring it a slight red. His soul force was constantly being strengthened.

‘Although this Kemoyin Emperor bloodline helped me achieve rank 5, even to be considered strong amongst Radiant Moons, it isn’t without its consequences...’ Leylin could not help but think of the feeling he had when he was being spied upon at that time. The Snake Dowager’s attention from the Purgatory World had left him nervous and uneasy to this day. He could not help but put in extra effort into improving his strength.

He had a premonition that the moment he chose to fight the Snake Dowager, even betray her, the bloodline in his body would lead to an unpredictable end.

Leylin could not help but recall the situation when he met the two Kemoyin Dukes. As he’d already advanced to Radiant Moon himself and even awakened the Kemoyin Emperor’s bloodline, he’d felt like he could completely bypass their willpower and give

them any commands he wished. They would likely carry out his orders even if he told them to die.

As for Freya? She'd already fallen completely into his control, from her body to her spirit. This feeling of controlling everything about another person really had Leylin somewhat intoxicated.

Everything naturally came from the Kemoyin Emperor's innate skill of control. However, this had also given Leylin an idea of the type of control the Snake Dowager would have over serpents.

If, by any chance, there was conflict between them, Leylin didn't have any confidence in himself...

The laboratory door opened with a bang and Freya stood up with a pleasant surprise, "Leylin! Is the experiment proceeding smoothly?"

Shortly after, she sharply noticed that this 'Leylin' was a little different from usual. After being in a daze for a while, Freya then pursed her lips in astonishment, "You... Your body's aura, why has it fallen back to Morning Star?"

"Very smoothly!" 'Leylin' smiled. Behind him, another Leylin with a deeper aura walked out, "Even you didn't notice the anomaly at first. It seems like the spiritual imprint was also very successful!"

"This is your Morning Star clone?" Freya looked at the Leylin

who came out first and her eyes sparkled.

“Yes! Although my main body will remain in the Morning Star area, there are still matters that I have to resolve in the outside world!” The Morning Star clone nodded before turning around and walking out.

In its stead, the real Leylin walked up, looking at Freya’s slightly bulging stomach with a smile. Through the bloodline’s reaction and the ability of the Kemoyin Emperor, he could clearly sense a tiny life growing sturdily in there.

It wasn’t just the child. Freya was growing as well, although in another sense. Her strength had skyrocketed from one who’d just stepped into the Crystal Phase, and at some point, she’d unknowingly broken through to the limits of rank 3. With how her bloodline was constantly being purified, there was a chance she’d break through to Morning Star!

All of this was, of course, due to Leylin’s imperceptible influence. The two dukes hadn’t gained much, but with Freya, there was an obvious increase in power.

“Scary! Is this also the ability of the royal bloodline? Subtly influencing and transforming one’s own kind, evolving them to become more powerful...”

‘The power of a royal bloodline is truly frightening... To subtly influence and transform one’s kin, evolving them into a more powerful state...’ Leylin’s pupils sparkled. He had finally

experienced the true terror of a royal bloodline. Not only could it amplify his individual military might, but it could also upgrade his entire clan!

If he stayed at the Ouroboros Clan for a hundred years, most of the rank 1 Mankestre bloodlines would probably evolve to rank 3, becoming Black Horrall Snake bloodlines. As for Black Horrall Snake Warlocks themselves? They stood a chance of becoming pureblood Kemoyin Warlocks! The bloodlines of many of the royal families would grow even purer due to Leylin's existence.

Of course, all of this was also related to the distance between them and Leylin. For example, Freya who was closest to him experienced the deepest influence from his radiation and aura, showing results in just a few months' time.

"A.I. Chip! Establish mission — Maintain the current radiation from the regal bloodline that is influencing the community and form an energy tower that will be in this eternal state!" Leylin commanded.

[Beep! Mission established— Regal bloodline's influence on the community! Beginning to gather the main body's radiation, simulating...]

The A.I. Chip responded quickly.

Leylin would certainly not treat himself unfairly, making himself

a breeding machine or radiation source. To enhance the strength of all the Kemoyin Warlocks, he would instead build a tower that radiated similar energy to his.

As he was looking at the smiling Freya, Leylin suddenly grew dazed. His field of vision shifted, going past the Morning Star area to arrive at the dim subterranean world. In an ornate office, Celine caressed a stomach with an even greater bulge on it, a faint loneliness in her face.

Through the Kemoyin Emperor's power of control, nearly all of the descendants of the Kemoyin bloodline in the Magus World could be seen by Leylin, and he had control over them.

Of course, Leylin's 'preparations' weren't limited to Freya alone. Besides his wife on the surface, he also entered intimate relationships with many female Warlocks. It was obviously voluntary, they'd done it to obtain his bloodline. In fact, there were even a few duels that had broken out in private as many of them fought for such a place.

"The growth of my bloodline has begun..." Leylin himself was also unclear about how he felt in his heart, and ended up just sighing...

An astral gate flashed with brilliant light, and Leylin's Morning Star clone stepped through the curtain of light and onto the floor of his Magus Tower.

"Welcome back, Master!" To the tower's spirit genie, this clone

who had the same energy waves as the main body and was familiar with all the traps and passwords would be a master as well.

“Okay, time to see the two Dukes!” The current Leylin could be said to be the backbone of the Ouroboros Clan, and all major decisions needed his permission. Although it was still possible to contact him through secret imprints, there was still a large amount of information and even documents to sign and the like. A physical body was still required to resolve that type of thing.

Ever since Leylin had purified his bloodline into that of a Kemoyin Emperor, Gilbert and Emma no longer treated him like a junior. Instead they gave him the sort of respect one would their liege. Perhaps strength was a part of the reason why, but the main cause was probably the royal bloodline’s natural coercion and secret influence.

With regards to this, Leylin could only shake his head.

After meeting the two dukes who were evidently slightly trembling with fear, Leylin plunged into a sea of documents. Fortunately, with the A.I. Chip’s assistance, he handled these matters with blazing speed while still avoiding even the slightest of errors.

After finishing up all these miscellaneous affairs, Leylin left Phosphorescence Swamp to arrive at a commoners’ city.

This was Borre City, located at the borders of the Black River Domain. It had constantly suffered the tragedies of war for decades



as it bordered the Warlocks' territory. Although it seemed desolate, humans had a natural knack for survival. By the time Jupiter's Lightning changed chiefs and the war ceased, this place had regained its prosperity once more.

Many horses, mules and scooters pushed their way through on the streets that were filled with the pungent smell of faeces.

Mercenaries in leather armour, businessmen with accounting books, clowns with colourful faces... there were all sorts of scenes in this bustling city.

All sorts of bars and hotels were open round the clock, and some drunkards could be seen lying limp at the corners of the streets. These people were ultimately dragged away by patrols and thrown in jail without any regard for propriety. Unless someone bailed them out, they could only be forced into labour.

“Due to the war, ordinary people in the Ouroboros Clan's territory will have to rebuild their homes. Furthermore, many new settlers are moving in here. Thus the marketplace is born!” Watching the flourishing and booming scene, Leylin thought of a reason instantly.

Without stopping his footsteps, he directly came to the downtown commercial street, entering the most luxurious and beautiful cold beverage store.

Leylin was currently wearing a gold-rimmed tuxedo restricted to nobles. With the enchanting face resulting from his being a

Warlock, unknown numbers of waitresses blushed as they looked at him.

However, he was already immune to such scenes. Minding his own business, he came before a seat.

“Can I sit here?” The girl sitting opposite him had a freckled face with vestiges of baby fat still on it. She could not be considered very pretty, and could likely disappear within a crowd. Yet, if one paid close attention, they would realise she had a special temperament to her.

This ‘special’ girl currently had her face stuffed with desserts, one hand holding tightly onto a cone of ice cream while the other constantly sent fries dipped in ketchup to her mouth. There were also many discarded food boxes piled up into a small, thick mountain at the side. It was unknown how she’d managed to digest that much food.

“You’re finally here! I’ve been waiting for you here for two days!” The girl mumbled with a full mouth. Her speech was blurry with all the food in it. She casually swept away the messy snacks that were in front of Leylin and made an inviting gesture. Leylin sat down without any restraint.

Right at this moment, he seemed to hear the sound of many hearts shattering, and many jealous gazes were directed onto the girl.

“Say...” Leylin looked at the girl pigging out opposite him with a

bizarre look in his pupils, “If people knew that the person they were being hostile to was a female Magus, and even a rank 5 Radiant Moon Magus, what would their expressions be like? That would certainly be very interesting!”

“You have to understand my problem. I’ve been a soul for 3572 years, and have never been able to enjoy these!” The girl said resentfully.

# Chapter 630 - The Glutton And Deduction

---

On the commercial street, a handsome guy and a girl who was a glutton sat face to face inside a dessert and drinks store. They appeared to be a common couple just like any other, but their conversation would have terrified anyone who heard it. And yet, due to some unknown reason, the surrounding customers and waiters in the vicinity acted like they did not hear a word of their conversation, preoccupied with their own things.

The only thing was that a few beautiful girls and waitresses stared daggers at the girl seated opposite Leylin. If looks could kill, the girl would've been killed a million times over.

“Haha...This is such a great feeling! The jealousy of others is so amazing, perfect. I feel so blessed!” The female Magus was full of joy, twinkling little stars ready to burst out of her eyes.

Yet, Leylin was not easily fooled by such fake displays of emotion. He was very clear on how cunning the freak sitting opposite him was; after all, even Zegna had fallen into her trap.

“Stop beating around the bush! So, rank 5 Magus, ruler of Jupiter's Lightning, what is it that you want from me?” Leylin asked in a low tone, his arms crossed with his elbows on the table, covering his face.

This female Magus opposite him was the current leader of Jupiter's Lightning, and there was a high possibility that she'd taken care of Zegna to usurp his throne. Just a while ago, she'd

contacted Leylin and requested a meeting here. Needing more information, Leylin had made the trip.

“Wait till I finish this ice cream strawberry pie, I’ve wanted it for quite a while! These things weren’t even there in my era... Whichever Magus created this is truly a genius!”

The girl was still trying hard to stuff a strawberry pie topped with ample cream pudding into her mouth, her fingers fully occupied by the white ice cream.

“Let me introduce myself. I’m Melinda... I guess you can call me Zegna’s teacher... sort of...” the girl blurted out.

Leylin’s pupils shimmered a little, ‘A.I. Chip, search this name in the database.’

The A.I. Chip responded quickly. [Beep! Searching history database, 391 matches for Melinda. Refining criteria, rank 5 and above... No matches.]

Even in Leylin’s database that had been strengthened with nearly the entire knowledge of the Great Library, there was not a single mention of this female Magus.

If she wasn’t using an alias, then she must have had another title that was more widely known. As for her real name, it was probably long buried in the past.

“So Melinda, you only asked me out to enjoy desserts with you?” Leylin’s stare turned a little cold.

“Okay, fine!” Melinda tried to gobble down the pie quickly, only stopping after she finished a cup of apple juice. Lastly, she wiped the crumbs off her fingers with the tissues on the table.

After she cleaned up, Leylin felt a sudden change in her. It was as if she’d suddenly matured completely, having something special in her aura.

“Great job getting rid of my student, young Magus.” She looked at Leylin like a kind senior encouraging him.

Leylin rolled his eyes, “YOU’RE the one who got rid of your student.”

Leylin wasn’t really surprised by her split personality. Existing as a soul for thousands of years would change anyone, even a highly intelligent Magus. Put into perspective, Melinda’s condition was relatively mild.

Worse things had happened in the past, such as a Spirit Magus engaging in bloody massacre after walking out of a ruin.

“Is that so? Oh hahaha... I’d almost forgotten. I warned poor little Zegna about the dangers in making the Pond of Lamentation. One would be counterattacked by all the spirits if they ran out of power...”

Melinda changed emotions instantly, appearing to be really sad for Zegna. Watching the show she was putting up, Leylin confirmed his suspicions on Zegna's death. He decided to keep as far away from this woman as he could in the future.

Leylin began to lose patience, and cut straight into the topic. "Anyway, it's great that Zegna's dead and the battle between the Jupiter's Lightning and the Ouroboros Clan has ceased! So, what did you call me here for today?"

Realising Leylin's urgency, Melinda spoke her true intentions, "Right. Are you interested in partnering up with me to kill a Monarch?"

"Kill a Monarch? You're a nut-case! Meeting you here today was the worst decision I've ever made!" Leylin's face turned a cold white as he stood up from his chair.

"Hehe! Wait a moment, lil' Magus, I'm just joking. However, it really is a good idea for us to ally with each other when dealing with the Blazing Flame Monarch." Melinda seemed to have switched personalities again.

"Do you have any grudge against the Blazing Flame Monarch?" Leylin asked, seemingly having suppressed his anger as he sat down again.

"To be honest, he played a big part in my death back then..." Melinda smiled wryly as she revealed a bit of her secret past, "And

I don't think I need to mention his relationship with you Warlocks? I have much more information about him than you do, here you go..."

An hour later, Leylin left the dessert store speechlessly. He'd been forced to foot the bill. Refusing to take another glance at Melinda, he transformed into a ray of light as he left the city.

In the midst of his quick movement, he was running through what she'd said. She was supposedly best friends with the Blazing Flame Monarch, but they'd fallen out due to some matter and he'd plotted against her. It had cost her her life, and she'd been turned into a spirit body struggling for life.

It was much later that she met Zegna, helping him become a Radiant Moon Magus and set up Jupiter's Lightning.

She'd used some means to regain her life, and now she'd definitely be a thorn in the Blazing Flame Monarch's eye. Therefore, she'd sealed her aura using an Arcane Art, but it was just a matter of time before he found out that she had come back to life. This was why she'd been eager to acquire his support.

However, Leylin did not believe a single part of these craps.

Leylin didn't believe a single ounce of her crap, but his plight was somehow similar to hers. Thus, he would love to have the necessary help, and would continue to be cordial on the surface.



“You will see my sincerity in future!” These were the exact words Melinda had left behind before they separated, but Leylin was still in doubt. Someone who’d kill her very own student to revive herself wasn’t very reliable. Even though he was no kind soul himself, he still detested those Magi who were tricky and cunning. It was probably because like poles repelled.

“FOUND YOU!” An explosion sounded as fire started to bubble, forming a crimson ocean in front of Leylin. The bubbling flames formed an enormous human face, terrifying rank 5 energy blocking Leylin’s path.

Scorching hot flames that could burn even spacetime away caused the surroundings to turn into a formless mass.

“La– Laws of Fire! Breaking Dawn Magus! You’re the Blazing Flame Monarch!”

Leylin blurted out while he was swaying and cursing Melinda in his heart, ‘Melinda! Damn that woman!’

However, the giant face did not bother replying to Leylin. A mass of crimson light hit directly engulfed him.

Breaking Dawn Magi could begin to comprehend laws, advancing to rank 7 when they fully grasped them. Leylin was incapable of handling such a thing as the law of fire right now.

Leylin’s layered defence collapsed in a flash of light, the massive

will crushing into his body like a mountain crashing down on an egg. It even bored into his sea of consciousness.

Pow! Leylin immediately turned fierce, a mass of destructive power arising directly within his sea of consciousness, forming a horrifying thunderstorm.

Rumble! The violent explosion was engulfed by the crimson sea of fire. A vague voice sounded out, “It’s actually a clone? That’s a pretty good cover up!” Fire elemental particles were activated just by the voice causing their density in the region to increase tremendously.

[Beep! Spiritual imprint is self-destructed!]

The A.I. Chip notified emotionlessly within the Morning Star area. Leylin was absorbed in looking at the last images sent by the clone.

He had only lost a clone. As long as he had enough resources, he could easily make more with some time and the A.I. Chip. It was actually more difficult to observe a Breaking Dawn Magus’ attack.

The death of a clone caused only a little loss in soul force, while the death of the main body would cause great damage to a clone. The relationship between the two was never balanced.

“The Blazing Flame Monarch... Someone who can control the laws of fire...” Leylin murmured, data and equations flashing past his eyes as the A.I. Chip slowly deduced data on the battle might of the Monarch.

“A.I. Chip, simulate combat with the Blazing Flame Monarch.”

[Beep! Simulation has begun...]

With the sound of the A.I. Chip, numerous images flashed into and out of Leylin’s vision, the future seeming to hold infinite possibilities.

The A.I. Chip couldn’t predict the future even with its current calculative power, but he was confident in its deductions for combat after a few optimisations, even if the opponent was a Breaking Dawn Monarch.

[Beep! Deduction complete, battle results between host and Blazing Flame Monarch: Host being badly injured and fleeing: 15.7%, Host dies and the opponent is lightly injured: 45.3%, 39% unknown]

the A.I. Chip concluded.

# Chapter 631 - Advancement And Meetup

---

Leylin's expression changed when he saw the deduction produced by the A.I. Chip.

‘That’s to say, if I meet the Blazing Flame Monarch, there’s only half a chance of success? And I die in the other half as well...’ Leylin narrowed his eyes at the result.

Although a twenty percent chance of surviving a Breaking Dawn Magus’ attack was actually quite reasonable, it still felt rather low for Leylin.

Were he to meet the Blazing Flame Monarch today, it was too much of a risk for him to bet on that 39% unknown result.

Looking at the vague data, Leylin guessed it was probably due to all the secrets about himself that he kept. Thus, there would be more such unknown results. He didn’t dare to bet on his luck.

“Is the Blazing Flame Monarch really that powerful? Or is it that all Breaking Dawn Magi are just that strong?” Leylin stroked his chin. He felt like there was a huge gap among Breaking Dawn Magi, entirely dependant on their ability to comprehend laws.

“No matter what, the most important thing is to increase my power.” Leylin flipped his palm over to reveal a piece of flaming red ruby, releasing waves of mysterious energy.

This was the phoenix egg, something that was great for the soul. Leylin had used it previously to increase his soul force to the peak of Morning Star, unable to extract more afterwards.

At that point in time, his truesoul had already reached its maximum capacity, unable to store any more Soulfence. Now that he'd advanced to Radiant Moon, the truesoul was like a vase that had grown bigger, now able to store a greater amount.

The phoenix egg was currently a great cure for the soul damage from the death of his clone.

"The Lava World is currently in the hands of Wayde and Melinda. I can use our alliance to get a chance to enter it, collecting the remaining scattered pieces of the phoenix egg..." Leylin rubbed his chin.

The mysterious creature called the phoenix had been of great help to Leylin. Wayde and Melinda would've acquired all the easily obtainable pieces, but he still wanted to give it a shot.

"This current fragment is good enough to last me a long while, though..." A miniature phantom of the Kemoyin Emperor appeared behind Leylin's back. A stream of black flames shot out of his fingertip as well, coiling onto the fire source stone.

With the assistance of Fireplume, streams of pure soul force flowed out of the phoenix egg like water from a clear spring. Leylin was joyous as his truesoul was rejuvenated, the speck of dullness caused by the fall of his clone quickly being filled up again by a

brilliant glow.

Soul force which seemed as taintless as the moon spread continuously, filling up his truesoul and rapidly advancing it towards the Half Moon stage.

“Awesome yet terrifying, what a unique soul force!”

Leylin heaved a sigh as he glanced at the message by the A.I. Chip, [Beep! Large quantity of phoenix egg essence has been absorbed by host. Soul force increasing, spiritual force strengthening.] [Beep! Host status has changed, recalculating statistics.] Leylin was shocked by the A.I. Chip’s notification as he realised the rapid increase in his soul force and spiritual force. His soul force had reached 161 units in just a few short seconds.

The moon that was his truesoul shone brightly, almost at the Half Moon stage. His spiritual force was stimulated by the abundant soul force as well, so much so that the sharp increase even burdened his body.

Leylin stopped extracting essence from the fragments once he realised something was wrong. His statistics had changed drastically once more.

The A.I. Chip finished its recalculation.

[Leylin Farlier, Rank 5 Warlock. Bloodline: Kemoyin Emperor

(Complete body), Strength: 76, Agility: 62, Vitality: 138.9, Spiritual force: 1613.7 Magic power: 1613 (magic power is in synchronisation with spiritual force) Soul Force: 161 (New Moon)]

Gazing at the shrunken Phoenix's egg in his palm, Leylin murmured to himself, "My spiritual force has increased by nearly 300 units in one shot? And my soul force by thirty? If I were to absorb the entire egg, my truesoul would probably advance to the peak of Full Moon. But..."

Leylin smiled bitterly. Such a growth rate placed an extreme burden on his body. Unlike the Kemoyin Emperor's bloodline, the phoenix egg would only support the advancement of his soul force, rather than give him holistic development over a period of time.

Such an increase in a single element was troubling Leylin greatly. It was the main reason why he couldn't just use the entire egg.

"The new plans to increase vitality need to be brought forward... Thankfully my Kemoyin Emperor bloodline is still growing, and it still has room to improve my vitality..." Bloodlines greatly improved Warlocks' physiques.

"Hmmm... Why do I feel like using my devouring ability to absorb the egg should yield a better result?" Leylin's eyes brightened, and he ordered the A.I. Chip to start simulations comparing it with his current method,

It was a blessing for a Magus to find any method to utilise such a rare object, but Leylin felt like he was being wasteful.

Such rare objects could never be found normally, so he could not let even a tiny bit of it go to waste.

[Beep! Trial completed! Efficiency of absorption— Fireplume: 87.8%, Devour: 92.6%. Devour also has a certain chance of inheriting the bloodline power of the ancient phoenix]

“Inheriting the bloodline power?” Leylin shook his head. If even the A.I. Chip was vague about the result, it showed that not only was such a thing very troublesome, it really depended on luck.

He was not very confident in his luck. It’s not like it wasn’t good; in fact, he was just like any other normal person, his luck good at times and bad at others. It’s just that he would never rely on luck in such matters.

If the efficiency of absorbing the soul force was higher while devouring it, Leylin would definitely use this method. However, he would not harbour hope for anything else. After all, the higher the cliff of expectation, the greater the fall.

“It seems like I’ll be able to build up a foundation of soul force for the breakthrough to Breaking Dawn soon...” Leylin could not help the tinge of excitement that was growing in his heart.



This was rank 6! The realm of Monarchs! Rank 6 Magi were the elites among the Magi of the central continent, its rulers. They even had the power to control and direct the continent's development!

To be exact, once Leylin advanced to rank 6, he would hold his fate in his own hands in the Magus World.

However, there was a huge problem at the moment.

His bloodline still shackled him! To evolve from a Giant Kemoyin Serpent Warlock to a Kemoyin Emperor Warlock had pushed Leylin's genes to their limits, and the A.I. Chip had confirmed this. His bloodline would evolve no further. Great amounts of calculations and the help of the A.I. Chip only managed to push the bloodline shackles from Morning Star to Radiant Moon. They still pressured down on him.

On top of that, the attention of the Snake Dowager had disturbed Leylin further.

He'd always been cautious of this mythical being. Her control of the darkness element was something Leylin's could not begin to compare to. It was definitely not a good sign for her to pay attention to him when he advanced to Radiant Moon.

Leylin didn't like putting his safety in the hands of someone more powerful than him, viewing it as extremely pathetic. It was a viable option if he was weak, but now that he had the power to control his own future he would only be a fool if he remained in

hiding.

“Bloodline shackles and the Snake Dowager... Maybe these two are two facets of the same problem!” Leylin’s eyes twinkled with rays of hope, as numerous possible methods were brought up in his mind only to be denied quickly. Many different possibilities for the future were quickly deduced...

Suddenly, a call came for him, his book of imprints glowing. It was an imprint in the form of a funny clown face, a new one that was at the back.

Leylin thought for a second and tapped on it, “Melinda, you can actually send messages directly into the Morning Star area? You still owe me an explanation for what happened just now!” It was such a coincidence that Leylin had been attacked by the Blazing Flame Monarch right after he parted ways with her.

Thinking over the incident, Leylin refused to believe that it was just a coincidence. This Melinda’s mysteriousness was the exact reason Leylin wouldn’t develop a close relationship with her.

He had the feeling that he would end up like Zegna if he had trusted her, dumped mercilessly when he was no longer of use.

Finally, Melinda replied after a long silence, “What would you do if... if I intentionally attracted the Blazing Flame Monarch’s clone to test your ability?”

# Chapter 632 - Plotting And Reconnaissance

---

“Test my ability?” Leylin sneered, “If it’s true, I’ll slaughter you and imprison your soul, having it burn for a million years.” The coldness in his voice seemed to drop the ambient temperature.

“Haha... I’m just joking with you! It was definitely an accident!” Melinda’s voice had once again switched to that of a sweet little girl, “Anyway, I prepared a gift to make up for my dear brother’s loss. Open up the astral gate.”

“A gift?” Leylin furrowed his brows, but soon arrived at his astral laboratory and opened up his gate. Flame-like blue light gathered together to form a passageway.

Leylin was very cautious about Melinda. The astral stone energy that was inputted and the spell patterns only allowed for the transfer of non-living objects. If there was any invasion of external force or spiritual force, he would shut the passageway immediately.

However, Melinda seemed to have been honest this time, and a black cube was sent through the gate. In spite of the high energy consumption, this was a popular way of transferring parcels in the central continent, especially among the Morning Stars of the Warlock Union.

There were numerous seals on top of this black box. At first glance, there seemed to be an ice elemental rune that kept whatever was inside fresh.

Leylin blew at it, and the rune on the surface of that black box split apart. The box then opened on its own, revealing its contents. A stench of blood immediately spread around the room.

“Urgh? What happened to this Magus?” Inside the box was the head of a Magus! Worse still, Leylin was very familiar with him! It was the leader of the Magi who’d attacked him in Twilight Zone! This was the Full Moon Magus who’d escaped from his attack!

“It’s not just the face. The soul fluctuations match as well,” Leylin nodded after a check by the A.I. Chip.

It was pretty easy for any Magus to counterfeit a fake body part like the one before Leylin, but the lingering aura of the soul and the strong resentment were hard to fake.

“Hehe...What do you think about this? His name is Marriott, the top lackey of the Blazing Flame Monarch! It took me great effort to get rid of him while the Blazing Flame Monarch was away. So, dear brother, are you satisfied with the surprise?”

“Of course! I’m more than satisfied!” Leylin’s hand made a gesture and the head of Marriott floated into the air, the resentment on his face evident and the level of hatred accumulated beyond what words could describe.

Dark Magi could often extract memories and information from a fresh brain; despite being a Radiant Moon Magus, Marriott was still subjected to such means.

“This gift is definitely something more than just a surprise... ” To be able to kill a Full Moon Magus, she was surely no less powerful than a Breaking Dawn Monarch.

Leylin had long understood that she could not be underestimated, having become a Radiant Moon right at rebirth. Even though Marriott had been severely injured by Leylin before he got killed, he could not deny the fact that she was incredibly powerful.

“I have to admit that you’re good enough to work with me!” Huge black flames shot out of Leylin’s palm, and Marriott’s head slowly melted under the heat until there was nothing left.

“Hehe! You’re the bes— Umm, hold on for a sec; she’s coming out!” The little girl’s voice turned mature once more, “Hello there, young Magus. We meet again.”

‘You freak! Here’s another one with a split personality,’ Leylin rolled his eyes in secret. “Let’s get straight to the topic, why do you want me?”

“To get rid of the Blazing Flame Monarch. Are you interested?” The female Magus was frank and straightforward.

This time, though, Leylin did not beat around the bush as he had before, “Yes, but we aren’t strong enough!”

“I know the Blazing Flame Monarch’s weakness, as well as when he’ll be at his weakest. I’ve also roped in a few other friends...” Melinda sounded very confident, evidently having an extraordinary understanding of the Monarch as well as great amounts of intel on him.

“In that case, why look for me? Wayde and Offa should be rather interested in this as well, right?” Leylin stated his query.

“It’s because you’re the most powerful Warlock in the Warlock Union. Furthermore, after the fall of the Blazing Flame Monarch, the fewer the participants the greater the benefits. If more people come and share the profits, it’d be such a shame...

“On top of that, those rotten old bloodline Warlocks only focus on the Warlock who’s inherited a bloodline from a rank 6 being, which is just inflexible and shortsighted of them...” Melinda seemed to have issues with the rank 5 Warlocks in the Warlock Union.

“You can inform them of our operation of course, but I am sure they won’t be interested. Even if you get them to come, you won’t get any extra for it... This communication channel is extremely secure, so there’s no need to be worried about eavesdropping or anything. I’ll hand over this method later, so let’s keep in contact in the future!” Having said this, Melinda broke off the connection, leaving Leylin behind in deep thought.

A long while later, Leylin touched his chin, “It seems like Melinda’s true identity shouldn’t be simple, she might have a deep relationship with the Blazing Flame Monarch!”

In reality, Leylin was in favour of Melinda's methods. From the memories he extracted from Marriott's head, Leylin himself had acquired a lot of information and intel. At the very least, him chasing Leylin to Twilight Zone and attacking him there was confirmed to be by order of the Monarch.

With Leylin's temper, he would viciously fight back in answer.

However, it was impossible to accede to Melinda's requests. Even if she suddenly became benevolent and did not try to backstab him, she would definitely possess most of the benefits.

Leylin had no desire to tussle with a Breaking Dawn only to end up with nothing. It was very important to first conduct a few probes and rope in many people.

Other Magi might think Leylin and Melinda were lunatics, lacking the calm and rational judgement typical to Magi. It was a joke for two Radiant Moons to even think of causing the fall of a Breaking Dawn Magus! In reality, however, Leylin and Melinda were extremely confident in their own abilities, and could not be compared to regular Radiant Moons.

However, at their cool appearance, an underlying fervent desire coursed through them. They both shared a common goal in seeking revenge, hence the formation of this paper thin alliance.

'Who else did Melinda find though?' Leylin had his doubts, 'There are at most over twenty Radiant Moon Magi in the central

continent, with five in our Warlock Union. Those who came up by themselves like Zegna are extremely rare, and most are subservient to other Monarchs... Could Melinda be thinking of convincing some other Monarchs?’

There weren’t that many Radiant Moon Magi in the central continent, and even if there were hidden Magi in large organisations, Leylin estimated that there definitely wouldn’t be more than thirty.

He had eliminated two Radiant Moons who worked under the Blazing Flame Monarch. Along with Marriott, who Melinda had brought him, perhaps the Monarch no longer had any subordinates of great power, having to come attack Leylin himself. This possibility was very likely. Perhaps there wasn’t even a single Radiant Moon under the Blazing Flame Monarch now.

And now, he probably held a deep-seated hatred towards the main causes of such a disaster, Leylin and Melinda.

If not for the Morning Star Area being renowned for having fended off Breaking Dawn Magi before, he would likely have rushed over long ago.

As for Melinda? This woman was just too mysterious, and she might even have more trump cards than Leylin and definitely had aces up her sleeve. Leylin wouldn’t bother worrying about her safety.

“I heard from her that after eliminating the Blazing Flame



Monarch, I can get some amazing benefits...” Leylin’s pupils shone with light from the A.I. Chip as large numbers of images and scenes flashed in front of him.

The A.I. Chip’s processor had been stretched to the limit, and it had begun operations.

‘Her words are very credible. In that case, I won’t need to invite Wayne and the rest. Of course, I can still get the Warlock Union to gather intel and stuff like that.’ Leylin made up his mind.

It was not just the Warlock Union. Leylin was already preparing to command the Kemoyin Warlocks in the Ouroboros Clan to expend all effort on finding news regarding the Blazing Flame Monarch, especially anything that had to do with Melinda.

He had a feeling that the relationship between the two was definitely not as simple as it seemed, and perhaps when the truth was revealed at the end, everyone would be shocked.

However, rather than gathering information, Leylin was more focused on the information she had leaked.

“So there’s a Warlock in the union whose bloodline has reached rank 6?” Leylin’s eyes began to flicker with intelligence, “It should be that Radiant Moon Warlock who hasn’t shown himself yet...”

Even though his Kemoyin bloodline had risen to that of a Kemoyin Emperor, his bloodline was still at rank 5, a level lower

than a rank 6 bloodline. Such a person would only encounter bloodline shackles at the end of rank 6, which was much better when compared to a Warlock like Leylin.

Of course, before a rank 6 bloodline appeared, Warlocks with rank 5 bloodlines could be said to be regal amongst Warlocks, and they were the ones who had been supporting the Warlock Union.

The inheritor of a rank 6 bloodline was their hope, someone who could cross over into Breaking Dawn and become a Monarch of bloodlines.

# Chapter 633 - Rank 6 Bloodline

---

‘I’m afraid the reason that Jeffrey and the rest invited me to help manage the Morning Star Area is in order to increase its security!’ Leylin pondered silently. With a rank 6 bloodline appearing and that prophecy, all the high-ranked Warlocks probably believed that that person would be their hope to rise once more.

Leylin wasn’t the least bit envious. No matter how talented a Warlock was, they would still need to grow over a period of time. Those with high-ranked bloodlines would need even more time to develop, and before such a person matured, he was just a Warlock that showed good potential.

Leylin would happily encourage and guide the Warlock along, even sending some items to him as an investment. However, if that Warlock did not meet his requirements, he would need to be taught reality.

And if the Warlock started to hate him for it, he might just make the fellow ‘disappear.’ No matter how much of a genius one might be, they were nothing before they had the chance to completely develop. As for the hopes of the Warlock Union to have a Monarch among their ranks? Leylin had never bothered with that.

He would never entrust his hope to someone else to accomplish. He could only rely on himself.

“Those Radiant Moon Warlocks hid something so important from me, and I even had to find out from an outsider...” At the

thought of what the Radiant Moon Warlocks had done, Leylin shook his head in disappointment.

Of course, he was aware that the Warlocks had their reasons. A Bloodline Monarch meant too much to the Bloodline Union, because that meant hope for the rise of Warlocks! Hence, it was a necessity dispose of any dangers before they could develop.

Leylin's own background was mysterious and obscure, and he'd spent little time in reaching the realm of a rank 5 Warlock. Not considering the possibility that he was a spy, the fact that he could go head to head with that genius had these Warlocks frowning.

It was good for one hero to take care of another, but in the Magus World two absolute geniuses who did not see eye to eye would likely end up hating each other. It was natural for the high-ranked Warlocks to worry.

Hence, they chose not to be direct, instead only mentioning it to Leylin in passing. Their line of thought was simple: once that genius advanced to rank 6 and widened the gap between them, there would be nothing to worry about.

Though he was aware of what these people who were originally his higher-ups were thinking, this did not mean Leylin agreed with them.

The development of a rank 6 bloodline was terrifying. With the passage of time, he would eventually surpass Leylin. But, these high-ranked Warlocks did not know that Leylin had a lot of trump

cards up his sleeve, which was why they were more biased towards the other Warlock. That was not surprising.

It was impossible for Leylin not to have any opinions about the Warlock Union. However, he only cared about himself. Once he broke through the bloodline shackles to arrive at the realm of rank 6, these Warlocks would come and surround him instead.

In the Magus World, strength meant everything. Though it wasn't as if organisations were useless, but if there was a huge disparity between an organisation's power and the individual's strength, it was like gilding the lily.

At this thought, Leylin began to snicker as he tapped on a secret imprint in the shape of a bat, "Your Highness Jeffrey? I have something to ask you."

"Leylin! I'll be there soon." These rank 5 Warlocks all had their main bodies in the Morning Star Area, so moving around was easy.

Shortly after the call ended, Jeffrey arrived at Leylin's castle.

Multi-coloured petals floated on hot tea, giving off hot steam and emanating a rich fragrance. A few adamantite maids served snacks and then bowed elegantly towards Leylin and Jeffrey before leaving quietly.

"Your Highness, these robot puppets of yours have great workmanship. There's something especially unique about their

movements...” Jeffrey watched the backs of these maids, seemingly deep in thought.

In his opinion, Leylin’s puppets were created with great precision, and they were at least at the level of a Grandmaster Alchemist. This was rare, and even Radiant Moons would have to expend some effort for it. The programming of these puppets was such that their movements carried a unique air. Their lack of stiffness was something to reflect upon.

As most movements had been thought of and executed, the workmanship of the puppets had attained an even higher appraisal.

“Hehe... it’s something I did whilst bored. If Your Highness likes it, I can send you a few!” Leylin laughed. The blueprint was something stored in the A.I. Chip from his previous world, and he had now used it only for some nostalgia.

The etiquette in his previous world was different from that in the Magus World, and it was understandable that Jeffrey had noticed it.

Ever since the inception of astral experiments, the Magus World had an increasing amount of contact with the other worlds. At most, Leylin’s works would be believed to have some influence from other worlds, and there was nothing strange about it.

After they made some small talk, Jeffrey finally cut to the chase, “May I know what Your Highness has invited me here for?”

“Well,” Leylin placed his teacup on the table slowly, “I met the leader of Jupiter’s Lightning recently. This female Magus, Melinda, invited me to attack the Flame Monarch’s organisation...”

Leylin summarised his experiences and, of course, omitted the content about Melinda inviting him to deal with the Flame Monarch himself together. That was just too crazy, which was why he merely mentioned attacking the other party’s organisation.

Even so, that caused Jeffrey to turn pale with fright.

“Wha– What? You’re laying your hand on a rank 6 Magus’ organisation? Is she crazy?” Jeffrey shot to his feet, a trace of suspicion on his face, “Melinda? I seem to have heard this name somewhere, but it’s been too long and I can’t remember.”

“Based on what she said, she’s confident she’ll be able to keep this under control. When the time comes, she’ll split the benefits with us... What do you think...” Seeing how he had reacted, Leylin shook his head inside, but still said the words that he prepared beforehand.

“I don’t agree,” this suggestion was rejected without hesitation.

“A Monarch is not an existence we can provoke at the moment. Though you’ll be working alone, you’re still representing the Warlock Union. I don’t want you to do this...” Jeffrey watched

Leylin, eyes showing his sincerity, “I know you must be feeling indignant, but what we need to do now is wait. With another hundred and fifty years..”

“Will the new Bloodline Monarch have risen by then?” Leylin continued coldly.

“How– How did you know about that?” Learning that Leylin was aware of this earth-shattering news, Jeffrey’s eyes went as wide as saucers, and he almost spit out a mouthful of tea.

“Melinda told me!” Leylin betrayed his teammate bluntly. Seeing Jeffrey’s fearful look, he knew that Jeffrey would definitely use all his sources and strength to check up on her.

“On top of that, I’ve already heard several lines that seem like prophecies, and some that have to do with me...” Leylin answered, as if finding it funny and embarrassing.

From Jeffrey’s point of view, this was Leylin mocking his own bloodline. They, who were restricted by their rank 5 bloodlines, could never reach rank 6 unless they destroyed their bloodline shackles. However, this was an issue that had plagued countless Warlocks since ancient times. How could it be so easily solved?

“The prophecy of that Radiant Moon? I’ve heard of it,” Jeffrey nodded, “Actually, we leaked out quite a few ourselves, to conceal the true content...”



“What content?” Leylin shifted slightly forward.

“Before the wave of chilliness flows back in the cycle of this world, which means within a hundred and fifty years, there will definitely be a Warlock who will rise to become a Monarch!”

Jeffrey’s face flushed, his eyes emitting rays of hope. Warlocks had accrued a ton of hatred during this long period of suppression, and this prophecy had given them great hope as a result.

“Due to the bloodline shackles, Radiant Moon Warlocks like us cannot reach Breaking Dawn even if our truesouls have reached the peak of rank 5. However, things are different now. Someone with a rank 6 bloodline has finally begun to grow, and with the bonus strength from his bloodline, his breakthrough to Breaking Dawn will definitely be much smoother than that of regular Magi. Afterwards, he will only grow stronger, bringing about the revitalisation of us Warlocks!”

Jeffrey began to exaggerate. As for Leylin, his eyes were only filled with pity as he watched the man, ‘Another fool who’s placed his hopes on someone else! Even if he gets stronger, he’s only trash.’

Intelligence began to flash in Leylin’s eyes, ‘How many Warlocks out there are like Jeffrey, putting all their hope on that fellow? How many others out there do not wish to see the growth of that Warlock? I’m quite interested...’

“He’ll only advance in a hundred and fifty years? You mean...”

Leylin pretended to make a guess.

“That’s right. The one rank 5 you’ve yet to meet, our final trump card, is the Warlock who carries a rank 6 bloodline.” Jeffrey bowed towards Leylin with sincerity, “Please forgive us for keeping this from you. It is just too important a matter for us bloodline Warlocks!”

Leylin helped him up, looking solemn, “I truly admire Your Highness for your feelings towards this. Rest assured, I will do all I can to protect him!”

While Jeffrey didn’t necessarily believe Leylin, this show would definitely keep him satisfied. After setting up a specific time and space to meet with that Warlock, he got up and left Leylin’s castle.

# Chapter 634 - Reflection And Experimentation

---

After Jeffrey left Leylin's castle, the sunny smile on Leylin's face slowly crumbled, a brooding look taking its place. "A Warlock that has inherited a rank 6 bloodline? Interesting. Very interesting!"

Till now, the highest bloodlines he'd seen were those of the Sun's Child which was rank 6, and the blood of the rank 7 bronze female giant who'd comprehended laws.

As for the fire phoenix, perhaps that wasn't even a bloodline creature at all. Even though he possessed the egg, Leylin had no way to extract a bloodline from it.

The bloodline of the Sun's Child had been completely exhausted after Leylin had created two bloodline imprints, and the bloodline of the bronze female giant had been a huge driving force in Leylin's bloodline evolution. Not only were the quantities of blood in both cases meagre, neither had even come with a real body. After they were used up, they had disappeared.

Things would be different with a Warlock who had inherited a rank 6 bloodline. The fellow would have a complete body, and even if he were to lose some of his bloodline. This was different for a bloodline Warlock who had inherited the bloodline of a rank 6 creature, he could probably make up for it with the natural regeneration of blood by his body.

'Based on what Jeffrey said, he has already become a Radiant

Moon Warlock. The bloodline in his body meets my requirements as well, even if barely. However, if I want the best effects, I should wait till he advances to Breaking Dawn. When his bloodline force is at its best, I can reap the most perfect fruit...' Leylin stroked his chin, his lips curving up.

Though Warlocks had the ability to regenerate blood, bloodlines were not quite as simple. Leylin believed that ancient bloodlines inherited by Warlocks could not be extracted without limit, as they had a close connection to their sources.

There was no issue if a small part of the bloodline was extracted, but if the other party was used as a blood bank, their bloodline would soon be exhausted. This would have the same effect even on ancient creatures.

Whatever it was, the bloodline of a rank 5 Warlock, especially that from a Warlock who had inherited his bloodline from an ancient Breaking Dawn Creature, was basically a moving treasure trove for Leylin. Forget purifying it or making imprints from it, just observing how a rank 6 bloodline interacted with the body would bring great benefits to his bloodline experiments.

But of course, the other party would definitely not let himself be treated as a guinea pig.

'Forget that for now, I'll decide on that after looking at his attitude. Right now, I need to think about the Blazing Flame Monarch.' Leylin stood up and entered the astral laboratory.

Melinda had tried to entice him into dealing with the Blazing Flame Monarch together, stating that she knew of his weakness. In order to gain his trust, she'd even given him some information, and the A.I. Chip had tested its veracity. However, the most important bit was still in her possession, and there was nothing Leylin could do about that.

He obviously knew that she wouldn't divulge key information until the time for the operation came. There was no other way about it. And since the other side would give him no more information, Leylin could only begin thinking of ways to increase his own strength. No matter what the situation was, he could not go wrong with that.

“In actuality, the best method is to hole myself up and then deal with the Flame Monarch after I reach Breaking Dawn!”

‘Truth be told, it's best that I hole myself up and deal with the Blazing Flame Monarch only after I reach Breaking Dawn.’ Although Leylin thought this way, it was a pity that he had been attacked by the Monarch. He now knew that this was impossible.

Leylin could feel an obvious malicious desire from him. It told him the Monarch was intent on eliminating him. The only reason for the current silence was that the opponent needed to recover some strength. Once they reacted completely, the most terrifying of strengths would be brought to bear on Leylin like lightning.

‘Shit! When did I ever provoke them? Even if it was the previous time, he was the one who dispatched Magi to attack me!’ Leylin felt that he was being wronged, and was rather confused.

There was no reason for the Flame Monarch's hatred towards him.

Of course, the Blazing Flame Monarch had always had a strange temper. Back then, if not for Offa and the other rank 5 Radiant Moon standing up to the leader of the Warlocks purge campaign in time, perhaps the central continent would not exist today.

After cursing the opponent a few times, Leylin found he could not do anything about it. He'd been walking as he delved into thought, and the A.I. Chip's robotic voice sounded automatically the moment he walked through the laboratory.

[Beep! Host body has entered range of astral laboratory. Beginning sterilisation and disinfection. Beginning automatic sterilisation and disinfecting.]

Once the voice sounded, Leylin's body was covered with a layer of black as fiery red light cleaned it top to bottom.

This was an essential procedure for interplanar experiments. With such complete measures that cleverly made use of magic, Leylin felt like this laboratory matched up to the high-end laboratories of his previous world, even surpassing them in some aspects.

Completing the sterilisation and having prepared his defences,

Leylin arrived at the astral laboratory. He did not head for the astral gate straight away, and instead entered one of the binding rooms beside it.

Blue light rippled in a massive pool made not of water, but condensed lightning. Densely packed confinement and isolation runes separated it from the outside. This sort of strict defence was obviously prepared to confine a creature or material from the astral plane.

After he reached Radiant Moon, Leylin's ability to explore the astral plane had improved greatly. With the additional help of the A.I. Chip, he'd obtained various harvests every time he activated his gate. Though he hadn't yet found a foreign world with no World Will, he'd acquired quite a few scraps, even meeting a wanderer in the astral plane and making a few deals.

There were even a few astral beings who were unlucky enough to charge headfirst into Leylin's side, arriving at this world through his gate. These beings eventually became Leylin's spoils from his explorations and were all collected here.

Large numbers of confinement runes formed several separate frames at the bottom of the pool. Various strange items were placed within each. One of them was a creature similar to a black octopus with numerous illusory tentacles touching the edges of the frames, as if trying to probe something before being frightened back by the terrifying current.

Wooh wooh... Practically at the very moment Leylin arrived, the octopus quickly withdrew into a ball, as if Leylin was some

horrifying demon.

“Looks like I was too rough with it...” Leylin laughed as he read through the records by the A.I. Chip.

[Spectral Octopus: Astral Being. Period Since Capture: 15 days, 9 hours. Currently in good condition, no distinct need to eat.]

The image that the A.I. Chip provided had numbers all over the different parts of the octopus, with some conjectures included. Everything about this spectral octopus was being shown to him.

“Training the soul is extremely troublesome. The method the ancients passed down is to constantly probe the astral plane, simulating and understanding its rules to allow one’s own soul to evolve...” Such a method took too much time and consumed a tremendous amount of astral stones. However, it was safe and effective.

The vast astral plane was truly boundless, and it encompassed all things. Experiencing the working of such a thing was very beneficial for a Magus’ truesoul.

Leylin, however, had the cheat that was the phoenix egg. He had no need for this. If not for his own vitality being unable to keep up and his fear of the issues that would arise due to a lack of coordination between the body and a rapidly strengthened soul, he would long since have broken through to the peak of Radiant



Moon.

To him, interplanar experiments carried a whole different meaning. “I’ve already pushed the paths of a Warlock and Magus to the limits for now. If I need to strengthen myself quickly, the only ways left are in other worlds...”

Leylin’s eyes were calm. He who had the A.I. Chip constantly analysing things for him knew very clearly the paths of Warlocks and Magi. He understood that his strength had reached its peak until he could deal with the issue of body-soul balance, which was why he’d shifted his attention to the astral plane.

Since he had reached a bottleneck in his own path, it was a good idea to walk on others. Such a thing would definitely be beneficial to him.

On top of that, Leylin had never given up his search for the Purgatory World!

The attention from the Snake Dowager had given him a terrible premonition. He did not want to meet her when he was caught unprepared one day, and wished to solve this problem himself. Finding the coordinates to the Purgatory World was therefore of extreme importance.

The coordinates to the Purgatory World were something the Warlocks of the Ouroboros Clan yearned for, which was why after obtaining the information left behind by those Kemoyin Warlocks, Leylin’s progress in this area had increased rapidly.

Leylin, who had the innate ability of control due to his Kemoyin Serpent Emperor bloodline, naturally knew how terrifying a creature like the Snake Dowager was.

If possible, he obviously did not want to meet her now, but it was necessary to make some preparations for the future.

“I’ve been using so many astral stones without care, and I only got so much...”

Leylin gazed at the items in the restraining lightning pool, speechless, “It’s no wonder that Morning Star Magi spend so many resources to no avail. Things like this that rely on luck are too scary. This is my result with the aid of the A.I. Chip; other Magi won’t even have this much...”

Leylin’s astral stone consumption had reached a terrifying stage, and he’d even used up all the astral stones belonging to the Ouroboros Clan. If not for the Warlock Union replenishing his supply, he would’ve faced a problem with the energy for his future experiments.

Even then, he wasn’t lucky enough to have gathered many resources, and he was facing a net loss...

# Chapter 635 - Feather And Dream

---

“A trip to the astral plane is like a sea voyage during the era of exploration. Few people successfully found new continents, returning with gold. Most just ended up as skeletons buried deep under the sea....” Leylin sighed.

He left the binding room and came before the astral gate, a grey feather appearing in his palm. This feather looked very ordinary, with nothing different about it, as if it was a regular feather from a bird.

However, Leylin knew how unordinary it was. The feather had been a gift from the owl which had come from the crack between reality and dreams.

“Dreamscape is in actuality another world of dreams. I wonder if I can make contact with it using the astral gate.”

Before this day, Leylin had already used the A.I. Chip to scan the feather multiple times, performing many experiments. However, he'd had no results.

The results showed that this was the most ordinary of feathers.

Now, with no other ideas, he decided to use it in an interplanar experiment, hoping to link to Dreamscape.

In the boundless astral plane, the two most powerful worlds he

knew of were the Magus World and the World of Gods.

Of course, due to the ancient war, both of these worlds had been weakened, though the Magus World was now gradually regaining its former glory.

Dreamscape was the strangest and most mysterious world! Time and space were misleading and the place was filled with various indefinite laws.

Things that were obvious and followed common sense did not exist there. In other words, everything was topsy-turvy, and it was a world with no real laws.

Even the ancient Magus World had been taken aback when met with the invasion by Dreamscape. Of course, it was also due to this very instability that Dreamscape's attack had started strong but sputtered out.

“Though it's full of all sorts of strange things, that's an opportunity for me!” Leylin's eyes gleamed. Other worlds had existences that abided by objective laws. Personal growth required much time and energy there.

However, anything was possible in Dreamscape. If he wanted to obtain the most strength in the shortest amount of time, he would have to go in there and try his luck.

Of course, he had to be prepared to return with no benefits.

‘A.I. Chip!’ Leylin commanded inwardly. When he had entered, Leylin’s soul force had long since taken control of all the apparatus and energy sources here, and then handed it over to the A.I. Chip to manage.

Though Leylin had set up a spirit genie here, that was just a ruse. How could such low-levelled programs match up to his A.I. Chip?

[Beep! Energy source beginning preparations. Routes detected to be normal. Rate of wear and tear at 0.0017. Beginning connection with astral gate]

The A.I. Chip quickly intoned. Along with its robotic prompt, all the apparatus in the laboratory activated methodically. The rays of light and the sounds combined to form the most splendid of symphonies.

Under the control of the A.I. Chip, Leylin’s usage of everything in the laboratory was as fluent as him using his own arm.

[Astral gate has been engaged!]

In the laboratory, the stone gate emanating weak starlight rumbled, being covered by blue light in the form of flames.

Countless mysterious links were generated in the flames, and the void crumbled, revealing the shadows of innumerable unknown places.

A river of light was formed entirely out of blue stars that were the shadows of these foreign worlds, majestically surging into the darkness unknown.

“No matter how many times I see this, I can’t help but praise it...” Leylin murmured as a glint of fervour shone in his eyes. After his advance to the Radiant Moon realm, the form of this astral gate before his eyes had been changed as well, and his exploration of the astral plane had become more thorough.

A great, ancient aura was being transmitted from the astral gate, and Leylin immediately turned serious as he closed his eyes, sensing everything attentively.

Bits of blue starlight covered his body, and with the passage of time, the rays on it grew more solid, to the point that they resembled actual flames.

Within the point mass, the crescent that was his true soul abruptly emanated clear rays of light. It seemed to have absorbed something from the astral plane, in the process becoming more pure and dazzling. His soul force that had been supplemented greatly by the phoenix egg seemed to be rinsed and purified as it completely stabilised.

“The mysteries of the astral plane, and its resonance with the soul...” Leylin’s eyes seemed different as he opened them, “I need a complete harmony between my soul and the rest of the world. Once I reach the realm of that fusion, the next step will be to synchronise my soul with the astral plane. No matter what path to power I use, at the end it still feels strangely familiar, like I’m coming back home...”

It was great that this experience strengthened his true soul. However, when he glanced at the astral gate the elation on his face turned into a wry smile. The blue flames on the surface of the gate had shrunk to about half their original size, and part of the astral stones outside had lost their lustre, becoming fragmented.

Leylin froze before asking the A.I. Chip, “A.I. Chip! How long was I out of it for?”

[Beep! Host has been standing for 2h 34min 12s.]

The A.I. Chip answered faithfully.

“So much time has passed already...” Leylin shook his head and suddenly came to a realisation, “No wonder most of the energy from the astral stone reserves has been consumed...”

He now knew why Morning Star Magi did not use the astral gate to train their souls. There was no other reason than that it was too extravagant. Leylin had prepared a lot of astral stones for this

experiment. He had merely been a little absorbed in feeling the aura for a short period of time, and this had happened.

If he were to be caught in a trance for a while longer, he might just use up all the astral stones here. The amount of astral stones here was something many Morning Star Magi took decades to earn, and would use over ten years.

Since the effort put in and the rewards were not proportional, it was understandable that this method had been discarded.

“Even Breaking Dawn Magi will find it painful to engage in such an extravagant method of training. Even they might not be able to keep up with the cost...” Leylin shook his head and produced the grey feather.

The soft feather fluttered and, following a breeze, slowly flew through the air towards the blue flames of the astral gate.

“What kind of world is Dreamscape? Is this attempt going to be useful?” Leylin seemed slightly nervous.

Using the feather as a coordinate and throwing it into the astral gate was something he did with no other option. Whether he succeeded or failed, the feather would completely disappear, which was why he was rather apprehensive.

Pu! The moment the edge of the grey feather made contact with the flames, there was a wondrous change. Large amounts of blue



fire crawled onto its surface, and with a gentle sound they began to flash. The owl's feather burned to ashes in the flames.

Rumble! As if gas had been poured onto them, the flames rose several metres high, being coloured a bright orange.

The whole stone gate began to shake, as if it had been linked to some immensely powerful existence.

‘Have I succeeded?’ “A.I. Chip!” Leylin called out lowly.

[Record of data from astral gate complete. Beginning search of coordinates...]

The A.I. Chip's emotionless voice rang out, and the flames grew more intense.

The shadows of countless worlds came into view and quickly slipped away, flashing past in front of the astral gate allowing it a mere fleeting glance. Leylin, whose soul force was linked with the astral gate, seemed to see a very mysterious world.

On the exterior, numerous dream worlds formed a long starry river. The world itself was like a twisting hourglass, full of mystery and a feeling of asymmetry.

“Is this Dreamscape?” Leylin muttered.

However, this scene did not last for long. A piercing warning sounded.

[Warning! Warning! Astral gate undulations have grown unstable. Recommended action: Halt search!]

“Are you kidding? I’ve only just seen the edges of Dreamscape, and haven’t been able to deduce the coordinates...”

Leylin’s eyes were fixed on the scene in the astral gate as he muttered, “Faster. Faster!”

Cracks appeared on the surface of the astral gate, but the scenes behind were gaining more clarity. Leylin didn’t bother with the change as he took several steps forward.

Rumble! At this moment, however, the fissures on the gate expanded, forming large explosive ripples that swept Leylin within.

The virtual image of Dreamscape immediately disappeared. Amidst the explosion, Leylin’s roars could be heard, “No, damn it! I just needed a minute, or even half a minute! With that, I can completely determine the coordinates of Dreamscape!”

[Host's laboratory has exploded. Handling using emergency plan number 3. In process of stabilising space. Allocating usage of rank 2 rune.]

The A.I. Chip's robotic voice rang.

With its operation, groups of robotic puppets went ahead, coordinating with the spell formation and beginning to clean the rubble in the laboratory.

A neutralising water current that carried the piercing smell of disinfectant was sprinkled from the ceiling of the laboratory, drenching everything.

In just ten or so minutes, the rubble in the laboratory had been cleaned, and the radiation from the other world had been isolated.

At the heart of the explosion, Leylin stood expressionlessly, a black layer emerging on his body. He had not sustained any injuries in the explosion.

# Chapter 636 - Spatial Conversion

---

Leylin stared at the large pit in front of him absent-mindedly, hands still maintaining the position from when he had been casting the spell.

In front of him, all that was left of the astral gate were ruins. Terrifying electric currents and radiations were still present in some places, but with the A.I. Chip's directions those, too, were quickly isolated and extinguished.

Though the explosion of the astral gate was dangerous, danger depended on the individual facing it as well. In the face of Leylin's Kemoyin scales that had been strengthened to rank 5, the stray undulations from the explosion were nothing. Even the area around him was completely safe.

Even so, the destruction of the astral gate, as well as the loss of the coordinates, left Leylin's heart aching.

The amount of astral stones needed to construct an astral gate again was negligible with the large organisation of the Warlock Union backing him, and amassing even more astral stones wouldn't be a problem given some time. However, the loss of Dreamscape was a huge blow to him.

"Did I fail..." Leylin sighed, expelling the sorrow in his heart. When he raised his head once again, his eyes were now calm once more.

“If the coordinates of Dreamscape are gone, then so be it. I was expecting too much when I thought I could use the material from a strange creature and find the coordinates anyway. Furthermore, as I am now a foreign world is too powerful for me to explore...”

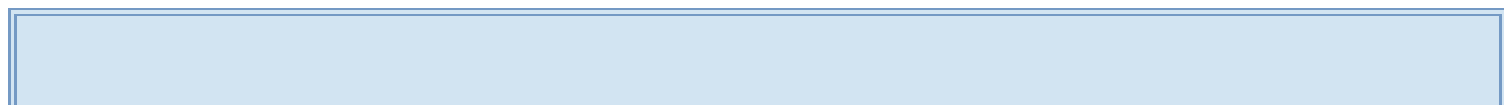
Leylin shook his head as he ordered, “A.I. Chip, tidy up the place!” He turned to leave the laboratory, but when he pulled the door open, Leylin’s pupils shrank.

“This place...” In front of him was a tremendous barren desert. Three strange suns shone in the skies, boiling heat waves everywhere. The friction between his shoes and the rocky yellow sand was audible.

Leylin looked up and around, finding the place completely desolate. At the base of a hill, he could see the broken tip of a building. The thing seemed to have toppled over an unknown amount of time ago, the signs of age extremely obvious on the surface.

‘A.I. Chip, begin scan!’ Leylin picked up a signboard that had landed near his feet. He could not read the words, but he felt a sense of familiarity from them. The black board did not feel too heavy in his hands and creaked with the slightest application of strength, as if ready to break into smithereens at any moment.

Blue light from the A.I. Chip scanned the thing, and it immediately came to a conclusion.



[Based on carbon 14 dating, estimated age: 21982 years, 11 months...]

“Over twenty thousand years ago?” Leylin stroked his chin and tossed the signboard. As soon as the thing hit the ground, it cracked apart into fragments, some bits even turning into powder.

“Where is this place?” Leylin raised his head, looking at the three strange suns that were still scorching the place.

Of the three, the one on the left was distorted, like a circle that had been twisted multiple times. The one in the middle was round, but there were numerous tentacles on the outside that made it seem rather horrifying. The one on the right? It was a complicated polygon, with its sunlight holding a different tint.

Leylin turned back, and found his astral plane laboratory still standing tall, its doors still open. However, the surface was visibly ageing.

Silver metal was being corroded and fell off. Very quickly, his brand new laboratory had aged to a state where he would have to abandon it.

“What’s going on? The metal on the surface of the laboratory is an alloy known for its resistance to corrosion...” Leylin’s eyes swept over the place, but he could not find anything in the vicinity that was related to his castle.

The situation now was as if he had brought his laboratory along and, as one entity, crossed over to another plane from the castle.

“Could this be Dreamscape? Or did the accident with the astral gate bring me to another world?” In that instant, all sorts of conjectures appeared in Leylin’s mind. He took a deep breath and re-entered the laboratory.

Boom! He closed the door.

“If it’s another foreign world, I’d definitely have felt like I was travelling through space, and from my experience, there’s only one world that can take me elsewhere without any warning— the Dreamscape!”

The phantom of a Kemoyin Serpent Emperor appeared behind Leylin’s back. Its amber pupils blinked open, scanning the area with vigilance.

“Bring it on!” Leylin opened the door once more as the Eternal Light spell shone ahead of him. There were many small roads around, connecting the laboratory with other constructions within the castle.

Leylin raised his head, the shattered sky unique to the Morning Star area entering his line of sight.

He glanced at the surface of the laboratory. The signs of ageing had long since disappeared, as if all he had witnessed was a mere

illusion.

“Master!” With Leylin’s will, a few metallic puppets arrived before him.

The A.I. Chip confirmed their identities, leading Leylin to ascertain that he was truly in the castle in the Morning Star Area.

“Interesting!” Leylin’s eyes flashed with curiosity. He pondered over it for a moment and returned to the laboratory.

When the door was opened once more, the barren land and oddly-shaped suns appeared before him again.

Compared to before, however, there were some changes in the surroundings. Traces of yellowish-green weeds tenaciously grew from the seams of rocks, and the collapsed buildings were now covered with vines and seemed full of life.

There were even some small shrubs in the distance, growing with vigour.

“The life force here has grown richer, as if tens of millennia have passed...” Leylin narrowed his eyes. The three strange suns now shone with a green hue which he could not get used to.

Arriving back at where he’d tossed the signboard, Leylin found that the thing wasn’t in pieces anymore, and was instead at its original place. The cracks from before seemed to have faded to an



extent. ‘A.I. Chip, test age.’

[Beep! Based on carbon 14 test, estimated age: 1328 years, 7 months...]

the chip quickly replied.

“The last test showed it was over twenty thousand years old, and it even broke apart on the spot...” Leylin stroked his chin, “Time is behaving strangely here... Only an unbelievable world like Dreamscape could be in such a situation...”

“But... The last time I came here, my soul had been caught in a trap, and this time I managed to enter with my body as well... Am I in someone else’s dream?”

“What is the boundary between dream and reality?”

The further he pondered, the more Leylin found that the secrets of Dreamscape were terrifying. However, there was not one riddle he could solve.

“There are even such strange changes. Is it a spacetime wormhole? Or perhaps some sort of garbled effect from Murphy’s Law?”

Seeing the vines climbing all over the laboratory, Leylin walked

in and closed the door. Opening it once more, he found himself in the Morning Star area.

Leylin immediately ordered, “Categorise this area as a special first rank region! Seal the whole region, and move away all nearby constructions. Carve runes to protect it from radiation and contamination.”

The metallic puppets immediately got to work, startling Freya.

“What’s going on, darling?” Freya was currently in a loose nightgown, looking dazed.

Leylin went forward and pulled at Freya’s hand while consoling her, “Nothing, something just went wrong with an experiment, and the contamination from the radiation is growing more intense. It’s best you move out for a while, staying far away from the castle...”

While he didn’t really understand the current situation, that explosion in his astral laboratory had resulted in an even more mysterious change. It had now become a bridge between this place and Dreamscape.

One needed only enter to change what space it was connected to, something that immediately piqued Leylin’s curiosity.

He could now move between worlds without consuming any energy. If any Magus were to find out about this, they would go

insane. Hence, using the excuse that an experiment had gone wrong and he was afraid that the contamination would leak, he was taking necessary emergency measures.

However, the reason for this situation still had Leylin befuddled.

‘Is it because of that owl feather? Or was it the explosion of the astral gate? Or did both those events somehow affect each other causing this mysterious change...’ he thought as he stroked his chin.

Whatever it was, this accident was a good thing. Not only had he obtained the coordinates to Dreamscape, but he’d also acquired a bridge between the two worlds.

“However, this can’t last forever,” Leylin recalled some spatial theory. The Magus World and Dreamscape were like two parallel sheets of paper, and his astral laboratory was a point between the two, the only link between them.

However, with how space worked, this point would eventually break. In other words, his laboratory would eventually lose its connection to Dreamscape.

“I need to speed up my exploration!” Leylin’s heart was burning. Dreamscape was the most mysterious of worlds, one that had even invaded the ancient Magus World.

It was an extraordinary place whose inhabitants lacked true

bodies. Formed of the dreams of intellectual beings, it had a mystical strength.

If he could find the dreams of some ancient Magus that had comprehended laws and obtain his understanding, he would reap huge benefits. Basically, in front of Leylin was a gigantic treasure trove...

# Chapter 637 - Dreamforce

---

‘Dreamscape is a huge treasure trove, but it holds perilous dangers within...’ Leylin pondered deeply over this.

Unlike the Magus World, Dreamscape hadn’t suffered any damage, and was still a terrifying world that retained its ancient splendour. The demons inside this place were beings even ancient Magi had been fearful of.

On top of that, Dreamscape was even more dangerous than the real world. The slightest of mistakes in there would result in the loss of one’s truesoul. Whether it was an encounter with a demon or some other danger from the environment itself, everything would be extremely terrifying for him.

What if they found his laboratory and used it as a springboard to get to the Magus World? Just the thought of it left Leylin’s scalp numb.

While he didn’t mind being treated as a traitor to humanity, he wasn’t going to do anything that would not benefit him.

Besides, Leylin had long since begun treating the central continent as his own. He did not want an even stronger organisation to occupy it. With the consolidated might of the central continent as it was, just a random demon would cause the Magus World to tremble in fear.

There would be nothing for him in that situation.

‘It’s better to keep a low profile and focus on exploration!’ Leylin consoled Freya and immediately made the decision to move the castle. He’d completely sealed off this area, turning it into an observation zone.

Freya was very considerate, leaving quickly. It was quite normal for there to be issues during high-ranking experiments. Leylin was the most serious she’d ever seen him, which meant that this particular incident was extremely dangerous. Reasonable as she was, she immediately supported his decision.

Truth be told, she had no other choice. Such powerful contamination would be very dangerous for low-ranked Warlocks and Magi, and she was not going to risk her child for that.

As for Leylin, he stayed behind in the name of surveying the contamination.

Through many disastrous experiments, the various situations and processes were excellent research material. With the feigned traces of a failed experiment formed by the A.I. Chip, many Warlocks were deceived, not in the least suspicious of his actions. His secret exploration of Dreamscape could continue unperturbed.

His astral gate had now turned into a strange bridge connecting the Magus World and Dreamscape. Leylin currently stood before a half-body statue of a human, looking deep in thought.

‘As expected, Dreamscape’s invasion has already begun?’

Noticing the unwanted presence of this statue in his laboratory, Leylin stroked his chin in contemplation. As the bridge linking the two worlds, the laboratory itself was greatly contaminated by Dreamscape. Especially after a few experiments on Leylin's end, the laboratory had now undergone some changes.

Leylin could sense that the invasion from Dreamscape hadn't ceased for even a moment, constantly modifying the materials and other things in the lab. If not for Leylin having moved everyone away from the castle, something big might have happened.

The laboratory now seemed extremely dangerous even by the standards of the Radiant Moon Leylin. He couldn't help but move forward, his hand running along the surface of the statue and allowing him to feel the coarse texture.

[Beep! Scan completed. Target has no obvious signs of radiation. Style is from the Eiffel era. determined to be constructed 6231 years ago...]

The A.I. Chip projected some densely packed data before Leylin's eyes, but it did not contain what he wanted to see the most.

"From my past observations, this should be the time when the invasion from Dreamscape peaks. Afterwards, the space between it and the lab will widen until the link to Dreamscape is lost..." Dreamscape and Magus World were two completely different large worlds. They were like two parallel lines, and the laboratory was the point that connected the two together.

It might have been because of the owl's feather, or the unique explosion of the astral gate. Whatever it was, the chance of such a thing happening was almost negligible, and it was impossible for Leylin to create it.

With the movement of space and the worlds themselves, they would eventually separate and the laboratory would lose its mysterious function.

This would not last for a long time. The energy required to connect two separate worlds was massive, and though Leylin did not understand the specific principle of how this connection worked he was quite sure it would break.

Through the tests of the A.I. Chip, it was made known that the concentration of dreamforce within the laboratory had reached its peak.

‘Given how high the rate of corrosion is, demons might be able to come over as well...’ Looking through the graphic the A.I. Chip had given him representing the corrosion, as well as the graph showing the density of dreamforce, cold sweat appeared on Leylin's forehead.

The connection between his laboratory and Dreamscape had reached a peak, and it would weaken past now. However, this peak was enough for even someone at rank 7 and above to pass through. In other words, if a demon in Dreamscape found the laboratory, it could very well make use of it to enter the Magus World!



This was a convenient path, not requiring all the blood rites and soul sacrifices that were currently obstructing the demons' invasion.

‘Thankfully, there aren’t any demons on the other side, and this peak period will last a few days at most...’ An expression of relief flashed on Leylin’s face. In this short period of time, the chances of demons finding the laboratory were extremely low, and his luck would have to be very poor for it to happen. Because of that, he could be at ease and use this time to explore Dreamscape.

At this thought, Leylin surveyed the items in the laboratory. Besides the statue, there was now another experimentation table where the astral gate had been, with large amounts of plants and ore samples gathered atop it.

Many items from the dilapidated buildings, such as abandoned coats and hats, were placed in a messy pile. Around it were powerful binding runes, isolating their auras and radiation.

‘Dreamscape is a illusory world. How is it that these things can continue to exist even after they enter the Magus World?’ This question had vexed Leylin greatly. The owl had told him that Dreamscape was created out of the dreams of all intellectual beings, so all things there should have been virtual.

Something in a virtual land could be brought into the real world, and even ancient demons and the like could actually appear in the Magus World. There were too many mysteries surrounding

Dreamscape.

‘Could the main culprit of all this be dreamforce?’ Dreamscape and the Magus World were different. Even the concept of air might be absent there, and regular humans could suffocate the moment they entered. However, the flora and fauna was still abundant, which confused Leylin further.

Dreamscape was permeated by an unusual energy, a power that Leylin had named dreamforce. He believed that it was this very power that resulted in Dreamscape being so strange and not following any rules.

‘A.I. Chip! Engage Astral Vision and set up the multicoloured graphics. Begin automatic filter,’ Leylin ordered.

[Beep! Launching Astral Vision]

the A.I. Chip loyally intoned.

Astral Vision was the unique visual ability of the Heavenly Astral race. As they were beings of the astral plane, their eyes could see things that Magi could not.

Having gathered information about them from Sky City, Leylin had tried to imitate the structure of their eyes. With the ability Warlocks had at working with bloodlines, he’d managed to create a

strange effect.

With the robotic voice of the A.I. Chip, Leylin's eyes were wrapped up in a sparkling blue light, as if having turned into sapphires.

Colours were filtered out of his vision layer by layer, leaving behind only a dark red. Unlike the crimson of bloodline force, this red was filled with a certain darkness, as if containing the malicious intent of the world. It made Leylin feel incredibly uncomfortable.

'The dreamforce wasn't this dense yesterday!' Leylin watched the dark colour grow increasingly deep scarlet and shook his head, feeling anxious.

He came before the experimentation table, sweeping away the miscellaneous items atop it away to reveal a fine Petri dish that seemed to be formed entirely out of crystal. One could even see its contents from the outside in spite of it being covered.

Inside was a tiny organism, what looked like a black bug with massive compound eyes and six limbs with reverse hooks on them. It was squirming around.

Leylin could see large amounts of dreamforce amassing in his sight, entering the bug as if supplementing it.

"Dreamforce! A muddled mix of illusion and reality, a power that

exists to transcend laws?” Leylin mumbled to himself, hands emitting a layer of sparkling white light.

Whoosh! Dark red streams of air were caught in his hand and quickly dissipated. The soul force of a rank 5 Warlock that he was proud of could actually do little to this dreamforce!

“It’s something of a completely different system...” Leylin laughed bitterly, mulling it over for a moment and then submerging the petri-dish in another pool crackling with thunder.

“Begin experiment number 581!” Leylin had been performing all sorts of experiments, looking for something capable of interfering with dreamforce that would allow him to use this strength himself!

# Chapter 638 - Obstruction And Success

---

Were there treasures in Dreamscape?

Yes, and many at that! Dreamscape housed many Rank 6 and above beings with various kinds of materials and treasures, they were all enough to drive Radiant Moons and even Breaking Dawn Magi crazy.

But the dangers that Dreamscape offered were terrifying as well. The world was ever changing, and the bug that one stepped on today could grow into a powerful fiend tomorrow, stomping you to death.

It was a world full of uncertainties where the real and the virtual, past and future were all mixed up. It was one that Leylin did not wish to easily come into contact with. He hadn't even finished exploring the surroundings of his laboratory yet, precisely because he didn't dare to go in too deep.

Furthermore, he didn't think treasures and comprehension of the dreamforce were the most precious things in Dreamscape. No, Dreamscape's biggest offering was precisely the dreamforce that was everywhere!

Dreamforce was the foundation of Dreamscape. Whether demons or strange treasures, they were all based on it, and if one could control this power not only could they avoid most of the dangers in Dreamscape and explore it freely, there would also be a great benefit to their body.

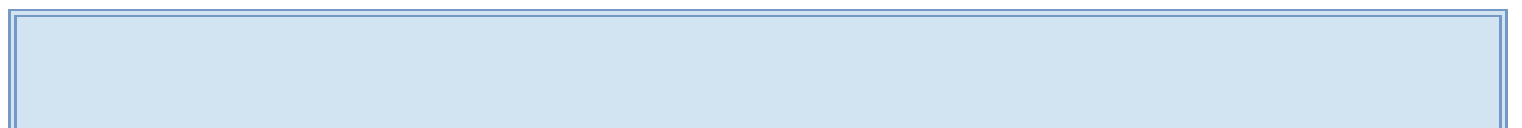
‘Dreamforce... I’m afraid it’s slightly more powerful than even soul force and bloodline energy, a higher form...’ Leylin’s pupils sparkled with desire, ‘If I can completely control this power, not only will I be free of obstructions in Dreamscape, I can even just abandon the laboratory and try to form a connection to Dreamscape by myself...’

The connection between this laboratory and Dreamscape was definitely going to break one day. Leylin wished to take precautions, finding a way to communicate with Dreamscape himself.

“Activate the isolation layer. Enable circuit number 52, adjust power level to 5.” With Leylin’s command, terrifying thunderbolts suddenly gathered together in the pool as it rippled endlessly. A few plates made of silver slowly rose, forming a metal box that completely isolated the Petri dish within.

Large amounts of lightning adhered to the top of the plates, forming a blue surface. It was as if there was a layer of blue at the top.

“Enter observation mode.” The blue radiance grew more intense, almost piercing through the air before him. In his field of view, the dark red dreamforce passed through the cage of lightning without the slightest obstruction, stopped by the metal plates for only a moment. It then drilled into the beetle’s body without hesitation.



[Experiment failed.]

The A.I. Chip's cold sound echoed, making Leylin's expression darken.

“Again!” Leylin had already experienced this many times, whether it be in this life or his last. He didn't feel dejected, and instead began once more without expression.

“None of the third series alloys work. I have to replace...” Leylin's eyes blazed with an endless fighting spirit.

---

Time crawled by, making Leylin feel a little numb. His hand movements remained extremely meticulous though, and he made not a single error in replacing the components as he redesigned the parameters of the experiment.

A large number of electric runes formed, attaching to a glass-like material in which the petri-dish was kept. The black beetle climbed continuously, trying to pry open the seal with its mandibles.

Pop!

The beetle's movements grew sluggish, as if it was weighed down by something. Its figure suddenly distorted slightly.

[Dreamforce has been isolated, creature's vital signs are unstable! Beep! Interference detected, unable to scan...]

Backdropped by the robotic voice of the A.I. Chip, the beetle in the Petri dish suddenly turned manic, sounding out harshly. The piecing insect screech was extremely sharp, carrying a hint of anxiousness and igniting Leylin's spirit in an instant.

He looked at the outermost glass pane as a blue radiance emitted from his eyes.

In his Astral Vision, he could see a large amount of dark red vapour being blocked out by the glass pane, leaving it unable to enter the Petri dish.

Due to the simulation from the experiment, streaks of dark red gas were continuously emitted from the beetle's body.

Whenever a streak of red gas emerged from the surface of its body, the beetle's figure grew duller, causing the lines to become unstable. It made it seem like this beetle was just a virtual projection after all, and its source was now being disrupted.

Bang! After the last bit of dreamforce was extracted, the beetle let loose another sharp cry as its entire body exploded.



A little black light dissipated, finally disappearing entirely without a trace.

[Mass in Petri dish is now 0, no traces of any remains found.]

The A.I. Chip followed up.

“Indeed! Illusory things are still illusory in the end, but because they’re transformed by dreamforce, they can exist in real life...” Leylin stroked his chin. This experiment’s success had also authenticated many of his conjectures.

“The demons... Although they are almost omnipotent in the Dreamscape, in the Magus World and even any other real world they will be weakened significantly. Once the dreamforce stored in their bodies is nearly exhausted, they’ll need to return to Dreamscape to replenish it... Perhaps this is why they ultimately gave up on the invasion, vanishing without a trace...” Leylin felt that the events around the invasion and ultimate end of ancient Dreamscape had been lifted off their mysterious veil now.

Because of the initial intersection of the two worlds and the abundant dreamforce, even ancient Magi were rendered helpless by these fiends. However, the Magus World was too big, even containing a seven-layered subterranean world that was not in the least inferior to the surface. As they invaded downwards, the assistance of dreamforce reduced, and with the separation of the two worlds, it was dwindling anyway.

In the end, had these demons not withdrawn of their own accord, what awaited them was probably being annihilated like the beetle.

‘Dreamforce... even if it’s a powerful weapon, it still has serious restrictions!’ Upon reaching this state, Leylin had begun to pity these demons instead. Although they were almost omnipotent in Dreamscape, once they reached the outside world and without dreamforce supporting them they were weaker than bugs.

“In comparison, although the systems of the Magi and the Gods would be affected in other worlds, they were still quite common and they could retain a large portion of their strength. Precisely because of that, the leaders of the ancient world were the Magi and the Gods. No matter how mysterious and powerful Dreamscape was, it was ultimately just short lived...”

Leylin looked at the obstructed dreamforce and fell into deep thought. ‘I can dabble into the system of dreamforce, but I absolutely cannot make it a fundamental. Otherwise, once I’m targetted and restrained, the consequences will be too severe...’

“A.I. Chip! Record this experiment, list all the parameters as classification level one, begin simulating the possibility of affecting dreamforce...” Leylin commanded. The success of this experiment was only the first step. What he had to do next was to grasp the basic properties and regulation of dreamforce through continued experiments, assimilating it into the path of a Magus so he could develop a spell that mainly relied on it.

This was what the ancient Magi did as well. Discover everything, study everything, use everything! It was the essence of the path of

magic.

‘Although dreamforce is extremely limited, if it’s deployed as an ambush the effect will be equally terrifying!’ Of course, Leylin would not underestimate his opponents because of dreamforce’s limitations. The power of the ancient demons had been recorded firmly in the A.I. Chip’s database.

‘After I’m familiar with dreamforce, I can then make use of this period of time to begin exploring Dreamscape...’ Leylin stroked his chin, a faint glimmer in his eyes.

He had lost a great opportunity to explore Dreamscape because of this research. Now, the two worlds were almost separated from each other already. Still, for Leylin this contribution was definitely worth it.

Compared to the mere coordinates of a world, his control would now be a guarantee for him in Dreamscape from now.

Furthermore, his expectations were different from that of the owl. If he successfully gained control over dreamforce he could then enter and exit Dreamscape freely from anywhere.

After all, Dreamscape was different from other worlds. It was existing everywhere, and in theory communicating with the dreams of all intellectual creatures was even more boundless than the Astral Realm, one had to transcend the worlds and dimensions connected.

Of course, this was only the best assumption, but Leylin had seen unlimited possibilities in it!

“One day, all the profound mysteries of Dreamscape will unravel before my eyes!” A smile emerged in Leylin’s blue pupils...

Ka-cha! Ka-cha! And at this moment, a fine shattering sound suddenly echoed into Leylin’s ears.

“What’s the matter?” He turned his head over, directing his gaze onto the half-statue that had suddenly appeared today.

As the laboratory that connected with Dreamscape was most affected by dreamforce, some strange things happened almost every day. Leylin had almost reached a point where he was inured to these strange things.

A great amount of cracks emerged continuously on the statue of half a human. And yet, once he used the A.I. Chip to scan it he saw an undamaged statue instead, without the slightest cracks.

‘What’s going on? Is it that I can only see this scene through Astral Vision?’ Leylin revoked Astral Vision, and all he saw was an undamaged statue. A profound chill suddenly emerged in his heart.

# Chapter 639 - Accident And Meeting

---

The sudden appearance of a half human statue, and the hairline cracks that could only be seen through Astral Vision... all this caused a chill in Leylin's heart.

The things in Dreamscape were way too mysterious, but the attraction they held for Leylin was incomparable. Precisely because of this, Leylin who had all along been immersed in experiments had slightly neglected the extreme dangers contained there.

Leylin looked at the continuously enlarging cracks on the statue, and could not help but say with a deep voice, "Seal!"

Ring! A blood-red radiance emerged from underground, instantly transforming into a translucent cage. The runes he'd previously set up near the statue began to flicker as well. Suppressive energy waves gathered together, firmly sealing the half human statue within.

The range of cracking on the statue grew wider even as it was sealed off, all the cracks coming together to form a terrifying large mouth.

A wave of tiny black bugs wriggled out of the big mouth, each one the size of an ant. They crawled out of the statue layer after layer, covering the ground in a flash.

The concentration of the dark red dreamforce was amplified

several times as it formed a dense whirlpool that rippled back and forth in the air.

‘Why is the dreamforce circulating so fast?’ This discovery dulled a lot of the joy from the experiment’s success. Leylin began reflecting on himself. With just one insignificant step in the study of Dreamscape, he had only pulled off a corner of the veil. He still needed to be wary of the unknown. The little bit of complacency that had appeared was immediately suppressed.

Squeak! Accompanied by a creepy screech and a fine gnawing sound, Leylin found to his horror that the binding runes were shattering apart one by one. Even the spell formation on the ground was terrifyingly being corroded.

The dark red dreamforce constantly darkened further, and its strange power even caused Leylin’s expression to change.

“Damn it! If I wait until tomorrow, I’ll use up all the isolation materials found today...” Leylin’s heart was very hateful, but he was helpless.

“Destroy!” He suddenly attacked, and a strange black flame swept across the room violently, completing drowning all the places the half-human statue had previously been.

The temperature of the entire laboratory rose to an extreme for a moment, before falling rapidly once more.

The original floor had melted due to the high temperature, hollowing out. At the bottom of this hole were all sorts of molten materials that mixed together and solidified again, forming colourful gem-like crystals.

Creak! Black spots started appearing on these crystals one by one.

Although the statue disappeared, those black bugs had impressively survived Leylin's demonic flames.

'They're based off dreamforce, I need to solve the problem from its roots.' Leylin's eyes turned gloomy. He waved both hands, and the current experimental boards in the lightning pool flew out in a flash, exploding to form dust in the air. As if some power was bringing them together, they then formed a fine membrane, covering the area where the black bugs were.

"Isolate!" A great amount of lightning covered the membrane and formed an isolation layer similar to that of the previous experiment. Dark red dreamforce was isolated to the outside.

A large amount of dreamforce condensed, unexpectedly causing many holes in the membrane, causing it to crack under the attack.

'Although the dreamforce can be isolated, it can also break through the latter. My last experiment only targeted an ordinary Dreamscape creature... So this kind of thing can happen when encountering something of a higher rank...' Leylin's pupils narrowed.

This meant that, if he encountered an even more powerful existence, this membrane he set up would likely be torn apart immediately.

Thinking over it once, that made sense as well. A rope net could catch small fish, but how could it catch a tiger shark in the ocean?

‘The priority is to completely eliminate all these hidden dangers before the opponent gains Dreamscape’s support!’ Determination flashed in Leylin’s eyes as the demonic flames burned once more.

This time, the black ants that lost dreamforce melted apart very quickly, turning into motes of black light and dissipating.

As if due to this event, the dreamforce outside the membrane grew richer, causing fine cracks to appear on the membrane. It would rupture at any time.

“Faster! Make it faster!” Leylin shouted deeply. Cold soul force merged, being injected into the flames.

The black flames immediately burned tenfold more vigorously, burning all of the black ants into ashes. And the instant when the last ant disappeared, the isolation membrane emitted a saddening cry, unable to bear the heavy load any longer as it shattered. The dreamforce had lost its target though, and it hovered for a while before dissipating automatically. It caused Leylin to let out a deep breath. He turned around.



All of a sudden, it was as if the half-human statue was pasted in front of his eyes, the huge cracked mouth seemingly ridiculing him! A terrifying gloomy breath was constantly emitted from the crack that was the huge mouth.

Leylin's pupils narrowed as dense Kemoyin Scales emerged in an instant, New Moon soul force bursting forth from his truesoul to cover his body.

Squeak! The terrifying black ants emerged once more, covering Leylin's entire body. His Magus robes, which were a magic artifact, did not even manage to block them for a moment, thousands of holes forming on it instantly.

The black ants covered Leylin's body, and even the rank 5 Kemoyin Scales could not resist the opponent's fangs. An intense pain was transmitted from his skin as countless nicks appeared on Leylin's body.

HSS— Behind him, the phantom of a Kemoyin Serpent Emperor emerged, growling as a layer of black flames burned on Leylin's body.

“Huff...” After the flames stopped burning, Leylin was momentarily taken aback. When he came back to his senses, all the black ants had disappeared.

However, fine black wounds were still densely packed on his body, making it seem a little horrifying.

“Is this the invasion of Dreamscape?” Leylin looked at the blue lightning pool, the hollow ground, and the scales that had automatically emerged on his body, heaving a deep sigh.

Dreamscape was a world where reality and virtuality were mixed, and all sorts of things could happen in there.

‘I’m afraid that with that sort of influx of dreamforce, this lab has already become a building of Dreamscape. Even the nature of the materials has changed...’ Such a situation was very similar to the process of a high-ranked Magus irradiating his castle on his own accord, only at a much deeper and more overbearing level.

‘A.I. Chip, raise the alert level once more. Forbid all entry other than my own!’ As he walked out of the laboratory, Leylin was slightly gloomy. The feeling of being shrouded in an illusion, as if he had been struck by magic but had not realised it, really left him uncomfortable.

Moreover, although dreamforce was not like magic, it could still affect reality. No matter what he experienced in dreams, it would all be reflected on his main body.

‘Dreamscape experiments are indeed full of dangers!’ Leylin sighed. Even the current him did not dare to live near this laboratory.

“Your Highness Leylin! You’re finally out?” Jeffrey’s voice was heard as Leylin walked out of the castle. This rank 5 protector of the Morning Star area had actually been waiting outside the castle

without his knowledge.

“What’s the matter, Your Highness Jeffrey?” Leylin asked curiously. This was considered his personal territory, Jeffrey could not intrude on his own. It would be considered disrespectful to its owner.

“I tried to contact you several times, but there was some hindrance so I could only wait outside...” Jeffrey shrugged his shoulders with a bitter smile.

“I see. Forgive me, I was immersed in an experiment!” Leylin immediately apologised as an embarrassed look emerged on his face. The effect of the pollution and isolation of dreamforce was much more terrifying than other spells.

If a laboratory in such an environment was still able to receive communications from the outside world, that would truly be something fishy!

“What experiment are you performing? I heard that there was even an accident before, and the pollution caused by the leakage is very serious...” Jeffrey looked at the tightly guarded castle behind Leylin that had no signs of life, seeming curious.

Of course, the leakage due to an experiment was something Leylin had deliberately made up so he could tighten the vigilance in this place openly and seemingly righteously.

“Nothing much... Just the leakage from an interplanar experiment. Something seems to have escaped as well...” Leylin’s words were both true and false, showing the great improvement in his acting skills. Even without the A.I. Chip’s coordination, he was able to deceive an old sly fox like Jeffrey.

“It’s a cute, timid creature. In order to play hide and seek with it, I had no choice but to seal off the entire castle...” Leylin smiled.

“Oh!” Jeffrey nodded but did not pursue any further. Magi’s experimental information was definitely top secret, not to mention that both Leylin and himself were rank 5 warlocks of equal ranks. It would have been way too out of line.

“This Sir Leylin has not invited us in even now, isn’t he too rude?” At this moment, a Warlock standing beside Jeffrey spoke up indifferently, actually displaying slight hostility towards Leylin.

“Hm?!” Leylin was also shocked. Only now did he notice this figure beside Jeffrey. He was very handsome, his eyes containing an exuberance and vitality. His body’s aura was extremely abstruse, yet also very easily neglected.

# Chapter 640 - Bevis

---

“This is?” Leylin was on guard. This person was able to hide from his sense, which meant he was no ordinary fellow.

“Hehe... Let me introduce him to you, Leylin. This is the person I mentioned before. He’s Bevis, the last of the Radiant Moon Warlocks in our Warlock Union!”

Following Jeffrey’s introduction, Bevis proudly lifted his head slightly. “Archduke Leylin, you come out to meet your guests looking like this. Aren’t you violating etiquette?”

Leylin was stunned, and quickly looked at himself. Due to the mishap previously, his robe was now utterly tattered, and he did seem rather impolite.

“My apologies, that was my mistake! Please, come to Black Serpent Castle next door. It’s not far away, and my wife is there as well.” Leylin apologised sincerely, and directed them there while still in front of his castle. He did not intend to invite the both of them in to tour this castle.

According to Leylin’s plan, this area would be completely isolated and abandoned. After what happened today, he surely had doubts about the safety here.

The invasion of Dreamscape came as silent as the night, yet contained a vast amount of terror.

Even rank 5 Radiant Moon Warlocks might not be able to effectively protect themselves in the face of such an invasion.

Before having complete control over dreamforce and being able to defend himself, Leylin would maintain distance from this place. His safety wasn't a joke.

Seeing that Leylin acknowledged his mistake and apologised so readily, Jeffrey's smile became more gentle. After all, he didn't want to see a divide between the military powers of his own organisation. As for Bevis, a trace of astonishment flashed in his eyes, but he concealed it well.

Leylin, who noticed all of this, sighed secretly, 'This Bevis... he isn't the haughty and brainless person he appears to be...'

Previously, Jeffrey had mentioned that there were a group of Warlocks that had the highest hopes of obtaining a throne, and Bevis was the last Warlock that did not appear back then. He'd always thought that this fellow was outside of the Morning Star area, but didn't expect that he would actually appear right in front of him directly.

'Is his ability to block me from probing also brought about by the rank 6 bloodline?' Leylin carefully sized up this Warlock who possessed the bloodline of a rank 6 creature.

As he tried to probe him, a rich layer of bloodline energy that surrounded Bevis like a dense fog warded off any prying eyes.

Perhaps it was because of this ability that he was able to avoid the hostility of many Magi, and thereby grow to this stage.

‘A.I. Chip, is it possible to bypass this isolation layer from his bloodline energy?’ Leylin appeared to be talking cheerfully to the two Warlocks as they walked along, but he was actually commanding the A.I. Chip and making continuous attempts to gather information about this Warlock.

[Beep! It is necessary to break the protective layer to gather information about this Warlock. This will attract his attention. Continue with action?]

the A.I. Chip swiftly intoned.

‘No!’ Leylin wouldn’t be so reckless of course, he didn’t want to be seen as an enemy.

‘Ancient bloodlines at rank 6 that possess concealment abilities are few and far between...’ Leylin stroked his chin and glanced at Jeffrey.

‘Jeffrey himself should have the bloodline of a rank 5 creature, an ancient bat. Bevis on the other hand... A Crystal Dragon? Or a Misty Fog Giant?’ The many possibilities surfaced at the bottom of Leylin’s heart. After the A.I. Chip made continuous comparisons, it finally narrowed it down to the two most probable bloodlines.

Bevis was of course,unaware that, within a short span of time, Leylin was already close to completely understanding him inside out. He was aloof throughout their journey, standing at the side while Leylin and Jeffrey conversed. He only occasionally interjected.

After connecting to Dreamscape, Leylin had constructed another Black Serpent Castle next to his original castle, and shifted Freya and the servants over.

The Morning Star area was extraordinary in that the land available was endlessly vast, hence Leylin effortlessly obtained ownership over a large amount of land. As for the construction of the castle, it was made simple with the assistance of spells and numerous giant adamantine puppets following his orders.

A short moment later, Leylin and the guests took their seats in the living room of the new castle. The maid served milk tea and some light refreshments. Freya came out to meet them for a while, but retreated soon after, leaving the space to the three Warlocks.

Leylin fiddled with the cup in his hands, and didn't take the initiative to speak.

He hadn't expected Jeffrey to bring Bevis here. However, since he already knew about the rank 6 bloodline, Jeffrey probably didn't have anything to hide as well. Perhaps he brought Bevis over with the intention of resolving misunderstandings and to remove any grudges that Leylin might harbour.



After all, the Warlock Union had intentionally hidden Bevis' existence for a long time. If not for Leylin's discovery, they might have continued hiding him. He could sense how distanced their relationship was merely from their attitude.

Bevis' attitude towards him was also worth pondering over...

Seeing Leylin behave in this manner, Jeffrey felt somewhat embarrassed. After all, they were in the wrong to begin with, and now could only smooth things over. "His Highness Leylin is the Warlock who has spent the shortest amount of time in advancing to Radiant Moon in the history of bloodline Warlocks. His innate talent is astonishing, and his future is limitless..."

"Hmph..." Bevis spoke coldly, "If not the fact that I sealed myself previously in order to conceal my bloodline, I wouldn't have let this achievement go to someone else..."

Judging by the additional strength of a rank 6 bloodline, Bevis might just have been able to surpass Leylin's record. Hence, it was very normal for him to have complaints, but Leylin felt that it wasn't that ordinary.

'Sounds like he seems to be... dissatisfied with me?' Leylin glanced curiously at Bevis. Today should have been the first time they met, yet he was in a hurry to show off. What was he trying to do?

'Could it be that the prophecy led him to feel like he was about to

face some kind of crisis? Or perhaps it is purely because he's a spoilt brat? Or even more likely, is he trying to make the other Warlocks declare their position through such an attitude?' Leylin suddenly had a premonition that his existence would create problems for Bevis.

Bevis had always been thought of as the last hope of the Warlocks, and one could not imagine the extent to which he was valued. Leylin's appearance at this moment was a forceful attack on his position.

He advanced to Radiant Moon faster than him, and was even younger than him. Even though there were bloodline shackles to consider, he had a history of creating miracles, and it was not as if there was no hope for him to break through them.

Furthermore, even though Leylin's limit was rank 5, he was already a top figure among the Warlocks, and was worth investing in.

Thus, the entire Warlock Union was now more inclined to allocate some resources to him. Even though it was just a tiny portion, it was enough to arouse discontent and vigilance on Bevis' end.

'Afraid that my recent rising will affect your status?' Having had an exceedingly rich experience with power struggles, Leylin immediately sniffed out that something was different.

Still, this possibility left him speechless. Sometimes it was easy to

build animosity. Perhaps it was because of baseless conjectures, or maybe purely because Bevis found Leylin an eyesore.

“Your Highness Bevis’ bloodline is beyond me...” Leylin paused for a moment, then continued, “But as the hope of the Warlock Union, what Your Highness should do now is break through the boundaries of rank 6 as soon as possible, and become a Monarch so you can acquire a larger space for us Warlocks to live in.”

Since Bevis’ attitude was clear to him, there was nothing for Leylin to be courteous about, and he directly returned the ‘compliment’.

Leylin was proud of his age and experience, and this attitude instantly made Bevis turn red with anger. Leylin was practically instructing him like a child!

In fact, Bevis was doing pretty well. Leylin didn’t have to break through his barrier to find, with the help of the A.I. Chip, that he was already a Half Moon Radiant Moon. With the amplification of strength by his bloodline, he could probably match even Offa in battle, albeit with difficulty.

He would probably be ranked second in terms of strength within the Warlock Union.

Such was the terror of a rank 6 bloodline. Any ranks below rank 6 could be slowly cultivated and broken through with the strength of the bloodline. With such a huge asset on his side, it was perfectly fine for Bevis to have a slightly arrogant personality.

Besides, since he had always been taken good care of, he probably didn't have much life experience to speak of. The emotions of rank 6 creatures were far more frightening, and would be a fatal weakness for him.

Hence, after hearing Leylin's provocation, Bevis erupted without the slightest hesitation, "I am here today because I have something to say regarding Your Highness Leylin's suggestion from before!"

"From before?" Leylin looked at Jeffrey, puzzled.

"Your Highness Leylin mentioned it previously. It's about taking action against the powers of the Blazing Flame Monarch. Although I think it's better that we do not take part, we should discuss it!" Jeffrey explained awkwardly.

"Your Highness Leylin, as a Radiant Moon in our Warlock Alliance, how can you enrage a rank 6 being such as the Blazing Flame Monarch because of your personal hatred, without a care about our interests as a whole? Even if it's done in your name, this cannot do. Can you guarantee he won't take out his anger on the other Warlocks?"

Bevis' voice was very loud, and he appeared to speak forcefully and with justice.

"Personal hatred?" Leylin gave a light laugh. "The recent persecution of Warlocks nearly ended our legacy. It was quite recently that he dispatched assassins to end our excellent

bloodlines. The numerous offences he's made are mere personal grudges in your eyes, Your Highness? Don't forget that you too are a Warlock of the Union!"

Having never experienced such mincing words before, Bevis was at a loss for words momentarily.

# Chapter 641 - Exploring Dreamscape

---

Seeing Bevis flush red with embarrassment, Leylin spoke slowly and deliberately. “Our Alliance nurtured Your Highness Bevis in hopes that one day you would be able to lead us to break the Blazing Flame Monarch’s seal. If you don’t have the courage to even come to terms with his powers, I am greatly disappointed...”

“When did I...” Bevis’ face turned red in a flash, yet he couldn’t find the words to retort.

Even Jeffrey, who wasn’t part of the conversation, seemed to be in deep thought.

Just as Leylin said, they had spared no effort in grooming Bevis, and didn’t hesitate to put everything on the line just so that they could assist him in being promoted to rank 6 so that he could face the Magus Monarchs.

However, if Bevis’ performance was so weak, then even if he successfully advanced in the end, whether he would fulfill his promise was another question altogether. After all, if he didn’t even have the courage to go up against their enemy, what would he defend the interests of the Warlocks with?

Leylin did this to make the other rank 5 Radiant Moons plant seeds of distrust in their hearts. What was more crucial was that he was telling the truth, which left no room for Bevis to explain himself. Bevis was gloomy, and practically looked as though he was about to cry because of Leylin’s sinister motive.

The discussion between the two ended on bad terms. When Bevis left, Leylin inwardly stroked his chin as he looked at his retreating back. It probably wouldn't be a bad idea if he made a few more rank 6 bloodline imprints.

---

Inside Dreamscape. Leylin was clad in an entire set of protective gear. Having successfully built new isolation technology, he could now repel a large amount of dreamforce.

Due to the protective gear he was wearing, Leylin appeared very swollen. He was like a humongous human-like stuffed animal trudging through the lush forest with difficulty.

“The environmental changes in Dreamscape are happening too quickly...” After dealing with a gigantic man-eating banyan tree, Leylin stood at the top of a mountain peak. From here, he could see the circular open-air structure of his laboratory not far away.

But now, numerous vines surrounded the laboratory, and there were even a few bright red flowers blossoming on them.

The lush greenery covered the entire area, nearly blocking off the huge laboratory from view.

When Leylin was here for the first time, this area was still a barren plot of land. The second time he came, it turned into a grassland. And now, the landscape had given way to a primitive

jungle.

‘The rate of the change in dreamforce is too high. Even the operational capacity of the A.I. Chip cannot catch up with these undulations. Is this also the reason why there are so many complex changes in Dreamscape?’ Leylin guessed as he gazed at the sky.

The three suns hung in the sky, each shaped differently. The circular sun in the centre had the brightest corona surrounding it, and the blue rays made it even more dazzling.

At this moment, the robotic voice of the A.I. Chip sounded, [Beep! Gathering dreamforce... Vessel 1 has been filled, vessel 2 filled to 76%!]

In front of Leylin were two metal balls hovering in mid-air. Now, one had turned dark-red, and more than half of the other was also filled with dark-red.

“Not bad!” Leylin nodded, and kept the metal ball that had already been completely filled.

“Dreamscape is full of treasures everywhere!” Leylin was greatly satisfied with his harvest of Dreamscape energy.

Such power was more than half a grade higher than bloodline strength, and was even comparable to the legendary power of laws. It was incomparable, and was very attractive to Leylin.



With such a huge Dreamscape waiting for him to explore, it would be extremely silly to tangle with a Warlock like Bevis.

“If I can thoroughly exploit the power of Dreamscape, and use this as the basis to create spells unique to me, then I’m afraid that even a Breaking Dawn Magus will suffer greatly!” Leylin was rather excited. In his previous experiments, he had only found methods that could slightly influence dreamforce. To thoroughly understand clearly the fundamentals of dreamforce and even develop customised spells was a heavy responsibility for him, and there was a long road ahead to get there.

However, with the assistance of the A.I. Chip, there was hope.

He didn’t have to completely understand what constituted dreamforce. That was an impossible task, and anyone who could do so would become the world’s master. What Leylin hoped to do was to slightly utilise the formational laws of dreamforce to allow him to gain a bit of control over it, so that he could make use of dreamforce in his attacks.

As long as he could achieve this, it would be a great spell.

However, dreamforce was ultimately a whole other system of energy, so he still needed a lot of time. Leylin could already feel Dreamscape breaking away gradually, especially after the peak of the two worlds’ connection had passed.

It wouldn’t be long before his laboratory would lose the effects of such a convenient spatial gateway. It was exactly because of this

that it was necessary for Leylin to collect a few items and store them up as reserves while he still could.

‘Dreamscape is different from other worlds. It is everywhere and is connected to the dreams of every intelligent creature. Perhaps, after I understand the workings of dreamforce, I will be able to free myself from the complications of traversing worlds through a laboratory, and instead be connected to this world directly...’

Leylin was looking forward to it. The snippet of understanding he had about dreamforce gave him the confidence to explore further away from the laboratory.

“My puppets have never even been to this place!” Leylin stepped foot on a black plot of land, cautious. Due to the unique rules of dreamforce, even if he used an adamantine puppet or servant or the like, he wouldn’t be able to explore beyond a fixed range from the laboratory.

Whenever they stepped outside of the confinements of this fixed distance, the puppets and servants would automatically lose contact with him, and Leylin had no way around this.

[Warning! Warning! Concentration of dreamforce has exceeded rank 5, and reached top warning level!]

A red box showed up from the A.I. Chip at this moment.

The dark red dreamforce surrounded Leylin, extremely concentrated. It had already materialised in the real world, and was now trying to break through Leylin's protective gear and enter his body.

In a matter of seconds, Leylin felt as though he was at the bottom of the sea, surrounded by a terrifying water pressure everywhere which even made him feel weak and oppressed.

“If it's to such an extent, it's already very dangerous...” Leylin's heart tightened, and he couldn't help but clench his fist tighter. Inside was the Scarlet Earring.

Ding Dong Ding Dong... The cheerful and lighthearted sound of a bell sounded from afar as colourful neon lights flickered, making Leylin stop in his tracks.

He glanced around his surroundings. The dense forest had disappeared who knows when, and a hazy mirage appeared in the distance that seemed like a gigantic amusement park.

‘Have I entered someone else's dream? Or some other dangerous area? These are still too perilous for me, I must leave...’

Leylin treasured his life greatly, and upon seeing these sights that were out of the ordinary, he made plans to retreat.

But at this moment, the A.I. Chip suddenly sent a warning.

---

[Beep! Energy undulations detected ahead, rank 1 creature detected! Heat radiation and chemical reactions comply with the criteria, determined to be the characteristics of the existence of a living being! Probability of existence of an intelligent creature: 52.9%!]

The prompt, which came out of nowhere, dumbfounded Leylin completely.

“Is it the indigenous people of Dreamscape?” Leylin muttered, his pupils burning with fervour, “If it’s them, their understanding of dreamforce will be greater than mine. It would be even better if they have their own path to power, which will save me a lot of time...”

Leylin’s pupils twinkled continuously, and he was clearly weighing his options.

“Although there is danger here, with the isolation provided by the protective gear I’m very certain that I will at least be able to retreat in one piece. The possibility of finding intelligent beings in other places is very low, so this is totally worth fighting for!”

After assessing the pros and cons, a trace of resolve appeared on Leylin’s face and he entered the hazy mirage directly.

Leylin felt his body turn heavy, as though he had jumped into a pool. At the same time, it was just like he had broken through a

world boundary and arrived at another world.

The dreamforce around him was extremely active, and the sights that appeared startled Leylin slightly.

A merry-go-round moved to a lively melody as colourful lights flickered. Not far away was a humongous Ferris wheel, and other recreational facilities, such as a balloon machine and a viking ship, could be seen everywhere.

“Huh? How could it be... Isn’t this a replica of an amusement park from my previous world? No! This layout is centuries older than modern amusement parks. I’ve only seen them in exhibitions that are in fond remembrance of times past...”

Leylin was slightly taken aback. “Were they formed according to my leaked memories, or is this another dream from a similar world?”

Lights twinkled throughout the amusement park as various kinds of machines operated automatically. A humongous clown statue wobbled back and forth, and let out a gentle chuckle.

Not a single living creature was in sight in the entire amusement park, which made Leylin feel a little afraid.

“A.I. Chip! Activate probe, launch navigation!” A blue fluorescent light crept into Leylin’s pupils.

---

[Beep! Navigation activated, searching for life undulations.]

The A.I. Chip replied robotically, and it found a response very quickly.

[Target position: 1900 metres ahead and to the left! Surrounding dreamforce undulations are clear, and it is a level 5 threat.]

“Level 5!” Leylin was mildly hesitant. “It seems to be higher than what I expected, but still within a controllable range!” With a stamp of his feet, his body immediately transformed into a phantom that vanished into thin air.

Whoosh! A ray of white light surged into the distance, the most splendid brilliance. Regardless of what buildings obstructed its way, be they steel or concrete, they were all cut apart, revealing a sleek incision.

The white light seemed to have almost caught up with the fleeing shadow ahead of it in a flash. The shadow grunted and dodged aside, but its arm rubbed against the periphery of the white light. Its sleeve was directly smashed into smithereens, the skin and muscle underneath it cut apart, exposing a violet tissue.

# Chapter 642 - Dreamscape Inhabitants

---

Bzzt bzzt! The white rays that had lost their energy disappeared into the ground. One end was stuck in the floor, and the body of white light was still trembling, revealing the face of a poker card—The seven of spades!

On the white poker card, some traces of purple, as well as the fresh blood spilt by the fleeing figure ahead, was left behind.

Even with a heavily injured arm, the short black shadow seemed exceedingly strong, not stopping for even a second as it bounded into a gigantic pool of coloured balls to the side. The balls flew everywhere, some landing outside and bouncing continuously.

Countless streaks of white whizzed forth, each holding the face of a poker card within. These thin cards seemed to have been bestowed with a terrifying slicing ability, and whether it was the balls or the buildings, everything was cut evenly into halves. The coloured balls fell apart, scattering all over the ground, but there was now no sign of the black figure from before.

A pair of black leather shoes rubbed against the floor, producing crisp sounds.

The poker cards on the walls seemed to be drawn back by some invisible line, and automatically returned to the hands of a person to form a thick deck.

This person wore a well-ironed suit with a hat to complete the

ensemble. Their features were obscured by a white mask, and they seemed similar to a dealer in a casino.

Creak! A robotic sound was transmitted from his body as his head turned a full 180 degrees, aiming at an area beside him. His body swayed wildly as he ran with motions that didn't conform with physics.

He collided with a steel railing, bending it out of shape even as the building crumbled down loudly. White streaks were sent forth once more, and the supporting rods of a tremendous Ferris wheel broke down as a gigantic black figure toppled down.

Amidst the flying dust, the thin little black figure crawled out pitifully. Turning back to glance at the dealer, fear arose in it as it began to run even faster.

Boom! All of a sudden, it crashed into a human body in front. This was someone in white protective attire, with a bloated form. A handsome face could be seen through the transparent glass.

“kakdgmoagkmlamgal...” The thin black figure said something hastily, but Leylin could not understand it at all. However, his soul force picked up a feeling in the general vein of ‘The thing behind is dangerous. Run!’

“Don't worry, little fellow!” Leylin gazed at this intelligent being in front of him. It was similar to a human, with four slim limbs and a head on top. It looked like a human child, only that its entire being was black, and it was impossible to tell its features apart. It



was wearing clothing made of a coarse sackcloth.

One other difference between it and humans was the fine purple patterns on its body. They were like tattoos, but emanated a demonic luster.

There was a wound on its arm, revealing purple musculature inside. Large amounts of dreamforce gathered around this wound, allowing it to recover.

Leylin's pupils shrank as he patted the head of the little creature, the peaceable undulations he emitted allowing it to calm down.

Creak! The figure that looked like a casino dealer from Leylin's previous world appeared before the two, the white mask still covering its face.

As it noticed the dealer, Leylin felt the little fellow next to him grabbing onto his clothes tightly, the uneasiness it was feeling peaking.

"Has he been chasing after you?" Leylin turned around, and then laughed involuntarily, "I forgot that we can't communicate!"

A few poker cards whizzed towards him, and Leylin dodged them easily.

"Fire!" He indifferently chanted a word. Though most of the laws in Dreamscape were different from those in other worlds, magic

could still be used in other worlds. It was just a matter of how effective it would be.

A bundle of crimson flames engulfed the dealer opposite him, the tongues of fire spreading everywhere.

The little fellow beside him widened its eyes, evidently not expecting Leylin to be so powerful. Meanwhile, however, Leylin frowned.

“A rank 4 spell from the Magus World can only do so little in Dreamscape?”

The paths followed by the Magus World could be used in many worlds, but their effectiveness would vary. Evidently, the suppression caused by Dreamscape was at the limit. Of course, the common power here was dreamforce. Powers from foreign places would not have an advantage.

A black humanoid figure slowly walked out of the flames. Swathes of fiery tongues devoured the dealer's black suit, where the wounds festered and even caused terrifying injuries on its body. However, there was no emotion in its eyes.

“Another Conscient that has manifested... How troublesome!” Leylin's brows furrowed, the Scarlet Earring shooting out a blood moon that crashed into the opponent's poker cards.

Buzz! The light trembled, and the poker cards were separated

into two. The crescent of scarlet light brought with it the energy of high-grade magic equipment as it swiped across the opponent's neck.

The dealer's body froze for a second, and then rumbled in continuous explosions.

"Let's go!" Knowing the opponent would not fall so easily, Leylin took hold of the little fellow's hand beside him and began to run at a rapid pace.

Rumble! Some red and white powder that Leylin had scattered suddenly fused, forming a complicated energy attack that caused the area behind him to be submerged in a sea of energy.

The scenery on both sides quickly disappeared behind them, and with Leylin's terrifying speed, he had brought the little fellow and fled from the scope of the theme park in the blink of an eye, appearing within a primitive forest outside.

Upon reaching this place, he could sense from the little fellow's breathing and pulse that it had regained its calm.

"Kalfgmaklmgalk!" The little fellow struggled and exclaimed.

"I forgot we can't communicate!" Leylin laughed, tapping a finger on the little fellow's head and sending a strand of soul force in.

Communication through soul force transcended language. With Leylin's current knowledge of the soul, he could grow proficient in a language in an instant.

"It's safe here now..." The little fellow repeated, and Leylin could now understand what it was saying.

"Who are you? You're amazing! How did you win against those monsters?" It gazed at Leylin, eyes sparkling with worship.

"Those monsters? Are there a lot of them?" Leylin asked.

Noticing that the little fellow still seemed slightly weak, he found level ground and passed over biscuits, white bread and the like over to it. It received the items with suspicion, first smelling them with curiosity and, as if it had seen some treasures, gnawing at them carefully.

What surprised Leylin was that it only consumed a small portion of the food and kept the rest well. Seeing what it was doing, Leylin nodded inwardly, now having a better understanding of the scarcity of food in Dreamscape.

Leylin did not waste any time as the little fellow ate. The A.I. Chip had constantly been sounding out as it scanned all the physiological characteristics of it, sampling it. The priority was the purple patterns on its body.

These patterns seemed to be naturally formed, possessing the

ability to attract dreamforce. The wounds on its arms had already completely recovered, leaving behind a mere scar.

“Thank you for your this, Mister. You must be very wealthy.” The little fellow seemed rather curious about Leylin, especially regarding his protective gear and the lack of patterns on his skin.

“Wealthy? Perhaps,” Leylin chuckled, “What’s your name?”

“Gillian, Mister, my name is Gillian,” the little fellow answered.

Leylin laughed as he asked another question, “Alright. Well then, can you tell me what happened just now?”

Though Gillian was doubtful of Leylin’s question, perhaps Leylin’s smile had allowed her to lower her guard. It might have been some sort of bewitching spell which caused her to disclose all that she knew involuntarily.

---

After a long while, maybe tired after a day of running for her life, Gillian wrapped herself in Leylin’s blanket and fell asleep. In the meanwhile, Leylin looked to be deep in thought.

‘Is this what Dreamscape is about? Preposterous, bizarre, and even somewhat terrifying...’

Gillian said she was an inhabitant of Dreamscape. She'd been fleeing for her life along with her family since birth. It seemed like the area was filled with dangers, and even if they found a place to live in peacefully for a few years, it would still meet the ultimate destiny of being destroyed.

This seemed to be a common situation. The land and buildings had been wrecked in a night and her elders, accustomed to this as they were, continued their journey since they had been forced away from their home.

Based on what Gillian said, the theme park from before was a 'node'.

In Dreamscape, situations like these were common and nodes could appear at anytime, engulfing the surrounding people.

The items and buildings within were very strange. There were some they knew of, and some that were odd to the extreme. There might even be all sorts of living creatures.

Some of Gillian's elders had gathered immense benefits from the nodes, but others had died within. For them, the nodes in Dreamscape were places where risk met reward.

A node like this where a terrifying monster appeared was the most terrifying of all, and Gillian had been unlucky enough to be swept in. If not for Leylin's help, she probably would have wound up dead.

‘Based on what Gillian said, her race is the bottom-most stratum of Dreamscape... She hasn’t even left this region before...’

# Chapter 643 - Help And Discovery

---

Leylin was slightly disappointed after listening to Gillian's story. It would be excessive of him to expect any good power system or training method from such a weak race.

‘However, they are the natives after all. There should be some valuable items or information...’ Leylin stroked his chin.

‘Furthermore, Dreamscape can't be judged with common sense. Perhaps the next time I come, she'll have turned into a terrifying existence. Of course the chances of that are so meagre they're negligible, but even if she's more likely to die instead there's some hope...’

“No... No... Don't go...” Gillian seemed to be restless in her dreams, her hands clutching the blanket and her brows deeply furrowed. Her eyeballs were rolling around under her eyelids, and she looked miserable and pitiful.

“DON'T LEAVE ME... Hah... Hah, it was a dream...” She suddenly sat up, looking bewildered. It was only after she saw the bonfire blazing constantly that she huffed out a long breath.

“Nightmares?” Leylin laughed and pushed a piece of roast meat in front of her. Grease and roast meat combined to present the most tantalising of scents, one that caused Gillian to swallow.

“This is... for me?” Gillian's stomach growled, much to her embarrassment, but she still questioned in disbelief.



“Of course!” Leylin’s smile was very gentle. There had not been any unhappiness between them, and was giving her roast meat and bread considered a waste? This bit was nothing at all to Leylin, so he obviously wouldn’t mind being gentle and kind.

Experience told him that such a pretence was very effective in concealing him in an unfamiliar environment. On top of that, Leylin didn’t mind showing benevolence to stray cats and dogs.

“Thank– Thank you!” Gillian spoke in a low voice, and immediately grabbed the meat and began to bite at it ravenously. Halfway through, she suddenly sounded like she was choked with emotion and began to sob.

“There’s no hurry, I still have a lot of food. Finish eating first, then I’ll bring you to your companions.” Leylin understood what she was feeling very well. He comforted her slowly, and the girl eventually calmed down.

---

Ka-cha! Withered branches snapped when stepped on. Leylin and Gillian carefully skirted the theme park, pushing through the primitive forest.

“Those terrifying monsters never leave the scope of the node. As long as we don’t go there, there shouldn’t be any problems...” Gillian was wearing the hunting attire that Leylin had given her, her cleaned face revealing a vigorous spirit that made her seem pretty.

“What’s truly scary in Dreamscape are the wanderers and masters! They can cause tempests to descend at any time, destroying homes and crops, resulting in massive casualties on our end...”

Her voice became low. “If not for them looking down on us and treating us like ants, we would probably have all died long ago...”

At this point, she gazed at Leylin. From what she could remember, the methods Leylin used were very similar to those employed by the masters.

“No need to worry, I’m not anything like that. I’ve only just studied some other methods. Haven’t any of you met with other intellectual lifeforms and interacted with them before?” In front of Gillian, Leylin did not conceal his identity as a foreigner.

“Yes! It’s not just in the forest, but even in the nodes. There are existences that we can communicate with, but they seldom appear. Normally it’s just monsters that only know how to kill.

Gillian tilted her head as she thought it over, “I heard from Father that long, long ago, a giant castle appeared at a node. An old grandpa with a white beard lived inside, and he was like the masters with the ability to control lightning and fire. He even passed down methods to manipulate these powers to Uncle Morin...”

“Hm?” Leylin’s interest was aroused, for this sounded quite similar to a Magus, “And then?”

“And then....” Gillian’s eyes grew dazed, “After grasping the tremendous power, he said he would take us away from the forest to see the outside world... and then, he disappeared... never to return...”

“What a sad story... Oh, my apologies!” Leylin had nothing to say in response to that.

“It’s nothing!” Gillian seemed rather strong, and after seeing a sign by the road, she even cheered excitedly, “We’re quite close to our camp!”

Whizz! A bone arrow landed in front of Leylin, the arrow’s feathers still shaking.

“Who is it?” A deep voice sounded from the forest. Leylin laughed, not answering. He had actually noticed the other party long ago, but it was obviously better for Gillian to deal with him.

“Uncle Mark! It’s Gillian!” She happily yelled into the depths of the forest.

“Little Gillian!” The trees on the opposite end began to shake, revealing a middle-aged burly man with sideburns. This man, who

was clothed in animal hide, spoke out, “I heard that you’d fallen into a node. I thought you’d died! Do you know how much I cried for you...”

“Uncle Mark!” Gillian went forward and hugged him tightly, “I’m sorry for making you worry! Here, let me introduce you. This is Mister Leylin who rescued me from the node!”

Gillian pulled at Mark’s hands and dragged him before Leylin. Evidently, the lack of purple patterns on Leylin’s skin left the man on guard.

Leylin chuckled, not minding at all. It was fine as long as he found the place. After all, given his abilities, could the natives even block his attacks?

Of course, Leylin did not dare overstep his boundaries due to the mysteries of Dreamscape. It was best not to use violence when it could interfere with him obtaining any harvests.

After all, this was a world filled with the unknown. The warped reality and complexities in here far exceeded his expectations.

Perhaps the next time he came here, these natives would have undergone a tremendous change. If he were to invest some effort here and strike up a good relationship with them, it would be worth it in the future.

What happened next was obvious. After Leylin displayed his kind

intent, and with Gillian's vouching for him, Mark brought Leylin to their camp.

Leylin took a look around. This was evidently a temporary base, with many wooden piles that had been cut down and were yet to be tidied up in the surroundings.

At the back of the camp were traces of a large fire, as well as a small plot with vegetables and the like.

'These farming methods are rather ancient.' Leylin shook his head, but he knew this was inevitable. These natives could find the next time they woke up that their land had lost all fertility, turning into an arid desert, a forest, a river, or even a volcano. There was no need for more effort than this.

Such simplicity extended even to the buildings. A wooden house was made with a few trees put together. Many of the natives chose to rest out in the open or found a hole in a tree. Leylin felt that the tent he had brought along could be considered a palace compared to this.

In the simple and crude wooden house, Leylin met Gillian's father. He seemed like a haggard middle-aged man, hard work over a long period of time making him look as if he already had one foot in the grave.

"Cough cough... thank you, guest from distant lands! Gillian is my everything. I really don't know what I can do to show you my gratitude. There's this food as well... this..."

The middle-aged man surveyed the white bread, biscuits and other food piled in front of him, a flush rising on his face. Such first-rate food was something he could not normally enjoy.

“Please don’t mind it! Gillian is a very lovable girl. Nobody would want to watch her come in harm’s way!” Leylin smiled gently.

“Please forgive my bluntness, but based on what Gillian has said, you... are a Magus?” The man coughed for a while before asking suddenly.

“Yes!” Leylin’s astonishment was outweighed only by his curiosity, “Have you seen a Magus before? Where did you make contact with them?”

“Cough cough... It was Morin who told me this...” The flush on the middle-aged man became even more serious, to the point that Leylin sensed that the fires of his life were about to be extinguished.

“Morin was once viewed favourably by a Magus and studied under him for a period of time. We were told many epic stories, but unfortunately...” Leylin had heard about what happened after from Gillian before.

“May I know if the node where the castle was still exists?” Leylin was rather curious about his kind.

“No. On a certain day, the entire castle and the node completely disappeared. If not for Morin spending the night elsewhere that day, I’m afraid...”

The man shook his head, and seemed to think of something. Shivering uncontrollably, he produced a portion of animal hide and respectfully placed it in front of Leylin.

“This is what Morin left for me. Though I can’t understand it, it’s definitely got to do with the Magus. Take this gift as my thanks!”

“This...” After taking the skin, Leylin’s pupils suddenly shrank.

Atop the animal hide were some brown designs and runes. It was no wonder that the man couldn’t understand it; the real information was concealed by spiritual force within the hide.

[Beep! Discovered data interface. Information being transmitted!]

The A.I. Chip’s voice was transmitted as well, and a look of glee appeared on Leylin’s face.

‘I am Morin, what Mentor calls an inhabitant of Dreamscape. If you see this information, please treat my clan members well. What you will see next is the path that Mentor has come up with after

spending decades studying my body — A Magus...’

The information on the animal hide gave rise to a look of elation on Leylin’s face.



# Chapter 644 - Exchange And Consternation

---

‘A Magus coincidentally chancing upon Dreamscape who was enchanted by the bizarre environment here and took in an inhabitant as his acolyte...’ Leylin secretly made a guess about what happened at that time.

‘To adapt to this environment, he even specifically targeted dreamforce and the acolyte’s vitality, developing some kind of customised meditation technique and spells...

‘And due to some external factors which could not be resisted, the castle of this Magus had turned into ashes overnight and that acolyte disappeared soon after...’

That should’ve been the gist of it. Leylin wasn’t all that interested in investigating the incident. As long as he gained information, this expedition into Dreamscape would be considered a success.

‘That Magus that was stranded here was at least a Breaking Dawn, and might even been a higher existence that comprehended laws...’ The more he studied the information on hand, the more Leylin grew to admire that Magus.

The A.I. Chip’s assistance was why he could make an analysis of dreamforce relatively effortlessly. However, other Magi did not have such convenience on hand, and this one had to have slowly worked out and perfected an energy system that suited Dreamscape using his own experiences.

To Leylin, obtaining this system of dreamforce was more important than anything else. The uses for it would aid him greatly.

“Thank you so much, this information is very important to me!” Leylin put away the animal skin with a cautious expression, interrupting the hesitant speech of the middle-aged man opposite him, “I have important matters and there’s always great danger beside me. I’m afraid I cannot take reciprocate your kindness enough. These two documents contain methods to obtain strength. I hope you will accept them!”

Light shone in Leylin’s hands and two rolled documents emerged. These were methods for the cultivation of knighthood and magic. Although each only contained a basic portion, that was already enough for these inhabitants.

The steps for cultivation were very easy to follow. Leylin even wrote it down in their language so that they could understand it.

“This... truly...” The middle-aged man looked to be taken back by surprise, but he still accepted the two gifts. After all, these things Leylin was giving him were way too important for his tribe.

This left Leylin slightly doubtful. Why hadn’t that Morin spread the power system when he obtained it? Once he mulled over it, he thought it might be because the Magus left him with strict orders at that time. Either way, he had already disappeared, and this would probably remain a riddle.

Leylin's eyes sparkled upon seeing his gift being accepted, and he said with a smile. "I actually have more diverse types of food as well. I was thinking of a trade... are you interested?"

"Trade? Of what sort?" The middle-aged man was a little doubtful. What would this Magus from a world rich with products need?

"Various kinds of specimens, be they plants or animals. Also anything of unknown purpose. You can sell it all to me, and I'll purchase them with food." Leylin spoke without even blinking his eyes. He had many spatial artifacts with him anyway, and he'd grown into the habit of bringing piles of rations with him whenever he went out. As such, his supplies were extremely abundant. Moreover, even if there wasn't enough, he would have to make a trip home at the worst.

With the rich resources in the Magus World, who would be afraid of a lack of food?

"Specimens? That Sir from last time asked for the same thing as well... Please rest assured, I will definitely fulfil this request of yours!" The middle-aged man patted his chest as he made the guarantee.

"Then I'll be here waiting for good news." Leylin smiled faintly. He was a single person, with only so much time and energy. Matters like gathering ordinary specimens were best left to the inhabitants.

Moreover, the animal skin they'd given him had inspired him greatly as well, giving him hope that there were even stranger things on their hands.

Food was abundant in the Magus World, but it was scarce here. This gave Leylin a bargaining chip, and for the sake of his benefits Leylin didn't mind becoming an unscrupulous businessman. Compared to everything he had invested, those gains would only be insignificant.

Once this news was announced, the entirety of the temporary camp went wild.

Large amounts of plants, animal tissues, and even rocks were sent to Leylin. He welcomed it all; as long as it was a specimen he hadn't seen before he would give them a portion of food for it. Because they lacked manpower, even Gillian and her father were hired specifically to do this work. To these inhabitants, Leylin was a fool who used precious food to exchange for these items.

Unfortunately for Leylin, this kind of opportunity to make unrestrained purchases was quite rare. Given that the value of all this food added up wasn't even worth a few magic crystals, he was simply making a huge profit.

For now, both parties were very satisfied.

---

“Uncle Leylin, take a look look at this!” Gillian passed Leylin some bizarre flesh that looked like numerous eyeballs bound together, “I’ve never seen this thing before!”

“Hmm...” Leylin tried to analyse this bizarre material, a blue glow being emitted from his eyes.

[Detected unknown article, unable to scan!]

The A.I. Chip immediately responded.

“Where did you find this?” Leylin glanced at the inhabitant behind Gillian. It was a youth, the purple pattern on whose forehead formed an odd flower bud-like shape.

When Leylin’s gaze swept over him, the youth grew very tense, even beginning to stammer. “Near... Near the new node!”

“This is pretty good! You can get three pounds of black bread for it, or anything else of equal worth.” The youth immediately laughed when Leylin nodded. Something that he’d casually picked up already had such value, it was simply a giveaway.

Leylin casually took the item from Gillian’s hands and stowed it away. Truth be told, this bit of expense was nothing at all to him. Even if the items they handed over was worth nothing much to him, as long as Leylin hadn’t seen them before he would basically

accept it.

With such a high rate of accumulation, it was a short period of time before Leylin effectively controlled the surrounding geological and botanical specimens.

Plenty of strange, unknown items were now in Leylin's possession. Although most of it was junk, as long as even one bit had value he would profit.

"Uncle Leylin, the number of people is much smaller today!" Gillian came before Leylin, both eyes turning round and round. Her thoughts were indecipherable.

"That's obvious of course. I already have the basic specimens with me, and specimens from distant areas require time to collect..." On the contrary, Leylin had already guessed this long ago. He had the A.I. Chip after all. As long as things were already stored in his database, he wouldn't need a second copy.

"That... Uncle Leylin..." Gillian also had a hesitant look.

"I know what you want to say, little Gillian!" Leylin stroked Gillian's head, "But it's very dangerous beside Uncle, and also very troublesome. If you follow me, it'll be a disturbance..."

Watching Gillian lower her head, Leylin comforted her again with a laugh, "Hasn't your father found a batch of youths, preparing to pass down what I've taught him? You can go and

learn as well...

“Also, I’m preparing to make a trip back home. I’ll come back in a few days. You can hoard all the items you receive for now, and I’ll bring even more food and supplies next time...” Leylin sent Gillian away and began checking the day’s gains.

After the botanical and mineral specimens were sterilised, they were numbered by the A.I. Chip and kept away properly under their own categories in his waist pouch.

The resources in the Warlock Union were very abundant, and a Radiant Moon like Leylin could deploy some of them as long as he didn’t touch the bottom line. He’d found himself a magic equipment pouch, whose capacity greatly exceeded his original storage pouch.

Even so, his food reserves were almost all used up. After all, he’d stored it with only himself in mind, and it was already a big thing for it to have lasted all this while.

‘In fact, if not for the restrictions on astral gates, trading with other worlds would be the best!’ Leylin’s eyes sparkled, and he sighed. ‘Trading, then colonisation, followed by complete dominance! Although other worlds have differences in power systems and other aspects, they still follow this principle. Of course, Dreamscape is different. This world is too strange, and any investment can cause us to lose everything...’

The next day, he bid farewell to Gillian and the inhabitants at the

temporary camp. Loaded with specimens and strange items, Leylin embarked on a journey back home.

“Judging from the laboratory’s energy waves, this space-time-travel can still be supported for a period of time. I’ll have just enough time to get ahold of all the surrounding specimens and strange items littered throughout this camp!”

Leylin stroked his chin, “Moreover, that Gillian seemed to be leaning towards me. So long as I tempt her a little more, she will enter the Magus world willingly. At the same time, I could secretly capture some inhabitants, which would guarantee enough specimens in the future...”

The current Leylin was taking precautions in case he couldn’t use his astral lab anymore.

“However, no matter what, the Magus’ message on the animal skin is already a great harvest!” Leylin smiled in satisfaction.

[Warning! Warning! Astral laboratory under attack.  
Activating rank 1 runes, stored energy at 34.7%!]

At this moment, the A.I. Chip flashed a red warning, immediately making Leylin anxious.



# Chapter 645 - Spider And Breakage

---

After all, if the astral laboratory was destroyed, not only would he lose his channel to Dreamscape, he would be trapped here, forever.

“Impossible! I set up a concealing technique and spell formation before leaving. I even left behind...”

Leylin’s mind began to work rapidly. He was confident in his setup, but the warning from the A.I. Chip definitely wasn’t false.

‘Could it be some kind of unique creature that can see through my illusory spell formation? Or... is it demons?’ The possibility instantly turned Leylin gloomy. He suddenly sped up, coming to the area where his laboratory was...

But the scene that came into his vision made Leylin’s eyes widen gradually. “This...”

In his sight was a huge spider the size of a tall mountain, spitting out threads that wrapped up the entire laboratory.

The runes around the laboratory flickered continuously, rippling with a dazzling lustre. The defensive layer and spider web depleted each other.

On the spider’s abdomens were large numbers of patterns, coming together to form a distorted male face. A whimpering

sound echoed from its wide open maw.

[Warning! Warning! Formation genie energy reserves at less than 10%, approaching critical value. Immediate countermeasures recommended!]

the A.I. Chip's red warning window shot out again.

“Is it possible to scan the opponent?” Leylin quickly asked.

[Mission established, attempting to scan. Beginning to break through opponent's force field.]

Chik Chik! Even as the A.I. Chip sounded out mechanically, the huge spider in mid-air seemed to be provoked by something. Its compound eyes turned, aiming directly at Leylin.

A forceful scan would release a feeling of a malicious invasion. It was likely to trigger the opponent's hatred, something Leylin expected long ago.

The male face on the spider's abdomen let out a sob, and terrifying sound waves swept past the area where Leylin was, tearing off the topsoil to reveal the thick bedrock.

Leylin had taken precautions the moment he commanded the A.I. Chip to scan. His body was covered in a layer of Kemoyin Scales, and a few blood-red shields emerged.

Ka-cha! Ka-cha! The blood-red shields and the sound waves came into contact, and it seemed to be unable to defend for much longer. Many cracks emerged on the surface of the shields, and they soon shattered.

The sound waves swept across Leylin, causing intense pain to be transmitted from his Kemoyin Scales.

“Argh... This power!” Weirdly enough, a hint of happiness emerged in Leylin’s eyes. At the very least, he could confirm through this attack that his opponent had not comprehended laws. The opponent was not a regulatory existence. This was more important than anything else.

If not, he could only have turned around and fled, abandoning the laboratory and wandering alone in Dreamscape.

[Beep! Target has resisted scanning, not all data has been obtained. Display what is available?]

the A.I. Chip asked mechanically.

Of course, Leylin assented unhesitantly. The A.I. Chip responded

immediately, projecting a data panel with many incomplete fields before him.

[Beep! Unknown Creature. Power: 200+, Agility: 100+, Vitality: Not enough information, Spiritual Force: 2000+ (estimate), Abilities: 1, Detection: Has a keen perceptivity towards the energy waves in its territory, 2, unknown... 3, unknown...]

‘That Detection ability should be why the opponent could discover the laboratory in spite of my meticulous concealment.’ Leylin sighed. He was reminded of the saying, ‘Man proposes, God disposes.’

He had observed this area for a long time. Only after ensuring that there weren’t any terrifying creatures did he go out to explore with peace of mind. He hadn’t expected that such a terrifying monster would be attracted when he was out.

‘The opponent is a rank 6 creature at most, there’s still a chance!’ Leylin’s figure twinkled endlessly as he dodged the snow-white spider web in mid-air. His thoughts were running endlessly.

Of course, the beings of Dreamscape did not follow the Magus World’s rankings. Because of the inherent uncertainty of dreamforce, their rankings were very vague.

But through the A.I. Chip’s detection and his own observations,

Leylin could already confirm that the opponent was at least a rank 6 creature, ferocious and powerful/

‘These kinds of creatures all occupy their own territories normally. Why did it come out for no reason?’ Leylin immediately shook his head even as this thought came to mind, ‘I’m too foolish! This is Dreamscape, why would it follow such rules?’

Right at this moment, the abdomen of the spider in mid-air suddenly bloated as it let out a cry, expanding and lastly exploding! Large quantities of densely packed spiders fell from the sky like raindrops. A translucent thread at all their tails connected them to the main body.

An even finer radiance flashed across these closely packed threads.

Terrifying amounts of dreamforce condensed with a bang, converging on that man’s distorted face as he let out a horrifying growl in the sky. “kdalkgmalk!”

Terrifying dreamforce crashed down on Leylin’s body, causing the defensive suit to begin cracking inch by inch.

“So powerful! Is this the power of rank 6?” As Leylin mumbled, a blood-red radiance burst out from his body. The power from his point mass had concentrated to an extreme as it boosted a spell, resulting in a new transformation.

“Radiant Moon Arcane Art— Kemoyin Transformation!”

Along with a terrifying hiss, an enormous serpent over a hundred thousand metres long suddenly appeared in the sky. The large bones at the top of its head formed something like a crown, the smooth and elegant lines of its scales emitting the aura of nobility.

This was the ruler of the ancient Giant Kemoyin Serpents— the rank 5 Kemoyin Emperor!

Whoosh! A huge phantom flashed across the sky. The Kemoyin Emperor suddenly flung its tail out, which struck the face in the sky and caused it to explode. Mysterious petrifying light short from the amber pupils that were like Morning Stars.

Many of the tiny spiders were petrified right in mid-air, turning into rocks and falling down.

“Innate skill— Devour!” Along with Leylin’s soul force, the Kemoyin Emperor suddenly widened its serpent’s jaw and a big black hole formed faintly before him.

The spider web in the sky was directly broken, disappearing into the terrifying black hole with the surrounding rocks, branches, and even light itself.

“Get out!” Accompanying Leylin’s explosive shout, the enormous serpent suddenly crashed into the large spider in the sky.

With a mountain-cracking, space-shattering rumble, terrifying shockwaves of air swept out in all directions. The large spider that was hovering in front of the laboratory was struck some distance away.

Chik chik! This kind of attack obviously enraged the spider. With ear-piercing yells, a few blades of dark light suddenly burst forth, leaving deep scars on the Kemoyin Emperor's body.

Large scales fell down as blood splashed in all directions. Yet, under the effect of the innate Devour skill, the serpent recovered very quickly.

A poof sounded as countless black streams of air gathered together, restoring Leylin's true body. There was an unusual blush on his face as numerous black flames formed on his body making him resemble a demonic phoenix.

“Soaring Demonic Phoenix!” Together with an exalted phoenix cry, the blackfire phoenix tore open the layers of webbing that had wrapped around the laboratory and Leylin dashed inside.

“Go!” Various potions were thrown out from Leylin's body, forming a terrifying combination spell. It mixed with attacks from the Scarlet Earring, and they drowned the enormous spider that was rushing over.

He did not even look at the outcome of that, suddenly closing the door of the laboratory.

Bang! When he opened it again, the surroundings of the laboratory had already transformed into the scene of an ancient castle.

“I’m back!” Leylin murmured. His expression suddenly changed and a great amount of dark red dreamforce shrouded his body, forming the phantom of a huge spider.

“Indeed. I still can’t resist the attack of a rank 6 creature...” He mumbled with a bitter smile on his face. Suddenly, his expression showed another drastic change.

Rumble! Glaring blue lightning bounced around the surroundings of the laboratory, even emerging in Dreamscape. A huge red spider spat out a large amount of thread from the other side that seemed to stretch across the void. With his Astral Vision, Leylin saw a large amount of thread twisting on top of the laboratory, aiming to drag it back into Dreamscape.

“No! If this goes on, no matter whether the laboratory is dragged over there or that thing gets access to the channel leading here, it isn’t going to be something I wish to see.” A rare look of hesitation emerged on Leylin’s face, but ultimately dissolved into resolution. “I need to break the connection!”

Leylin had studied this space-switching of the laboratory extensively. Although he hadn’t had many results, he’d still deduced how to stop this phenomenon.

Leylin’s right hand dropped a little powerlessly. “A.I. Chip,



command the formation genie to activate self-destruct procedures!”

[Beep! Authority confirmed, enforcing command.]

Without human thoughts, the A.I. Chip only carried out his orders mechanically. As it sounded out, a slightly dark red gas emerged from the floor of the lab.

The dark red dreamforce grew more concentrated as it converged, eventually even forming a layer of dark red flames.

With a series of bangs, a great amount of webbing melted and broke apart. Even the laboratory itself began to melt slowly.

Chik Chik Chi... Leylin felt like he could hear the furious growls of the spider all the way from the distant Dreamscape.

The loud sound was originally very intense, but is soon softened as it gradually disappeared. The dark red flames then extinguished, leaving a big black hole where the laboratory had originally stood. It had disappeared without a trace.

# Chapter 646 - Dreamscape Alteration

---

“Dreamscape...” Leylin sighed. He could sense that the unusual area that connected two spaces had vanished. From hereon, this place would completely lose its link with Dreamscape.

Though he had expected this day to come, Leylin was still dejected.

“This is only a temporary farewell; Dreamscape, Gillian...”

With large amounts of dreamforce and valuable information at hand, Leylin was confident that he could enter Dreamscape on his own. However, that would require a lot of research and experiments. He would not be able to make contact with Dreamscape in the near future, but he would eventually establish a connection between the two sides using his own strength, then return there.

“What a pity...” Leylin’s eyes showed sadness within. With how things were, he could’ve continued interacting with Dreamscape, getting even more profits.

Still, Leylin would not regret his decision. After being discovered by a rank 6 creature, keeping a spatial node around was just irresponsible towards his own safety.

That gigantic spider had almost descended into the Magus World. If it attracted even more high-ranked existences, Leylin would be left with no option but death. It was worth losing this channel.

“Thankfully, most of the specimens and research materials from those surroundings are with me. Most important is the dreamforce system I obtained from the natives, and the runic structures on their bodies...”

Leylin’s eyes flashed as he pondered.

“With all this, I’m more confident in deducing a dreamforce spell that’s suited to me. I can use it as a fatal secret attack...”

Leylin had experienced the mysteriousness of dreamforce himself. It was a powerful force that was comparable to Laws, and it could even suppress them. Even existences at or above rank 6 would be troubled by it.

Hence, a spell that relied on dreamforce would be a terrifying issue for many rank 6 Magi, even though he himself was at rank 5.

‘The information I got only details the usage of low-ranked dreamforce, and is specifically targeted at the natives. I’ll still need a lot of time to alter it to construct a rank 5 spell model...’ Leylin touched his chin.

At this moment, he suddenly jerked. Large amounts of dark red gas condensed to form various faces and spiders that crawled on his clothing.

“Boo hoo...” Wails crawled into Leylin’s eardrums, causing him

to go deathly pale.

“Go away!” His eyes immediately turned into amber pupils, a terrifying phantom of a Kemoyin Emperor appearing behind him.

Boom! Boom! Crackle! Large numbers of faces exploded, but the rest persevered on as they surrounded Leylin’s body.

“Dreamforce! It’s from the injury!” Leylin’s expression darkened.

The gigantic spider was a rank 6 existence after all. Leylin had been extremely lucky to catch the spider off guard and enter the laboratory, but he had suffered an injury while doing so. Even though he’d devoured matter to make up for the loss in life energy, the dreamforce from the attack still lingered on.

The mysteriousness of dreamforce was something Leylin knew quite well. If not for him having done some research in the area and producing some antibodies, the backlash would not be so meagre.

‘It looks I need to solve the issue with my body before I deduce any new spells!’ Leylin laughed wryly, a dense layer of black air covering the surrounding masks and spider figures.

---

A few months later, within a laboratory.

White fog at boiling temperature caused a wave of hot air. Crimson light reflected off the wall, forming a projection of something like fire. In the middle of the laboratory, Leylin sat within a gigantic red pool, his eyes closed as if in thought.

Within this red pool, one could see a lustrous black ink-like fluid constantly oozing out from Leylin's pores.

After leaving his body, the black ink quickly dispersed and contaminated a large region. Faint sounds of wails were emitted from it.

Skree—! A large phoenix phantom appeared above the red pool, spreading its two flaming wings over it as scarlet flames arose.

“Wooh wooh...” The cries grew even more mournful as the black ink gradually became fainter within the red flames. It even began to evaporate, returning the pool to its original colour.

A few hours later, there was even more steam in the laboratory, practically becoming a fog that shrouded the entire area.

Within the scarlet pool, the thin threads of black that seeped out from Leylin's pores gradually turned brown, weakening completely.

“Malicious intent and hatred from a foreign world is truly difficult to deal with...” Leylin muttered to himself, grabbing at the towel on his face as he gazed at the red pool.

The injuries caused by the gigantic rank 6 spider in Dreamscape had been very serious. It took till now for the harm to be somewhat dealt with.

“Thankfully, that annoying resent has been completely expelled. All that’s left is pure dreamforce, which I have other uses for.” Leylin changed out of his loose robes and arrived at the other end of the laboratory.

[Beep! Retinal scanning passed. Brain waves verified. Unlocked through soul force. Opening.]

With the A.I. Chip’s robotic voice sounding, a wall section opened up to a crevice. The walls on both sides automatically withdrew, revealing a large, glossy door.

One could see two rows of shelves lined with precious materials upon entering, intricate runes carved into the wood like the most delicate of artwork.

Thud! The large door closed automatically, causing the light to dim. Once Leylin grew accustomed to it, he could see the many items on the shelves flickering with a dark red lustre.

Atop the shelves were a few leaves kept in glass bottles, as well as ores and the like.

“Thankfully, with the other dreamforce I collected before and the dreamforce the items themselves have, they can stay in this world for a large period of time...”

Leylin was very pleased. This was his dream laboratory, in which the A.I. Chip took care of central administration. The defensive measures here were especially strict. Most of the things he had obtained from Dreamscape previously were placed here.

‘I’ve finally expelled all the malicious intent from Dreamscape. If not, I wouldn’t dare meet Freya!’ Leylin went past the shelves and came before a black metallic instrument. Seeing the results of the scans, he heaved a sigh of relief.

He had antibodies against dreamforce, and was a rank 5 Radiant Moon Warlock. The dreamforce in the attack before had merely caused him some troubles. However, things were different for Freya. She was still a rank 3 Warlock, and being contaminated by even a bit of dreamforce could have a terrifying effect on her.

Hence, before he was certain he had completely rid himself of all dreamforce, Leylin hadn’t dared return to the castle. He’d stayed here instead. It was only now that the malicious intent that Leylin had on his body was completely expelled.

Leylin gazed at his arm. The skin now had a dense layer of red around it, filled with a type of energy.

This was not bloodline energy. It was the dreamforce that had

been purified after the ill intent was eliminated.

“Great timing! I’d already determined that I’d need to alter my body to employ dreamforce. This dense dreamforce from a rank 6 being can help me build my foundations!” Leylin’s eyes flashed with intelligence as he commanded, “A.I. Chip, begin!”

The A.I. Chip’s robotic voice sounded out, [Beep! Beginning Dreamscape alterations. Microscopic scanning used, searching database, affirming runes...]

Meanwhile, the large instrument in front of Leylin changed its shape. A few large metallic arms extended forth with crackling noises, all sorts of strange tools on them.

[Partial adjustment to host’s body beginning!]

With the A.I. Chip’s voice, the skin on Leylin’s arm first experienced some changes. A layer of dark red light appeared, forming fine patterns. These were very similar to those on the body of Gillian from Dreamscape, but even finer. They were more orderly and had a unique feel to them, with a beauty to this smoothness.

With the A.I. Chip in charge, and the large arms of the instrument helping, Leylin’s body was branded with a layer of red runes.



‘Why does this remind me of Branded Swordsman? There really is a certain amount of similarity here...’

After the modification was completed, Leylin snapped his fingers and a silver mirror immediately appeared in front of him. The image within was that of a human body filled with strange red runes. A demonic lotus pattern was on his forehead, and he looked very similar to the Branded Swordsmen he’d created before.

‘It looks like no matter what kind of path one takes, there’s bound to be some similarity somewhere!’

“A.I. Chip!” Leylin commanded.

[Beep! Beginning second procedure!]

With the A.I. Chip’s robotic voice, the demonic red runes abruptly emanated bright rays of light, completely absorbing all the dreamforce that the rank 6 spider had left on Leylin’s body and disappeared into his skin.

Leylin called out in a low voice, feeling powerful energy flowing in his body. At this point, with the disappearance of the large amounts of dream runes, he had regained his original appearance.

# Chapter 647 - Dream Spell

---

[Beep! Host's Dreamscape alteration has been completed. Dreamforce adaptability has increased. Host has absorbed the remaining dreamforce. Vitality and spiritual force increasing, recalculating data.]

Following the A.I. Chip's voice, Leylin saw his stats being refreshed.

[Leylin Farlier, Rank 5 Warlock. Bloodline: Kemoyin Emperor (Complete Form). Strength: 76, Agility: 62, Vitality: 155.7, Spiritual Force: 1821.5, Magic Power: 1821(Magic power is in synchronisation with spiritual force). Soul Force: 182 (New Moon).]

"I didn't expect the alterations from dreamforce to have so many benefits!" Leylin nodded, rather satisfied with the upgrades.

The most important thing about this alteration was that with the absorption of dreamforce, his body was beginning to get used to this strength. That was a prerequisite to employing dreamforce based spells.

Now, Leylin could see a strange red bar on the histogram that showed his elemental affinities, a third place below darkness and fire but still ahead of even his ice affinity.

“Affinity with dreamforce?” Leylin muttered to himself, knowing what this represented.

Elemental affinity, or the attraction of specific forces, was the prerequisite to Magi being able to cast spells. His affinity with dreamforce surpassed his expectations..

[Beep! Host body's dreamscape alterations completed. Gained dream ability— Illusory Dream! Might when casting illusory-type spells increased by 50%. Resistance to illusions increased by 35%. Host has a possibility of creating a dream forcefield around the body, bewitching intellectual creatures!]

The A.I. Chip called all this to his attention.

‘It seems like this Dreamscape alteration had a lot of benefits. If not for dreamforce being too unstable, it wouldn't have been bad to focus on training it....’ Leylin stroked his chin.

Dreamforce was very powerful. If a Magus were to train in this area, the rise of their strength would definitely be very quick. However, Leylin was not going to consider this. There was the aspect of his own affinity to it, but more importantly the instability of dreamforce left Leylin unwilling to gamble on it.

Leylin's view was that the dreamforce would have restrictions when being used in a different world, and also had terrifying

variance in the power. If other sources of power ranged from 1000 to 1500, then that of dreamforce would be from 1 to 10000! This meant that creatures in dreams might be frail little bugs a day ago, but could turn into a demon god the very next day.

Beings that were demons the day before could very well turn into creatures not even comparable to bugs due to the weakening of dreamforce.

More importantly, these changes had no pattern! They might never happen, but could also happen continuously, which made it seem like a fraud.

Hence, Leylin would at most use dreamforce as a tool, but not train mainly in it.

“However, with an affinity with dreamforce, I can now cast basic dream based spells...” Leylin came to the centre of the laboratory. A thick isolating glass there held within a gigantic ball of dark red dreamforce that was dense to the extreme within.

This was all the dream energy that Leylin had collected in this period of time.

With the push from a few incantations and soul force, an illusory spell model floated above his hands.

[Opening Sluice Gate No. 1.]

---

Along with the A.I. Chip's voice, one of the channels on the glass revealed a tiny opening. Dark red dreamforce squeezed out like an earthworm, revolving around Leylin and seeming extremely lively.

Seeing that the dreamforce was enough, the sluice gate ruthlessly closed once more, leaving the dreamforce that had escaped outside.

“Rank 1 dream spell— Eternal Light!” A spell model that was complex and strange, with the energy node within constantly changing was sent from the A.I. Chip to Leylin's memories.

With the push from a few incantations and soul force, an illusory spell model floated above his hands.

The dreamforce around Leylin immediately disappeared into the model.

Rumble! The energy from a rank 1 spell caused dazzling white rays of light to fill the laboratory.

[Beep! Casting of rank 1 spell 'Eternal Light' is successful. Undulations and data has been recorded. Recording into spell database under dream spells, rank 1]

The A.I. Chip quickly intoned.

[Eternal Light: A rank 1 spell that creates light for eternity. Estimated duration to be 50 years, 8 months. Power: 100 – 300 degrees.]

Following that, even more detailed information was shown on the screen of the A.I. Chip.

“A regular rank 1 spell should have a power between 20 and 80 degrees. The amplification from dreamforce is so terrifying...” Leylin touched his chin, gazing at the light on the walls that would not extinguish.

“Regular light magic and even Eternal Light can last for at most a few years... However, the energy provided by dreamforce can last for 50 years...”

It had to be said that the great effects of dreamforce surpassed Leylin’s expectations.

“Once I research and create an offensive rank 5 dream spell, even rank 6 Magi can only tremble under it!” Leylin’s eyes flickered with a fervent heat.

The spell model of the rank 1 dream spell he had just cast had come from the animal hide of the natives that had come from Dreamscape. The anonymous Magus had spent decades and come up with a system suitable for natives of the Dreamscape to use. He

had even invented a series of dream spells. Though they were only from rank 1 to rank 3, that was still astonishing to Leylin.

To be able to incorporate dreamforce into a Magus' path and then invent usable models meant that this Magus' attainments in spells could even surpass himself.

The information left behind by this person had allowed him to avoid detours, and even aided him in creating a good foundation, thus saving him much time.

Even with the foundations and systems, deducing rank 4 and rank 5 content would usually take Magi a long period of time, but for the A.I. Chip it was just a matter of how much power it allocated.

“With such sensitivity towards spells as well as knowledge of laws, the Magus who accidentally landed in the Dreamscape should at least be rank 6, or even a rank 7 Magus who grasped laws!” Leylin's eyes shone with yearning, and he threw himself into the nerve-wrecking experiments.

Time was fast approaching to fulfill the arrangement he had with Melinda. Before that, he had to constantly amass more strength so that he had enough to save himself, and even escape her schemes.

Whatever conspiracy there was, strength would be key. Once the difference in strength grew insurmountable, any conspiracies or plots would be useless.

Whether it was dealing with the Blazing Flame Monarch or other dangers, dream spells could be used as Leylin's hidden trump card and be the deciding factor of victory!

Hence, Leylin dedicated most of the A.I. Chip's operations into the experiment.

---

‘One needs to employ dreamforce for dream spells. Though I've done all I can to prepare some, I can't use it more than a few times. The energy needed for spells at and above rank 4 is terrifying...’

Leylin donned a large white gown, translucent goggles in front of his eyes. Watching the ball of dark red dreamforce behind the wall, his eyes twinkled.

Dark red dreamforce constantly drifted from the ball. It was similar to a scarlet python that swept across the wall, but it was forcefully blocked.

This was the material that Leylin had identified to isolate dreamforce over many experiments.

In a situation where no people rigged it, just the instinctual attacks of the dreamforce could do nothing against the isolating reinforced glass.

‘Based on my estimations and the A.I. Chip's calculations, this dream energy can only be used to cast a rank 4 spell 6 to 10 times,



while a rank 5 spell can only be cast 3 times or less...’

Leylin’s expression was dark. After breaking the connection with Dreamscape, gathering dreamforce had turned into a large issue.

No matter how he tried to store them properly, dreamforce was constantly dissipating. While this was a slow process, the keen A.I. Chip had discovered it. Finding a way to store and transport dreamforce was another aspect that it was working hard on.

‘Spells that use dreamforce as a base are most effective when related to illusory spells. Dreamforce and the illusory magic are extremely similar, and fusing them is the best option!’

The spell model that the A.I. Chip was calculating constantly improved by his conjectures, and gradually revealed its true form.

A spell model with numerous illusory runes flickering to and fro, emanating multi-coloured misty brilliance that all seemed like a dream began to take shape in the A.I. Chip’s simulations.

[Remaining time till rank 5 dreamforce spell is deduced: 3h 41min 12s.]

The A.I. Chip had now given an accurate prompt.

“3 months and 9 days for the deduction of a rank 5 spell to be

completed?” Leylin’s excitement could not be concealed.

While he had been recuperating and altering his body, the A.I. Chip had not been idle, analysing and studying this area.

Now, the fatal dream attack that he had been anticipating was about to be completed!

While he was waiting, time seemed to flow incredibly slower. Finally, Leylin heard the prompt from the A.I. Chip.

[Beep! Rank 5 dream spell deduction completed. Progress of construction of spell model: 100%!]

What had always been a robotic voice sounded incomparably gleeful in Leylin’s ears.

“It’s finally done!” Leylin clenched his fist and immediately read through the content given by the A.I. Chip.

# Chapter 648 - Communication And Stealth

---

In the simulation space of the A.I. Chip, a spell model that was extremely intricate and had multi-coloured flowing runes had completely taken shape. The A.I. Chip's voice transmitted at this point.

[Beep! Rank 5 dream spell— Radiant Moon Dreamforce Spell — Distract Dream. Type: Dreamforce. Illusory effect: Causes target to sink into their own dream realm and lose all senses with the external world. 90% chance of causing confusion to a Radiant Moon Magus' truesoul. Effects weaken slightly depending on number of times used.]

“An illusory technique that targets the truesoul, with a success rate of 90%!” Leylin's pupils shrank. He had experienced the mysteries and dangers of Dreamscape for himself. If not for the A.I. Chip and some luck, he might not have been able to escape at all.

It had such a high rate of success amongst those of the same rank, and could even bypass ranks even if the effects would be weakened. Still, the rate should be above 50% then as well.

In other words, the moment Radiant Moon Distract Dream was employed, there was a 50% chance that even a rank 6 Breaking Dawn Monarch's truesoul would get lost in confusion.

A Magus who lost their truesoul was basically a piece of flesh

anyone could take advantage of. Even as the creator of the spell, fear lingered in Leylin's own heart for the terror it held.

"It's a pity that I need to use dreamforce sparingly. I can't test the might of this spell in the real world..." A look of regret rose in Leylin's eyes, before he grew dazed.

"A.I. Chip, begin the simulation of a dream. Create a virtual world using the rank 6 spider as a standard..." This was a unique ability of the A.I. Chip. It could run simulations in virtual reality, and after its upgrades, it could simulate all existences under rank 7, under those that comprehended laws.

White light flashed, and Leylin appeared in Dreamscape once more. Not far away, a large spider with a strange male face on its stomach hovered in the air, countless webs shooting out and covering the laboratory. Every single thing was the same as it had been in Dreamscape.

Dense dreamforce continuously surged from around Leylin, causing him to almost feel suffocated. 'It can even imitate Dreamscape to this extent!'

Leylin gazed at his hands. There seemed to be no issue when he launched soul force, so he could not help but nod in satisfaction.

'Even a rank 6 existence was imitated flawlessly. There's practically no difference from the being I saw before!' Though this was all simulated by the A.I. Chip, everything had been reconstructed exactly the same as the scene from before.

Chik Chik— The gigantic spider ahead discovered Leylin and immediately began to snarl, its abdomen exploding to release a large amount of tiny spiders.

“Good, I can test this out against a rank 6 existence!” Leylin chuckled and darted forward, terrifying dark red dreamforce forming a tide around his body.

“Rank 5 dreamforce spell— Radiant Moon Distract Dream!” Strange ripples spread with Leylin’s voice, swirling around the gigantic spider...

In the real world, Leylin’s pupils flashed and he regained his consciousness, though the amazement on his face did not decrease.

“A rank 5 dreamforce spell has such a frightful effect...” It had to be said that even though he’d already had a conjecture about it, the shock that came from watching it in a real test had rendered Leylin speechless.

“Very good. With this spell, there’s a much greater chance of me surviving against a Monarch, and I’ll even have a fatal attack!” Leylin touched his chin. He had always liked planning ahead, first considering the losses before the victory. With confidence that he could retreat unharmed, he was even more interested in the hunting scheme that Melinda had proposed.

After all, the Blazing Flame Monarch had never expressed any interest in letting him off. Even when Leylin had been hiding in

the Morning Star area, he'd received a lot of intel regarding the Ouroboros Clan being spied upon.

Even Emma and Gilbert had met with danger several times. If not for the Warlocks from the Morning Star area lending a helping hand in time, the two dukes would probably have died already.

He evidently wanted to use the two dukes to lure Leylin out, but Leylin hadn't fallen for that at all, instead holing himself up. This had allowed him several months of peace.

Sometimes, compromising in the face of a threat would only cause the other party to become even more aggressive. Only when the enemy knew you didn't care for their blackmailing could the passive side grow active and gain the upper hand.

The Blazing Flame Monarch found that Leylin had no intentions of making a move, and didn't care for his side's lives. Hence, any plans he had along those lines were dismissed, and the harassment the Ouroboros Clan faced was reduced.

If Leylin had made the wrong choice, the situation would've turned worse and worse.

"The Blazing Flame Monarch! A Breaking Dawn Magus who is like a blazing sun, eternally illuminating the entire Magus World from the horizon? Hah," A cold smirk appeared on Leylin's face as he stroked his chin, "Even a star will lose its light and warmth one day, turning into a black hole. You're merely a rank 6 Magus..."

The underlying tone of his words lay a boundless bloodlust.

Having thought this through, Leylin placed a call through a secret imprint, on the encrypted channel Melinda had given him before. “Melinda? It’s me.”

“You’ve finally made up your mind!” Melinda’s voice sounded from the other side. It was a mature female voice, not the voice of the small girl.

“Yes. I cannot stand an opposing organisation constantly eyeing me from the shadows like a vermin. I believe you feel the same way!” Leylin’s voice was low.

“Hehe... a mouse? I like your metaphor.” Melinda’s cheerful laughter came from the other side. She was just like Leylin, caring little for law and having no natural morality. Hearing the meaning in his words, she grew excited as well.

“I know all the weaknesses of the Blazing Flame Monarch. Sometime in the near future, his strength will be at its lowest. With a few other helpers I’ve found, we can definitely kill him in one go!”

“I hope things are as you say they are.” Leylin began to tap the table with his finger subconsciously. He expressed his tentative support of Melinda’s plan, but not so much so that he would involve himself in some trap.

In all honesty, even if he was cooperating with her, he would not let himself become a leader. When working together with a sly old fox, just a slight blunder would result in him falling into a trap.

Leylin was very cautious about this. What he wanted to make use of was her knowledge of the pathways and the opponent's weaknesses. Once he gained all of that, he would come up with a plan of his own.

Melinda then tossed out some bait, "The items we get afterwards will definitely be able to satisfy you..."

"I'm anticipating it." Leylin's voice was extremely calm. After agreeing on a time and place with her, he ended the communication.

"Rank 6..." Only Leylin was left in the room. He sunk deep into thought for a long while, and then rubbed his temples, 'Time is scarce. I'll need to start preparing a lot of things...'

In the central continent, rank 6s were at the top of the pyramid. They were emperors among Magi.

The current Leylin didn't have any hope when dealing with them, but even he had little confidence. Other people would even think he was crazy.

However, Leylin and Melinda were both clever. They possessed battle strength at the peak of Radiant Moon, and if they found a



few other helpers at the same rank who would fight with their lives on the line when the opponent was weak, there was a huge chance of success.

With ample preparation, Leylin could practically be in an invincible position, something which made this transaction acceptable.

---

Silver spatial turbulence streaked around outside the Morning Star area, bringing a dark silver lustre to the pitch-black galaxy.

A bit of faint light appeared in the distant starry skies, like that from a firefly. Black light flashed at the edge of the space, and Leylin's figure appeared.

His eyes were bright as they scanned the area, his thin and nice eyebrows furrowing before they relaxed. "Come out!"

It was tranquil in the void, with no sound at all.

Leylin snorted, and two streams of black air converged to form a double-headed snake that pounced on an area not far away, the space there fluctuating, "Your Highness Bevis, did you think I was playing with you?"

Crash! Space was pulled apart as if it was a door, leaving behind a bundle of fog.

Large amounts of this fog converged to form a human body. The face was that of Bevis, who had previously visited Leylin and left with the two on bad terms.

“How did you see through my innate ‘fog’?” Large amounts of white fog emanated from Bevis’ body, drowning the double-headed snake. Bevis’ expression was dark as he stared at Leylin with malicious intent. It seemed like he was quite miffed at being discovered.

“Why should I tell you?” Leylin gazed at Bevis as if ridiculing him, causing the latter’s face to flush red.

“Leylin Farlier! On behalf of the organisation, I’m here to stop you. You act wilfully as if the resources you obtain from us are a trifling matter!” Bevis yelled.

“Hmph! Representing? Who are you representing? Offa? Wayde? Or Jeffrey?” Leylin glared at Bevis as if provoking him, “Where are they? Did you think you alone could represent the Warlock Union? Even if you ascend to Breaking Dawn you won’t possess that kind of authority!”

In the Morning Star area, Offa and the other two Radiant Moons were huddled together, watching the scene through an old stone basin.

Multiple scenes and voices were transmitted through the basin, of the confrontation between Bevis and Leylin.

“Everyone... Isn’t how we’re treating Leylin and Bevis a little...”  
Jeffrey spoke slightly anxiously.

“This is a matter between the two. It’s not right for us to interfere. Besides, there’s one thing that Leylin said that was absolutely correct!” Offa spoke coldly.

# Chapter 469 - Fog Giant

---

“The Warlock Union isn’t the personal property of a single Warlock. It’s an alliance between all Warlocks, each of whom have their own wills and requirements for benefits,” Offa’s voice was icy, “Even when Bevis reaches Breaking Dawn, he still won’t have the authority to represent us all!”

Wayde and Jeffrey did not refute out of their desire to protect their own interests.

“Furthermore, Leylin wants to raid the Blazing Flame Monarch in his own name, and Bevis is trying all he can to stop this. In principle, neither of them are wrong. Hence, let’s give them a chance to sort it out among themselves. We’ll appear later to adjudicate. Isn’t that appropriate?” An intelligent glint flashed in Offa’s eyes. As the oldest and most powerful Radiant Moon Warlock, his might in the Warlock Union could not be underestimated.

“That’s true. They’re young people after all, they need to be hot-blooded sometimes!” Wayde exclaimed from the other side. Completely golden, he looked like a god of battle.

“But... Bevis is someone who can advance to Breaking Dawn. If some enmity arises between the two Warlocks because of what happens today, the future of the Warlocks of our union...” Jeffrey was slightly worried.

“Bevis has yet to attain Breaking Dawn. Besides, how are you so

sure that he will be the one to become a rank 6 Warlock?”

“How can I not be sure? He has...” Jeffrey instinctively retorted, and then saw Offa’s expression that was somewhat like a smile but not quite. He immediately went mute, sinking into deep thought.

Though Offa kept saying he wanted to be impartial, one of the two involved was a Warlock with a rank 5 bloodline and the other a Warlock with a rank 6 bloodline. Letting the two fight out a personal battle was already unfair to some extent.

‘Perhaps Offa has great expectations of Leylin?’ Jeffrey suddenly understood this fact.

Seeing his look of sudden realisation, Offa nodded in gratification, “The prophecy didn’t indicate who it was that would reach Breaking Dawn. Although Bevis being the one is most probable, Leylin still had hope as well. Even you and I, as well as all the Warlocks limited to Morning Star, have a chance. That’s why we need to make some bets when we need to, that is how we can maintain our influence. Although we’re putting a lot of our hope on Bevis, we can’t reduce our support towards other Warlocks...”

“I understand!” Jeffrey nodded solemnly.

Offa beamed as he spoke, “Good. No matter who wins or loses, you just need to express goodwill to the loser and show our kindness...”

“Could it be that Your Highness thinks Leylin has a chance of winning?” Jeffrey gaped, “Not only has Bevis reached Half Moon, he has a rank 6 bloodline...”

“Hehe... Someone who can become a rank 5 Warlock with his own abilities isn’t a nobody!” Offa laughed, as if hinting at something. He pressed in closer, his eyeballs that were glazed over glinting with a strange light, “Leylin is someone who can create miracles. Nobody can tell the results of this fight, but whatever it is, it’s pointless to speculate further. Let’s watch!”

Hearing Offa say this, Jeffrey and Wayde watched the battlefield grimly.

---

Leylin had long since noticed the concealed Bevis with the A.I. Chip’s scans. The other Radiant Moon Warlocks weren’t around, something Leylin found strange.

‘Offa and the rest didn’t come with him to put pressure on me... Are they maintaining a neutral stance? Rather unexpected.’ Leylin’s eyes flashed with intelligence, ‘Their meaning is quite clear. If I don’t exceed Bevis, there’s nothing else to say, but if I achieve victory over him or breakthrough I can do as I like?’

‘Their placing their bets on both of us... What a bunch of sly old foxes indeed!’ Leylin lamented.

Immediately after, his gaze towards Bevis turned piteous. No

matter how talented he was, he lacked experience. He evidently hadn't pondered over this, and was still frustrated by the previous events.

“Aaah! Leylin Farlier, I won't let you off. Come back with me obediently!” Bevis roared, a large fog surging from his body.

“Just as well. I'll play with you as a warmup. Besides...” Leylin laughed, and large amounts of demonic black flames suddenly emerged from his body. High-pitched phoenix cries sounded from within.

All of a sudden, the flames flew into the sky, gathering to form a devilishly enchanting blackfire phoenix.

“Soaring Demonic Phoenix!” With the high-pitched buzzing of flames breaking through space, the arrogant phoenix spread its wings, spurring on immense tides of black flames. Space itself was melted down, and the fog that Bevis emitted was devoured and absorbed.

After acquiring the devouring ability of the Kemoyin Serpent Emperor, Leylin found that the same ability of his black flames had been upgraded as well, the two seemingly complementing each other well.

“Is that what you're so confident in? A black phoenix? What kind of bloodline ability is that?” The vigorous fire energy and the demonic devouring ability caused Bevis' expression to change slightly.

“Whatever it is, in front of my bloodline, all odd abilities need to bow down!” His eyes immediately turned crimson. A powerful and profound force from an ancient bloodline emanated from his body, even suppressing Leylin to some extent.

That unique aura that came from an ancient rank 6 bloodline was something regular rank 5 beings did not dare offend. Just this alone gave Bevis a huge advantage when battling Warlocks with bloodline sources of a lower rank than his own.

However, Leylin was different. As the ruler of a race, the Kemoyin Serpent Emperor had a high resistance to the pressure from a rank 6 being, and the suppression was far lesser than what Bevis had expected.

[Beep! Host affected by opponent's bloodline suppression. All statistics have decreased slightly.]

Leylin was speechless as he saw his stats. The only decrease was in the unit place.

“Is the suppressive ability of a rank 6 bloodline so weak? Or is the Kemoyin Emperor too overbearing?”

Chirp~! Under Bevis' disbelieving gaze, the blackfire phoenix flew before him without being affected in any way. Two wings that were like long flaming blades crossed each other, and terrifying



black flames instantly devoured him.

“How is this possible? My bloodline is... rank 6. How can't it suppress a mere rank 5 bloodline?” After the wave of black flames passed, Bevis looked to be in a sorry state. There was a thick layer of fog armour wrapped around his body, resulting in him receiving very slight injuries. The blow to his ego, however, was incomparable.

“Isn't it just the bloodline of the Misty Fog Giant? It's not as if it was the peak of ancient rank 6 beings or something... Is there a need to conceal this?” Leylin snickered disdainfully, and Bevis froze up, “How— how did you find out?”

“What do you think?!” A look of satisfaction hung on Leylin's face, which only made Bevis want to vomit blood.

His bloodline had the innate ability of concealment, which was one of his trump cards. Even those other Radiant Moon Warlocks had not seen through this, and yet it was nothing in front of Leylin.

Fear of Leylin rose in Bevis' heart. It grew increasingly intense, and much of it transformed into hatred.

“You must die. You **MUST DIE!**” Bevis howled.

Rumble! Large amounts of fog exploded, forming the figure of an immense giant.

This giant had four thick and sturdy arms, and a vertical eye at the top of its bald head. Its skin was coloured in the green of marble, large amounts of grey fog being produced from its pores. Its body seemed rather misty.

Since Leylin had seen through it, Bevis had nothing left to hide.

Awoo... The gigantic Misty Fog Giant's four large arms were held high as it began to howl fiercely. The dense fog spread to form a large grey fog space.

'It really is the Misty Fog Giant!' Leylin's pupils flickered.

Now that they were fighting, Leylin had nothing holding him back. He immediately ordered the A.I. Chip to forcefully break through the opponent's force field to obtain the correct information on his bloodline. Everything about the Misty Fog Giant was presented to him in detail.

[Appearance of Misty Fog Giant, rank 6 being: Ancient times. Habitat: A wetland with dense fog, or in abandoned Magus Cities. Rumoured to be the descendants of the ancient Thunder Giant, with the ability to manipulate fog. Likes eating plants like green algae. Gentle nature. Special ability has been concealed.

Innate talents:

1. Fog Concealment: Covers up one's aura and information about their bloodline.

2. Grey Fog Space: Creates a subspace that can be maintained for a short period of time.]

“AAAHH. Leylin! I want to kill you. Kill you!” Bevis snarled, the insanity in his eyes growing even more obvious. “ Arcane Art—Giant Transformation!”

His body crackled as his body grew larger, fusing with the phantom behind him. Two extra arms grew underneath his ribs, and with the execution of the Arcane Art, he turned into a real Misty Fog Giant.

‘Mm! It’s a head shorter than the one in the database. It should only be half-grown at rank 5.’ Leylin laughed, red rings of light fusing behind him. He dissipated, turning into large amounts of black gases that reformed into a terrifying Kemoyin Serpent Emperor. “Innate Arcane Art— Kemoyin Serpent Transformation!”

Rumble! Within the grey space, a giant serpent with a body over a hundred thousand metres long collided with a four-armed giant. Much of the void shattered under this power, the stray undulations causing the Morning Star Area nearby to shake slightly.

# Chapter 650 - Drawing Blood

---

“What’s the matter? Didn’t we agree before that he’d only stop his opponent? Why has it gone this far?” Jeffrey was a little stunned at the side. “This isn’t good. I’m afraid Bevis’ extreme personality has led to an emotional breakout at rank 6. Quickly, go and stop him! If not, His Highness Leylin...”

Even if the Warlock themselves weren’t as strong, metamorphosis to a rank 6 creature was definitely more powerful than that to a rank 5. Jeffrey was worried that Bevis would harm Leylin, which wasn’t good for the Warlock Union. After all, Leylin was in the Radiant Moon realm and was one of their executive members.

“That’s a rank 6 bloodline growing emotional. I’m afraid it will affect us as well...” Wayde, standing at the other side, grew very worried instead.

“There’s no need for that. His Highness Leylin is still there,” Offa waved his hands, seemingly very relaxed, “Not only he did see through his opponent’s bloodline, he even forced Bevis to fall into his own trap step by step. His Highness Leylin is truly growing more and more amazing... Perhaps he’ll give us many more surprises...”

“What?” Jeffrey and Wayde exclaimed involuntarily, “Does His Highness still have more strength remaining?”

“I cannot say,” Offa waved his hands as he watched the

battlefield with more concentration.

The Misty Fog Giant growled, and large amounts of grey fog seeped out of its pores, forming armour and a weapon. It's destructive power was great enough to shatter space itself with every attack.

Bevis' heart was already filled with anger, and he even wanted to directly kill Leylin. This was very different from his previous intention of just teaching him a lesson.

His shame and anger at being discovered and irritation at his pride taking a blow had erupted. Especially after seeing Leylin's unexpected and incredible strength, the flames of jealousy and insanity in the genes from his bloodline mixed together to form something even more terrifying.

The result was that Bevis' rationality had all but disappeared, and he was prepared to kill Leylin here regardless of the consequences.

"What a pitiful child," Leylin's voice was transmitted from the enormous body of the Kemoyin Emperor. Layers of black runes constantly emerged from its scales, easily blocking even the Misty Fog Giant's fog attacks.

Leylin watched the four-armed Misty Fog Giant in front of him attentively, and it seemed as if a mysterious radiance was shot out of his pupils.

“Eye of Petrification!” The Kemoyin Emperor’s gaze turned the four-armed giant sluggish. A layer of ash-grey stone instantly emerged on his skin.

“NO, how can my bloodline lose to this low-ranked creature?” Bevis growled frantically as large amounts of blood-red light burst forth from his body, forcing the petrification out.

However, the Kemoyin Emperor had taken this time to rush directly in front of him, its huge tail sweeping across the horizon. A power that seemed like Armageddon burst out from it.

An explosion sounded as the Misty Fog Giant was swatted away. The large amounts of fog in the surrounding area shattered, exposing the original starry sky.

“This rank 6 Misty Fog Giant bloodline, I’m taking it!” A whisper sounded in Bevis’ sea of consciousness. Before he could even figure out the situation, the Kemoyin Emperor had already opened up its maw, its two fangs ruthlessly piercing into his neck.

A terrifying attractive force was transmitted from its fangs, causing Bevis to shriek hysterically. Large amounts of fog shattered with a bang, and the Misty Fog Giant began cracking up inch by inch. Light flashed within the grey fog, and Bevis’ true body appeared once more.

Only, the current him had two large bloody holes in his neck, and looked battered and exhausted. His gaze towards Leylin was as if he’d seen some sort of demon.

“Ah...” When he gazed at Leylin’s pupils, Bevis seemed to receive a great deal of shock. He let loose a weird shriek as his body transformed into a ray of blood-red light that rushed back to the Morning Star Area with extreme speed.

“Indeed... small and weak...” Radiant flames emerged and Leylin returned to his normal form as well. The lack of battle experience and willpower was a shortcoming that had caused Bevis great losses.

With a card like the A.I. Chip up his sleeve, Leylin had abundant experience and strategies that were shrewd and ruthless.

“It’s more or less enough, time to go!” He sneered, looking at a point in space with a dazzling radiance in his eyes.

Soon after, his entire body turned into black flames that disappeared in the sky.

---

Within the Morning Star Area, Offa and the other two Radiant Moon Warlocks looked at each other in dismay. “His Highness Leylin actually discovered us spying on them? But this Tracing Pensieve is a piece of high-grade magic equipment...”

“Forget that. I’m more amazed by his battle strength. Even a Half Moon Magus like Bevis isn’t his match...” Wayne crossed his arms, and a strand of short golden hair stood up vertically like a steel

spike.

One had to admit, Leylin's military strength gave them a great surprise. Not only was Bevis at the Half Moon stage, he also had a rank 6 bloodline inheritance in the Misty Fog Giant. Originally, he was only second to Offa in the Warlock Union.

And he was defeated just like that? Didn't that mean that Leylin had strength comparable to a peak Radiant Moon?

This conjecture was something too crazy for Wayne and Jeffrey to accept immediately.

"Moreover, His Highness Bevis' bloodline seemed to be slightly damaged at the end. Should we tell His Highness Leylin about this and hope he returns that blood?" Jeffrey asked a little hesitantly.

"Do you think that's possible?" Offa speechlessly rolled his eyes. Now that he recalled, he felt like he'd underestimated Leylin. From the start, he had obviously laid a trap for Bevis, who walked in like a fool. Leylin had played him step by step like a marionette.

'What an interesting kid! He started by stimulating his opponent and causing him to harbour killing intent. Then he defeated Bevis openly and righteously, seizing his bloodline... Did he plan all this out before? Then... if we appeared, did he have other plans for it as well?'

The more Offa thought of it, the more his previous indifference



was replaced with fear of Leylin. This junior's tyrannical strength and meticulous planning had left him heavily surprised.

“Maybe he's the one who'll fulfil the hopes of the Warlocks.” Offa found growing expectations in his heart.

“Then what about us?” Jeffrey didn't really know what to do. Bevis' defeat was a totally unexpected situation to him.

“What else can we do? Just allow Leylin to go out, he's attacking under his own name anyway. With the Morning Star Area's fortress, even if it's the Blazing Flame Monarch, can he break through our defences directly?” Offa flicked his fingernails, his tone carrying a will that did not allow any questioning.

“Also, increase the security of the Ouroboros Clan and Leylin's relatives by a level, especially for Lady Freya. We cannot allow the Blazing Flame Monarch or any others to find even a single loophole, get it?” Offa looked at Jeffrey meaningfully.

“Yes! I will visit Lady Freya myself soon!” Jeffrey nodded with a bitter smile.

“Our rules cannot be broken. There shouldn't be any desperate infighting within us Warlocks, that is our bottom line,” Offa said, “I'll go and remind Bevis about this in the near future.” All the Warlocks present nodded in agreement.

After all, if such a thing happened internally to an organisation

that was supposed to be unified, it would be a huge blow to their soldiers' morale. Furthermore, if one person crossed the bottom line, the enemy would definitely counterattack with the same level of danger, causing both sides to suffer. Magi were intelligent people, they knew what to do.

The only thing that needed to be done was suppressing Bevis' emotional craziness. After he calmed down, everything would become easy.

“We cannot relax our support for Bevis either. Send the skeletal remains of the Misty Fog Giant in the warehouse to him after this!” Offa suddenly said something that shocked Jeffrey greatly.

“Your Highness... Why?” Jeffrey's jaw dropped.

“If Leylin advances to Breaking Dawn, what will we use to suppress him?” At this moment, Offa stroked his beard and said something that left a deep impression on Jeffrey.

---

“I've gained quite a bit this time!” On the other side, Leylin looked at the bloodline in the test tube in his hands that was emitting a misty luster. A hint of happiness emerged on his face.

“Although the Misty Fog Giant isn't some kind of high-grade being amongst ancient rank 6 creatures, it creates bloodline imprints using its blood as materials, this explains its ability to cast ordinary rank 6 spells...”

It could be said that Bevis had fallen into Leylin's scheme from the moment they met.

Moreover, because the opponent had displayed his killing intent during the battle, even if Leylin forcefully extracted his bloodline those Warlocks could not say anything.

After all, compared to Bevis who was in hot pursuit of him, Leylin was instead very 'magnanimous', even letting Bevis go ultimately.

Probably, even if the current Leylin were to draw blood from him, Bevis himself wouldn't have the face to ask for it back, as it was too embarrassing.

"Seeing from the attitudes of Jeffrey and the others, we can still temporarily ease our worries regarding the bloodline alliance. Surely they will also try their best to contain Bevis, making him calm down. They won't attack my forces!"

A thoughtful glint flashed across Leylin's pupils.

These kind of things were mutual. Once Bevis exceeded the bottom line, igniting the flames of war with him, Leylin would definitely follow suit, even paying back tenfold.

Hence, so long as a Magus had a little rationality, he would not do something like this that caused both sides to suffer.

# Chapter 651 - Convergence: A Plot Hatched

---

A chandelier hung loosely and emitted a dim orange light in the hazy night. The light from the street lamps was diffused, making one feel sleepy.

Beside the chandelier was a bar that was already closed. A 'Thank You' sign was hung on the door, the surroundings quiet.

After a day's hard work, the residents nearby had already entered slumber in their tiredness. Even the drunkards, tramps, and the like had found their own cosy kennels, not intending on sleeping outdoors on the streets in such cold weather.

At this moment, the sound of leather boots rubbing against the ground echoed through the area. A tall figure walked out of thin air, coming before the door and knocking on it.

Thud Thud Thud! The dull sound carried a unique rhythm and charm.

The door opened after a while, exposing the face of an old lady. There was a slight reverence amidst her vigilance, "Sir! You're finally here!"

"I was slightly delayed by some matters on the way." The person walked into the bar and took off his hood, exposing his original appearance. His handsome face was strange, and his long black hair casually stuck to the back of his head. He seemed very youthful and capable. Mysterious spirals spun continuously in his

black pupils, even a single glance able to draw in a person's soul.

After defeating Bevis and obtaining his bloodline, Leylin had worked incessantly on turning it into an imprint. He'd even almost missed his appointment with Melinda because of this.

However, Leylin felt like all this was worth it. Spending more time here would add another bloodline imprint to his deck, and was definitely worth more than the cost. After all, he was here this time to deal with a Breaking Dawn Monarch! This was the highest level of existence in the central continent, and Leylin could not afford to not be more careful.

After entering the bar, Leylin followed the old lady to a cellar. Passing through a helical dark and damp passageway that smelled like rot, Leylin finally saw Melinda once more.

"Leylin! You're finally here, we've been waiting for a long time!" Melinda's eyes sparkled upon meeting Leylin, and she spoke a little coquettishly.

"We?" Leylin's gaze twinkled, immediately looking at the few other 'people' in the room.

The old lady had already withdrawn respectfully. There were three other strange figures remaining in the room besides Melinda.

One of them was a hefty fellow who wore black armour, and another was a woman whose entire body was wrapped in a black

Magus robe.

The last one didn't even look human anymore, and was simply a black shadow in the mirror.

“Spirit Magus?!” Leylin looked at the shadow in the mirror attentively, and could explicitly sense that he was not using any kind of clone. He couldn't help but utter a deep sigh at the fact that the shadow was his main body.

The spiritual force of a Magus was tyrannical like no other. Even after death, there was a very high chance of transforming into some sort of evil spirit. And if this kind of evil spirit still held their rationality, they could learn spells and become a Spirit Magus!

And for a Morning Star who possessed soul force, transmuting the soul was but a small operation.

Although Leylin had heard some things about Spirit Magi, that circle was very narrow and remote. He'd never expected that Melinda would actually be able to get one here, and a Radiant Moon Magus one at that.

“Your insight is still as good as before!” Melinda gasped in admiration, “This Jin He was once a good friend of mine. The other two are Clarke and Joanna, assistants I've hired.”

“As for the Twin Gemini, I've long since heard of you two! I didn't expect that Melinda would actually be able to bring you here

as well!” Leylin greeted Clarke and Joanna with a smile.

According to his intelligence, these two Radiant Moon siblings assisted each other in the central continent, and each was fairly famous on their own. They were also the rare type that didn’t have any organisations attached to them.

“Your Highness Leylin!” Joanna, whose entire body was wrapped in a black robe, seemed to be bad at socialising. All of these matters were settled by the hefty black armoured Clarke.

“And Sir Jin!” Leylin looked at the shadow in the mirror again. Although he knew perfectly well that he was a Spirit Magus, he still felt as if there was something hidden to this person, their aura making him uncomfortable.

“Zzz... Your... body...” The shadow in the mirror suddenly fluctuated for a moment, emitting the strength of a Conscient, “Has something... that makes me feel... danger...”

“It’s what I specially prepared for this operation,” Leylin smiled. His right index finger suddenly felt tighter, and a grey ring now on his finger emitted a mysterious light.

This ring would normally be very inconspicuous, as if the shoddy work of some slipshod salesman in an ordinary shop. However, it was indeed notable when it appeared in the hands of a Radiant Moon Warlock like Leylin.

After hearing Jin's words, Clarke and even Joanna who'd been quiet all this while looked at Leylin with interest, as if wanting to find out about his cards.

"Alright! No matter what Leylin brought, it'll be useful to our operation this time." Melinda clapped her hands, "Comrades, don't forget why we gathered here."

"How could I forget?" Clarke let loose a deep howl, blue veins popping out on his hands as his entire person stirred up. Seeing his distorted face, Leylin was certain that he definitely had some painful past related to the Blazing Flame Monarch that was unbearable to recall.

However, this did not concern him at all. He was instead constantly calculating the probability of using him.

"No need to worry, brother! I will help you this time!" Joanna placated Clarke by patting the back of his hand, causing the berserk aura to fade. He then regained his rationality, "Sorry, I was too agitated..."

Clarke, who had sobered up, bowed deeply. There was an unwavering determination on his face, carrying the smell of blood.

"As for Sir Clarke's previous encounter, I've also heard a little about it..." Melinda nodded but did not continue.

"Everyone present here has hatred for the Blazing Flame



Monarch. And today, we've gathered to act on it!" Melinda's voice suddenly grew dignified.

"Stop spouting rubbish... I'm only concerned with your promises, when can you fulfil them..." The Spirit Magus in the mirror said with initiative.

"Hm... I agree as well. We're already at this point, you should explain clearly about your plan and the Blazing Flame Monarch's weakness. And what about the benefits that come afterwards?" Leylin parroted Jin's viewpoint.

Joanna and Clarke shot a glance at each other and both nodded, "We agree as well!"

"I only waited for everyone to arrive before I said it!" Melinda glanced at Leylin with a slight look of grievance.

"As everyone knows, there are only two large bottlenecks as a Magus. One from rank 3 to 4 and another from 6 to 7. The challenges at both these times are extremely huge, but a breakthrough also has abundant benefits. It is to the extent that those who do can steamroll over those who haven't..." Melinda began to speak with fervour and assurance.

"We already know all this! There's a limit to my patience!" Clarke yelled deeply.

"Relax, I'm almost there," Melinda rolled her eyes at Clarke.

“The gap between Breaking Dawn and Radiant Moon, although not as obvious as that between rank 3 and rank 4, it is still an insurmountable gap... But at that time, a problem occurred during the Flame Monarch’s advancement. There was even a period of time where his strength was at the lowest point! This is why I absolutely had to gather all of you here at this time!”

Melinda’s mouth curved in a smile, but it carried an intense hatred!

“The Breaking Dawn Monarchs in the central continent are all very terrifying, they’ve even begun to touch upon laws and the origin of the world. The Blazing Flame Monarch is the same, in the process of familiarising himself with the laws of fire...”

Melinda’s voice seemed to carry a strange attraction, “The Blazing Flame Monarch is at his weakest, almost falling below rank 6. I know the layout of his lair like the back of my hand; if we can kill the opponent at this time, we may even be able to obtain his Law Comprehension Crystals!”

“Law Comprehension Crystals?” Clarke exclaimed, and a sparkle appeared in Leylin’s eyes.

“Yes! The Law Comprehension Crystal that contains all of a former Magus’ understanding of the power of laws, and even some of his previous experiences, memories and such. It will be very helpful for our promotion to rank 6...”

Melinda looked at the few Magi present, “Even if it’s a Breaking Dawn, one’s ability to comprehend laws is a huge threshold that divides strength. If we can obtain the Blazing Flame Monarch’s Law Comprehension Crystal, we’ll be able to attain rank 6 the moment we advance there, and even be at the boundary of rank 7!”

“Indeed, among the rank 6 Magi, the only discernible intra-ranking is whether they can access the laws or not!” There was a clear understanding look in Leylin’s gaze.

Breaking Dawns were very knowledgeable in the truesoul and soul force. After reaching rank 6, they would soon near the limit of their spirit, and the only difference would be how much they could comprehend laws.

A Breaking Dawn who didn’t have contact with laws and one that was beginning to comprehend its power were on completely different levels.

Once a Magus gained complete control over a certain law or power, they would also enter the rank 7 realm.

Leylin was faintly excited in his heart. He was beginning to vaguely discover the path after rank 5.

‘Magi practice spiritual force before rank 4, soul force before rank 7. Rank 7 is when one has gained control of a certain law?’ he stroked his chin, ‘In that case, what does dreamforce represent?’

# Chapter 652 - Düz City

---

Based on what Melinda said, whether one had begun to comprehend laws made up for the greatest power distinction among Breaking Dawns. The Monarchs of the central continent had obtained the strength of the worlds they conquered, and each began to touch upon a specific law. This was why they were called ‘Monarchs.’

The Blazing Flame Monarch obtained extra strength from the Origin Force of the Fiery World, and began touching on the law of fire.

Once he completely wielded the power of flames, that was when the title of Monarch could be held high in the sky, when one could advance to become a rank 7 Magus that controlled laws.

The knowledge and memories that Magi at this level of strength had about laws was very beneficial to a Radiant Moon like Leylin.

“The Blazing Flame Monarch’s power is at a low? How long will this last?” This was what Leylin was focused on.

“At least a month, and it could approach a hundred days. Three months, effectively.” Melinda laughed like a little fox, “Because of certain reasons that everyone knows, the Radiant Moons under the Blazing Flame Monarch like Carol and Eugene are dead. This means his defences are definitely weak.”

Leylin stayed silent. Those two Radiant Moons had died at his

hands. Of course, Melinda had been even more vicious in eliminating the remaining peak Radiant Moon.

Now that he thought about it, everything that Melinda had done so far was to clip the opponent's wings before dealing the final blow. It all had meaning to it.

“I’ve invited all of you here so that we can take care of the Blazing Flame Monarch in one go. Do you have any questions?” Terrifying energy waves rippled out from Melinda as she spoke, showing a strength at the peak of Radiant Moon. Her voice had lost its childishness, the callousness now as chilling as winter’s ice.

Clark started by yelling out, “Alright! As long as I can have my vengeance on the Blazing Flame Monarch, I’ll do anything!”

“Brother’s decision is my decision!” Joanna watched her brother, her eyes full of tenderness.

“Keke... Law Comprehension Crystals will be distributed without any issues. What’s so bad about doing this?”

The Soul Magus in the mirror laughed coldly.

“How about you, Lord Leylin? The Blazing Flame Monarch seems to have you in his thoughts, plotting so many attacks against the Ouroboros Clan...” Melinda seemed rather knowledgeable regarding this matter, which led to a hint of dissatisfaction inside Leylin. However, their goals in attacking the Blazing Flame

Monarch intersected, and they would get the same benefits. Leylin nodded.

“I’m joining in as well. One thing though, how will you ensure the benefits are distributed evenly? Can you ensure that each one of us will get what they want?” Having said this, Leylin’s eyes twinkled as he watched Melinda intently.

Meeting his gaze, Melinda could only laugh wryly, “I can’t guarantee that the operation will definitely succeed, the opponent is a Breaking Dawn Magus after all. However, I can ensure that the earnings from this will definitely be distributed evenly. We can even sign a contract under the Trial’s Eye! With our strength, the Trial’s Eye we summon will definitely be a clone with its own thoughts. It won’t glaze over any loopholes that we can make use of!”

“Alright then, that’s fine by me.” Leylin nodded his head. Every word of a Radiant Moon had enough weight to it that one could consider that a contract in itself. With the restrictions by Trial’s Eye, he had no way to break the agreement.

After all, the Trial’s Eye that they could summon was a highly ranked existence that had its own sentience, and was linked to the main body at all times.

With such a Trial’s Eye, the solution of the Nefarious Filthbird’s feathers would no longer have any effect unless a clone of the Filthbird itself descended as well. However, that would cause too great a disturbance.

“Good! Since everyone has agreed, let’s discuss the plan.” A streak of light flew from Melinda’s hand to the air, forming a translucent screen.

“My intel says that the target isn’t hiding in his nest, but instead holed up in one of the world cracks surrounding the Fiery World with many mazes constructed around him. Our objective this time is to launch a surprise attack on his nest— Düz City. The opponent’s astral gate and the coordinates to the Fiery World are all there. Afterwards, we’ll force our way into the Fiery World and kill the Monarch.” Melinda waved her arms resolutely, extremely determined.

She glanced at every one of them, “There might not be a single Radiant Moon in Düz City right now. There’s probably just a group of Morning Stars subordinate to the Blazing Flame Monarch watching over it. After we take it down, we can obtain all the wealth of a rank 6 organisation...”

After they listened to Melinda’s plan, a light glinted in the eyes of the Magi in the room, save for Leylin. An organisation with a Monarch at its head, its members had plundered the central continent for thousands of years. Even if only a small portion of that wealth was in Düz City, it was enough for rank 5 Magi to grow quite wealthy.

“There’s no time to lose. Let’s set off now!” Melinda’s hands were on her waist, her chest puffed out and her voice back to its original childlike tone. The huge contrast with her solemn expression almost caused Leylin to burst out in laughter.

The other Magi didn't have as many doubts as Leylin. A few streaks of green light rumbled past, and Melinda and the others completely disappeared from the underground room. Endless darkness engulfed the area.

---

Düz City. The capital of the Blazing Flame Monarch's organisation had thick city walls that had many reinforcement runes on them. Giant adamantine cannons had their own great history as they displayed the prowess of the Monarch to his people.

There was an unending flow of wandering Magi and scholars here, each of them having arrived due to its reputation. Most of the new arrivals were full of reverence towards this gigantic Magus City.

This was Düz! With the protection of a Breaking Dawn Magus like the Blazing Flame Monarch, it was said that this place would never fall!

Düz City did not have any floating techniques like Sky City, nor did it have such rich reserves of knowledge, but it did occupy much more land than Sky City. The city was divided into many districts, with the Monarch's residence occupying the centre.

A bundle of unending flames burnt at the heart of the city, radiating a holy light that proclaimed its glory and might to the masses.



However, all of Düz's glory and might would become history today!

It all started with the rumble of an earthquake. The sand on the ground began to pulse without pattern, the vibrations becoming increasingly intense. This earthquake spread through the houses, rocks, and mountains. It was as if the ground had softened, forming constant waves like the sea.

A large number of clouds filled the skies, completely blocking the sunlight. Dazzling white snakes made of lightning rolled about in the clouds, seemingly shattering space itself. Terrifying spells rippled with boundless might, pressing closer towards the city.

Countless Magi within the city looked up, staring at the scene with incomprehension. Only a tottering old man seemed to think of something, beginning to tremble, "SPELL ATTACK!"

Pu! He immediately turned into a white streak of light. Grabbing a few youngsters behind him, he ignored the ban on flying and fled quickly.

'There's actually someone who'd dare attack Düz City? We're in a huge crisis!' In spite of his shock, the old Magus' abundant life experience had instantly alerted him of the approaching danger.

An existence that could disregard the might of the Blazing Flame Monarch and brazenly challenge him was definitely no fool. Since they had come here, then they must have been extremely

confident.

The Blazing Flame Monarch was a rank 6 Magus, a peak existence in the central continent! Even a finger from either party could crush an old Magus like him. They probably didn't even need that, just the stray undulations from battle would reduce his body to nothingness.

Hence, he immediately thought of fleeing, bringing his descendants away from this place that would soon become a battlefield

“Wha– What’s going on, Grandfather?” A youngster was still confused.

Immediately after, he cried out involuntarily, “How’s it possible...”

Terrifying earthquakes and thunderstorms could be seen in the direction of his gaze. It was as if a natural catastrophe had struck Düz city, and was now wreaking havoc.

The Magi below the Morning Star realm could not withstand this apocalypse, and died in swathes.

Faced with the ire of high-ranked Magi, all these low-ranked Magi were as minute as ants. The acolytes and regular humans, who were even weaker, obviously suffered massive casualties.

Only those like the old Magus who acted quickly and fled from Düz City left the scope of the disaster with some difficulty, watching Düz City in fear.

“The capital of the Blazing Flame Monarch has been attacked. Oh, goodness. Heavens, am I dreaming?”

A few children exclaimed in shock, “Quick! Look!”

Following the direction of a child’s finger, the old Magus looked into the sky where there were five existences that seemed like gods.

The berserk lightning disappeared around them, forming a strange vacuum.

Tens of figures appeared in the air, surrounding them. However, it was the side that had more people that seemed to be feeling dread.

‘Perhaps only existences at Morning Star and above have the qualifications to take part in this battle...’ The old Magus sighed inside and flew even quicker.

# Chapter 653 - Crushing And Sneak Attack

---

Seeing only a few streaks of light fleeing from the range of their attack in Düz City, Leylin sighed in disappointment, “Even Magi have lost their awareness of danger...”

“It’s not that they’ve lost their awareness. It’s just that they don’t believe it. The safety of Düz City is as guaranteed as the fact that the sun rises in the east and water flows downhill. It is their truth, their law! They never considered that there would be a day when their city is attacked.”

Melinda spoke disdainfully, “Magi like these are a disgrace to our Magus World, vermin! Let me purge them!” Her hands pushed downwards with complete coldness.

Rumble!

Ka-cha!

The earth rumbled and countless lightning snakes crackled, their berserk behaviour intensifying tenfold as they charged towards Düz City. The earth seemed to cave into some formless pressure, forming a pit. It was as if the air itself was being crushed.

Countless acolytes and regular humans instantly turned into a bloody mist.

The thunderstorm crashed down on Düz City, causing the rank

2s and 3s who'd been lucky enough to flee to suffer massive losses.

“Thunder Purgatory! Wash away all that filth!” Melinda's expression was callous, her voice strangely spreading far and wide. Lightning struck down violently, ploughing through the city.

‘This woman is insane!’ Leylin's pupils shrank as he felt the power hidden within the rank 5 spell.

Though he wasn't any sort of good Samaritan, he wouldn't kill people for no reason at all. His murders were committed for benefits. Melinda's actions made it seem like she was venting some repressed emotions after a long period of time.

Leylin touched his chin, having some conjectures of his own.

“Enough!” It was at this juncture that someone like a retainer to the Monarch yelled from amongst those Magi at Leylin and the rest, “Even if all of you are Radiant Moon Magi, you can't trample on the territory of a Breaking Dawn like this! The Blazing Flame Monarch will punish you!”

The tens of Morning Star Magi surrounding Leylin and the rest all wore Magus robes with flame runes carved into them; it was similar to a uniform. This Magus who was like a Retainer was their leader.

“Hoho! He said they want to punish us. I'm so scared!” Melinda covered her mouth, voice turning into that of a young girl.

“How are you going to punish us? Just burning our souls? It’s been long, have you no creativity?” Though she looked innocent, what Melinda said caused the surrounding Magi to shrink back.

“What? Aren’t you going to come and punish me?” Melinda took a step forward, and the tens of Magi around her couldn’t help but retreat, cold sweat on their faces.

Good heavens! While they were subordinates of the Blazing Flame Monarch, they were only Morning Stars facing five Radiant Moon Magi. If Carol, Eugene or the other Radiant Moon were around, they definitely had the courage to do so, but now?

“Hehe... If you’re not coming here, then I’ll go there!” Melinda’s eyes seemed to flash with white lightning, and she turned into a gust of wind.

“What do you want to do?”

“I won’t let you do whatever you want! Morning Star domain! Arcane Art...” The Morning Star Magus that looked like a retainer struggled, the rings of light that represented four innate spells beginning to flicker behind him.

Boom! In that moment, Melinda had arrived in front of him and raised her arms, her pale slender palms penetrating his innate defences. Under his astounded expression, the rings from his innate spells were extinguished.

“You... How’s that possible?” The old retainer spat out blood. The backlash from his spell being interrupted had even cracked his sea of consciousness.

“Power of isolation again? You really do lack in creativity,” Melinda shook her head, grabbing him by the neck.

“Peak Radiant Moon! She’s a peak Radiant Moon Magus!” Everything Melinda had just done was executed exquisitely, but even so, it would require a strength at the peak of rank 5. Only that would suffice to suppress a Morning Star Arcane Art and even cause a backlash.

After this was made obvious, the many Morning Star Magi stared at Melinda in immense fear.

The retainer who was being held by the neck flushed red, gritting out a few words from between his teeth, “Ma– Master Blazing Flame Monarch won’t let you off!”

“I’ll be waiting. Even if your master doesn’t come for me, I’ll go look for them!” Melinda chuckled. Her outrageous words resulted in even more dread on the part of the Morning Stars.

“Warning! Warning! Large numbers of enemies have appeared. Determined to be at rank 5. Automatic defences have been activated, dispatching Discipline Legion.” A robotic voice sounded in the golden flames at the heart of Düz City. This was the spirit genie that controlled the city’s defences. The giant adamantine

cannons and defensive runes on the city walls that were yet to be destroyed flickered to life with its words.

Rumble! A short distance away, two legions of Magi advanced like a black tide.

“Mmm... It reacted in less than ten seconds and even dispatched troops. Not bad,” Leylin praised.

“Hehe... That’s the Monarch’s elite corps, the Crimson Fire Legion and the Discipline Legion. It’s a pity that their leaders have all fallen at our hands....” Melinda surveyed the area, and then asked disdainfully, “Which of you are going to take care of this?”

The moment she jabbed forward, a black streak charged into the Discipline Legion. A gigantic black sword could be seen weaving through the troops, spilling blood and flinging flesh.

Their terrifying magic attacks seemed to have no effect on the giant sword, and the legion immediately fell into chaos.

“Keke... Since Clarke has chosen the Discipline Legion, I’ll go for the Crimson Fire. Just as well, I need a large number of spirit bodies as supplements anyway...” Jin snickered from nearby. He currently looked like a hologram, his extremely blurry body suddenly increasing in size. His black robes spread around to cover the Crimson Fire Legion like a curtain.

“Woo woo...” With a strange whistling, the Magi of the Crimson



Fire Legion collapsed one after another, rays of light that seemed like souls floating from their heads. These things that were similar to white flames were all absorbed by the black robe.

Whether it was rank 1 and 2 Magi troops, or even the squadrons of rank 3s and 4s, everything completely fell apart. Numerous Magi howled as they cast blindingly bright spells, with some Morning Star Arcane Arts even, but Jin easily blocked them.

With ruthless resolution, the black robe continuously absorbed the souls.

‘A spell that specifically targets the soul?’ Leylin’s eyes flashed. ‘Though it can only deal with Magi below rank 5, it’s best for harvesting weaklings.’

In their short confrontation, the Blazing Flame Monarch’s two elite legions completely crumbled down, and many of their Magi immediately tried to flee.

The few Morning Stars at the corners exchanged glances, coming to a mutual understanding as they turned into streaks of light and disappeared into the distance.

“Don’t... Go...” The Magus that Melinda was holding onto by the neck was still struggling, but unfortunately, it was to no avail. In a situation where the two elite legions were decimated, and the Blazing Flame Monarch was not showing himself, the Morning Star Magi would be fools if they continued to stake their lives on this and fight Radiant Moons.

“Let me do something as well,” Leylin stood up at the moment, staring at the giant cannons and adamantine puppets controlled by the city’s spirit genie, “It’ll be strange if I don’t.” He laughed slightly, producing a few grey test tubes from his pouch and tossing them into the air.

The sound of shattering glass sounded as the test tubes collided in mid-air. A white powder spread from the point of impact, constantly increasing in volume until it covered all of Düz City in a few moments.

The giant adamantine cannons on the city walls creaked as if under an incredible burden, eventually collapsing with a rumble to reveal a frame that had been completely corroded. A thick layer of rust formed on numerous adamantine puppets, as if a long period of time had passed. They turned into a huge pile of scrap iron.

Numerous runes lost their lustre inch by inch, and even the spirit genie’s voice from the heart of Düz City seemed to lose its coordination, as if something powerful was interfering with it.

“Hehe, good job Leylin! If the spirit genie continues to control the defensive forces of the city it would’ve been comparable to a Radiant Moon. Though we aren’t afraid of it, it’s best to eliminate such troubles.” Melinda encouraged him with a smile on her face.

“How did you know?” The retainer in the air widened his eyes in astonishment.

“You don’t need that information. Look how the city has crumbled, you should die and rot with it.” Melinda sighed, and the light in his eyes gradually dimmed.

Swish! At this moment, something strange happened! The void beside Melinda crumbled, and a translucent figure emerged to form a bayonet spike that pierced towards her abdomen.

Rank 5 energy was emitted from this translucent figure, even if only at New Moon. This sudden attack was enough to land Melinda in trouble!

However, she still chuckled as she let go of the retainer’s corpse, a crystal shield appearing in front of her.

In the distance, Joanna suddenly ended her inaction. Large amounts of vines spread through the space, wrapping around the assassin.

“So you’re the hidden trump card of the Blazing Flame Monarch. A Radiant Moon assassin? Just Düz City alone has tens of Morning Stars and a Radiant Moon guarding it, I’m growing more interested in my future profits!”

# Chapter 654 - Control And Discovery

---

The translucent figure being bound by the vines had a pair of deathly still eyes. Even though the assassination had been unsuccessful, there were no undulations whatsoever despite his life being at risk.

Rumble! A terrifying force from his truesoul formed five different rings of light.

“Radiant Moon Arcane Art...” His voice was hoarse, as if he had not spoken for a long time. The surrounding Morning Star Magi also gritted their teeth, power pouring forth from their point masses to support their Morning Star Arcane Arts.

This Radiant Moon evidently had made contact with these Morning Star Magi at some point and arranged a counter-attack!

Pak! Leylin instantly came before a Morning Star Magus, a giant serpent figure from his hands ruthlessly piercing through the other party’s innate defences, causing him to cough blood while quickly retreating.

The backlash from a Morning Star Arcane Art being interrupted caused that Magus to howl in agony.

“If the ten or so Morning Stars were to attack me together, I might find it slightly troublesome, but now?” Leylin looked towards Melinda. A terrifying rank 5 energy storm was swallowing the region around her.

However, Leylin could sense Melinda's aura. She was fine.

“After so many years, it's only these few Magi that are loyal to the Blazing Flame Monarch? How pitiful.” As Leylin's eyes scanned past the area, the Morning Stars could not stand the immense pressure and the rings of light from their Arcane Arts collapsed behind them. They held their heads and escaped.

Rumble! Radiant Moon soul force spread brazenly about the battlefield. A few rays of light suddenly pierced through and dispersed the energy storm, revealing the figure of that rank 5 Radiant Moon Magus.

Although there was a cross-shaped wound on him that was corroding into his body, a terrifying Radiant Moon Arcane Art had taken form in his hands. “Void Flames...” The Radiant Moon murmured under his breath.

A formless flame energy emerged from the void that caused even Leylin's expression to change. ‘Melinda and Joanna, those two idiots. How could they let their opponent finish his Arcane Art?’ he cursed, fingers pressing on the grey ring causing fog to permeate the area.

Melinda saw her opponent casting Void Flames from in front of her, but surprisingly her expression was as if she'd gotten away with something.

She began chanting, seriousness emerging on her face. Her right

hand pointed in the direction of the Void Flames.

“Adhering to the ancient agreement of the truesoul, Void Flames! Devour everything before me for my sake...”

The formless flames crackled and flowed backwards, enveloping the very Magus who'd cast them within. Boiling heat spread through the area as the sound of an innate spell crumbling mixed with cries of disbelief and pain.

“Impossible... Why can you manipulate the Flames... You... You're...” He was cut off at this point, devoured by the formless flames. His blood and flesh separated from his skeleton, and in the end even his bones melted down.

The energy from a truesoul being destroyed spread out, this Radiant Moon Arcane Art even targeted the soul!

Seeing the opponent's figure being annihilated, Leylin removed his palm from his ring, pupils shrinking, ‘Controlling a Radiant Moon Arcane Art and causing it to act on the user? This is more difficult than interfering with it. Unless...’

Swish! Seeing that their Radiant Moon had fallen and the Blazing Flame Monarch still wasn't showing himself, the remaining Morning Star Magi completely lost their will to battle on. Air exploded and light flashed as they fled or teleported away.

“This Radiant Moon should have been the Blazing Flame

Monarch's last line of defence..." Having done all this, Melinda seemed to be in a strange state. She seemed sorrowful yet relieved, as if a heavy weight had been lifted off her shoulders.

"The rule of the Blazing Flame Monarch hereby ends." Melinda sighed, hand making a grabbing action towards the heart of Düz City.

Rumble! A large white palm appeared in the air, grasping the holy fire right at the centre. Under such an attack, even the tower genie was completely wrecked instantly.

Düz City quieted down, and the light from its large-scale defensive spell formation dimmed.

"Could it be... Is Düz City is going to have a different master from today on?"

"What about the Blazing Flame Monarch? Where is he?" The surviving Magi let out noises of disbelief.

Yet all of them had one premonition from the extinguishing of the holy fire. Today would be a turning point in the history of the central continent!

---

Groups of Magi wearing robes with lightning patterns on them arranged the defences outside in an orderly manner, gathering resources and the like. Occasionally, a few old people worked on

decrypting the warehouses' defensive formations.

These lightning patterned Magus robes were the signature of Jupiter's Lightning. Besides them were Magi with a Gemini sign on their robes, doing the same thing.

Seeing Melinda and Clarke so brazenly ordering their organisations to plunder the area, Leylin was left speechless.

He hadn't considered these matters when they'd set out. Even if he wanted to dispatch the Warlocks of the Union, he didn't have the authority yet. As for the Warlocks of the Ouroboros Clan? They were too low-ranked, and would only serve to embarrass him.

Melinda approached Leylin and stared at the Magi of Jupiter's Lightning outside, her eyes undecipherable, "My subordinates will set up defensive spell formations and guard them, which will help us gain some time."

She had helped Zegna build Jupiter's Lightning, and now the whole organisation was in her hands. If Zegna were still alive, he might have died of rage.

The Magi with a Gemini symbol on them belonged to Clarke and Joanna. Seeing the bulging sacks under their clothes, it was obvious that they had obtained many treasures.

Düz City was the core of the Blazing Flame Monarch's territory,



and the precious items within were innumerable. If not for the Blazing Flame Monarch currently being in a weak phase, staying somewhere else to avoid danger, Leylin and the rest would not have taken the area down so easily.

With the action of five Radiant Moons, the change in leadership of Düz City had occurred smoothly.

Besides Leylin and the rest who had obtained some great items, even their subordinates had gained ample rewards.

Awoo.... Roar... At this moment, Leylin saw a monster formed of several gigantic beasts charging forward, showing berserk determination and bloodlust.

“What is that thing?” Leylin stared at what seemed to be a giant mutated slime formed from gelatin and was stunned.

“That’s the biological laboratory of the Blazing Flame Monarch. I let out all the experiments being imprisoned there.” Melinda took out a mirror and tidied her long hair, not really caring about this.

“Such a dangerous thing...” Leylin was speechless. Some of these monsters were evidently as powerful as Morning Stars. One of them was laying low, and Leylin could sense its desire for slaughter.

Once let out, a calamity would descend on this region. Even Morning Star Magi would be in trouble if they were besieged by

these creatures.

“It’s not our organisation nor our territory. Is there a need to worry about this?” Melinda blinked at Leylin, seeming innocent.

“Alright! Come with me, everyone. I’ve already analysed the coordinates of the Fiery World from the astral gate!” Joanna’s voice sounded, and all the Magi gathered at the heart of the room.

A flaming astral gate was there, already activated. This was the gate in Düz City’s astral laboratory, and the coordinates had been decoded from it. It was also why Melinda was confident in bringing Leylin and the rest to their final target, the place where the Blazing Flame Monarch was hiding.

The Blazing Flame Monarch was currently at their weakest. Leylin and the rest had already plundered Düz City, which would completely offend the Monarch anyway. If they didn’t want to be attacked in revenge, the only way was to strike first and eliminate the Monarch!

‘Perhaps this was also why this woman had us break Düz first, to compel us to follow through.’

Leylin shot Melinda a glance. The female Magus seemed to be very calm now, but he could see a trace of emotion in her eyes.

“The opponent has hidden the coordinates to the Fiery World

within a pile of wrong data, but I still managed to find it!” With a tap by Joanna, a few sparks flew towards Leylin and the others.

[Beep! Discovered spiritual force information, determined to be astral coordinates! No records in database.]

The A.I. Chip immediately intoned. All the information in the spark was immediately transmitted to Leylin.

Melinda nodded, “The coordinates to this world was one of the prizes from this operation. We’ve agreed before on everyone having it.” Immediately after, the spark was flicked into the astral gate.

Blue flames flickered violently, forming something like a door. A terrifying boiling heat was transmitted from behind the astral gate.

“The last step in our operation shall be completed in the spatial crack of the Fiery World. Let’s go!” Melinda was the first to step into the astral gate.

“We’ve all left behind puppets or clones here. If the situation is off, we can immediately open the astral gate and return,” Joanna spoke slowly, “Outside there’s the chaos from the beasts, and we have subordinates keeping watch. We have ample time for warnings.”

Having said this, she walked in together with Clarke.

“Let’s go!” Leylin watched Jin who was in void form and rubbed his nose. They stepped into the radiance of the astral gate together.

# Chapter 655 - Maze

---

Leylin had already experienced spacetime travel several times, and by this point was used to it. The moment he passed through the astral gate, the peak New Moon truesoul in his sea of consciousness began to twinkle, a layer of gentle and quiet yet very solid soul force enveloping his body. Whether it was spatial turbulence or terrifying World's Will, everything was kept out by it.

Even Morning Stars could roam around nearby world cracks using just their body defences. This was no issue at all for Radiant Moons.

Through a soul force scan, Leylin sensed a world full of fire elemental particles. Unlike the Lava World he'd been to before, this place lacked rocks and other energy particles. It was a world of pure red, filled only by fire.

The world's origin force of fire elements was several times greater than that of the Lava World. If the Lava World was a celestial body, then although one couldn't liken this world to a boiling sun, it would be a moon.

'The larger a world, the richer its world origin force. Under the influence of the origin force here, it's not strange for a rank 6 Magus to comprehend some laws of fire...' Leylin sighed.

As a rank 6 Magus that had taken over the whole Flame World, the Blazing Flame Monarch was undeniably the 'World's Child'

here. With the support of the world's origin force, his comprehension of the laws of fire could progress rapidly. It was natural for him to understand them.

Leylin suddenly understood a fact, 'It's no wonder that all Magi, whether ancient or recent, frantically take over the surrounding foreign worlds. So there's this type of benefit to it! Once you take over a world, you can gradually combine with the world's origin force and finally comprehend laws, breaking through into rank 7...'

'If one Magus can completely take over the Magus World, which is much more powerful than the Fiery World, and be nurtured by its origin force, what sort of benefits can they get?'

Leylin's heart was set aflame. The Magus World was vast, and even the surface had yet to be explored not to mention the countless subterranean worlds, It was much easier for a Magus now to conquer these areas as compared to the ancient era where there were many existences who comprehended laws.

Just taking over a small world would bring immense benefits. What about taking over the largest, the Magus World?

"If someone can successfully unify the Magus World and obtain the nurture of its world origin force, they can make use of this strength to reach the limits, to reach rank 9!" Leylin mumbled to himself. He could not conceal his desire to enter the highest realm that a Magus could achieve.

Did achieving the peak of rank 9 grant immortality? This was a question that was whirling through Leylin's mind. However, it was also a question that he could probe into only when he did attain that rank.

Immortality was Leylin's goal, magic simply a means to an end. If a rank 9 Magus was not immortal, then he would explore further and look for something else. He would not regret it even if he died in the process!

This was a path of hope. He would not tolerate doubt, weakness; he would not waver.

'Not even ancient Magi could unify the Magus World, but I'll take this task on!' Leylin clenched his fists.

Golden and crimson was everywhere in the flames, and the already boiling heat only continued to increase. The air was very dry, to the point that one felt suffocated. A few fire elementals roamed within the flames. Although the Fiery World was hell for any life form made of flesh and blood, it was their heaven!

Lightning flashed in the void, opening up a gigantic, sparkling door. The door opened to reveal the figures of Leylin and the remaining Magi. Energy at Radiant Moon caused the flames to part automatically, not daring to approach and harass them.

"What high temperatures! The Fiery World really isn't a place for non-elemental life forms." Melinda carefully placed a defensive layer of icy water on her skin, something that caused Leylin to roll

his eyes secretly.

She turned around after taking care of her skin, looking serious, “Be careful. The Fiery World is the Blazing Flame Monarch’s nest. Most of the fire elementals at Morning Star and Radiant Moon are stationed here. If not for having to suppress the rebellion of the fire elemental particles and the pressure from the world, he would long since have sent these elementals to the Magus World....”

Leylin and the other nodded. How many Morning Stars and Radiant Moons could a world produce? If they went over to the Magus World, they could probably cause a huge ruckus.

However, there was an issue with this as well. Not considering their duties as guards of Fiery World, a change of environment and the additional suppression from being inside another world were large issues.

The Magus World was one of the most powerful worlds, and its suppression of foreigners would be one of the most terrifying. A drop in several ranks would be considered slight. The unlucky ones would directly be crushed by the world origin force itself, joining the boundless dust in the void.

For Leylin and the rest, going from the Magus World to other worlds was like going from a high-ranked dungeon to a lower-ranked one. The suppression of the world wasn’t that serious, and there wouldn’t be instances of drops in rank. Things weren’t as rosy for those who went from lower-ranked worlds to higher-ranked ones.



For instance, if Scarlet Eye entered the Magus World, he was likely to drop to Morning Star from Radiant Moon. This would be even more serious for elemental life forms like the fire elementals. The most suitable environment for them was the Fiery World.

“The Blazing Flame Monarch is hiding in one of the world cracks of the Fiery World. There are many maze spells as well as powerhouses of the Fiery World guarding it. There are many rank 4 and 5 fire elementals, and this is a world where they get the greatest increase in strength. They’ll outperform themselves.” Melinda spoke slowly, and Leylin and the rest looked grim.

It would be hellishly difficult to defeat large numbers of Morning Stars and Radiant Moons in a hostile environment and then butt heads with the Blazing Flame Monarch who was at rank 6.

And yet, that was all that was required for a Monarch to fall. The Blazing Flame Monarch was currently at his weakest point anyway, something that allowed Melinda’s group this opportunity.

“Don’t worry. When the Monarch massacred my people, I vowed to the astral plane that I would use his blood and wash away the humiliation!” Clarke brandished the large black sword in his hands, terrifying sharpness exploding, “My baby is also thirsting for blood...”

“No matter what brother does, I’ll be supporting you!” Joanna looked towards her brother.

“Morning Star and Radiant Moon fire elementals are nothing much... Keke...I’m having more expectations towards the Blazing Flame Monarch’s comprehension of Laws...” The blurry phantom of Jin snickered.

“Since we’re already here, we’re prepared for all that!” Leylin chuckled, fingers brushing over his ring involuntarily. The cold surface of the ring felt smooth, giving him more confidence.

“Many thanks, everyone! We’ll definitely win this time, and the rewards will definitely satisfy you! Please wait for a while, I’ll use a technique to look for the spatial crack that the Blazing Flame Monarch is hiding in!”

Melinda’s eyes suddenly changed colour, her pupils shrinking and disappearing to leave just the whites behind. Gazing at her eyes, even Leylin felt as if his mind was empty, all his secrets being exposed. His heart couldn’t help but palpitate with fear.

“Found it!” All of a sudden, Melinda opened her palm and a purple daffodil floated out of it. It gave off endless energy waves. Space was pulled apart like a door, revealing a pitch black tunnel.

‘So quickly?’ Leylin was slightly astonished, but he followed her in anyway.

Light flashed and space rumbled, and Leylin and the rest instantly appeared outside a world crack. Within, the Fiery World was like a blazing sun, filled with dazzling rays of light.

A large-scaled labyrinth floated outside the world barrier, as if the highest ruler of the Fiery World.

Outside the black building, many eyes flickered with various lights. They were Morning Star elementals. Even more powerful auras were transmitted from within.

Leylin even felt like he was being spied on, causing his hair to stand.

Joanna sucked in a cold breath, “Such a complicated labyrinth, and so many fire elementals. This will be difficult...”

“Now is the best opportunity to kill our target!” Melinda did not take another glance at Joanna. “This is the Alanore Labyrinth. Each Magus that enters will be sent to different areas, and we’ll only be able to meet again in the main hall. I’ll be off!”

Melinda turned into a streak of lightning, and practically in an instant broke out of the perimeter of the fire elementals as she disappeared into the labyrinth.

“Haha... Blazing Flame Monarch, here I come! Tremble! Repent! I want you to pay the price for all that you’ve done!” Clarke’s expression was excited to the extreme as he waved his terrifying large black blade and charged in.

Schlick! A three-headed giant fire elemental dog in his way was slashed into two, boiling lava blood flying everywhere. Seeing her

brother this way, Joanna sighed and followed closely behind him.

“I hate elemental life forms the most. The lack of souls will cause my works of art lose their beauty!”

Jin muttered to himself, turning into a large black shadow that covered practically half the labyrinth. The black figure began to pervade through the insides.

# Chapter 656 - Blazing Flame Monarch

---

‘They’re all lunatics!’ Leylin could only sigh at how insane his group members were, ‘Lunatics with power are the most troublesome lot!’

Hss— A tremendous Kemoyin appeared behind him, and a terrifying black hole formed that exerted a tremendous suction force on the fire elementals.

“Devour!” The terrifying might of a rank 5 Kemoyin Emperor drew everything in, be it flames, light, or even space itself.

The fire elementals began to bawl miserably, looking ready to retreat. However, their bodies were constantly being pulled into the black hole, and they were eventually devoured. There was a clear path in the space when Leylin moved.

The five Radiant Moons had successfully broken through the outer layer and entered the interior of the labyrinth. Powerful auras could be felt occasionally from its various parts.

---

At the heart of the gigantic labyrinth, on a throne of pure gold.

A human figure shrouded completely in flames raised their head, a translucent mirror forming in front of them.

Footage flashed, showing Leylin and the others. The Blazing Flame Monarch's eyes constantly twinkled as they scanned past Leylin, Clarke, and the rest. Their eyes rested on Jin's body for a brief moment before focusing completely on Melinda.

“The power of fate has brought everything back to its original trajectory,” the Blazing Flame Monarch murmured, two red figures splitting from his form and darting in different directions...

The numbers on the screen of the A.I. Chip were in constant flux until it came up with a conclusion.

[Beep! Scan completed. Determined to be the first level of the Alanore Labyrinth. 12,800m ahead, high-grade energy has been detected, determined to be a rank 5 being. Possibility of it being a fire elemental: 87.18%.]

“So I'll need to break through all the barriers ahead to reach the Blazing Flame Monarch?” Leylin was now walking along a large and wide passageway that was tens of metres high. It looked like an area made specifically for giants, and he seemed minuscule in it.

“It also prevents teleportation, and has such scary confining runes!” Leylin shook his head, “Any loopholes or gaps that can be taken advantage of have been plugged. One can only move forward step by step with momentum!

“Why does this feel like clearing the stages of a game from my

previous world?” Leylin touched his chin in speechlessness. The blue light in his eyes did not weaken. The A.I. Chip’s scanning ability had been employed to its limit.

This maze-like structure had completely split the five of them apart. Even if Leylin wanted to search for and make contact with his companions, there would be no response. If Leylin was the Blazing Flame Monarch, he would be a fool not to take advantage of this and attack his enemies when they were divided.

Hence, besides being cautious of traps and obstacles, he was very focused on the possible attacks from the Flame Monarch.

Rumble! Boiling heat waves blew towards Leylin as he walked out of the passage, and a gigantic lava lake appeared before him.

White air bubbles constantly exploded in the area, giving off a very strong smell of sulphur.

The lake stretched as far as the eye could see, into the boundless red horizon.

‘Is the rank 5 creature the A.I. Chip detected in here?’ Leylin’s eyes focused on the lava lake, seemingly penetrating through the thick lava and into its depths.

“Come out!” he said with a smile on his lips as a gigantic two-headed figure abruptly darted into the lake, splashing around at will. The lava exploded, crashing down everywhere like rain. A

black figure grew in size as it suddenly emerged from the bottom of the lake, revealing terrifying mandibles similar to that of an alligator.

Crack! The two-headed snake figure was torn up by the alligator's mouth, and the large black figure continued to ascend from the lava lake.

Roarrrr! The alligator-like being in front of Leylin had flames burning all over it. Droplets of scarlet lava dripped down from its scales and cracks constantly, its thin body still enormous. Its sinister looking teeth were set in a large mouth, above which were two scarlet soul flames.

It looked like a flame alligator that had evolved vertically, possessing the arms and long legs of humans. Its fingers were like black reverse hooks, and appeared very sharp.

‘A.I. Chip, conduct scan!’ Leylin ordered without hesitation.

[Beep! Flame Sovereign King, rank 5 being! It is an elemental life form. Strength: 238? Agility: 124? Vitality: 495? Spiritual force: 1523? A unique resident of the Fiery World, it is a rare mutation among hundreds of Morning Star fire elementals, allowing it to be a commander. Innate abilities: 1. Fire Affinity, 2: Fire Skin, 3: Fire Elemental Summon, 4: Unknown...]

The A.I. Chip quickly projected a 3D image of a large Fire



Sovereign King in front of him. Beside the image was also a column with data in it that presented the opponent's statistics in detail.

“A rank 5 fire elemental life form with such stats!” The figure of a Kemoyin Serpent Emperor appeared behind Leylin.

If he didn't want to use his trump card, Leylin would have to make use of certain methods to deal with a Radiant Moon rank creature.

“Roarr!” The Flame Sovereign King snarled, and three dark red bundles of light separated from its body, falling into the lava lake.

Dark red bundles of light constantly expanded and eventually exploded, revealing three fire elemental life forms that had strange forms. Each of them had energy undulations that were at least at Morning Star.

Swish Scarlet energy channels appeared at the Flame Sovereign King's legs, and the water level of the entire lava lake sank. With the absorption of a large amount of lava, the toll on it from having a few subordinates separating from it had completely disappeared.

“A summoning spell that allows it to split up into beings with Morning Star strength, and it even has methods to replenish its energy!”

Leylin stroked his chin, “This guy's vitality is just too powerful in the Fiery World. With just a slight misstep, I'll have to deal with an

arduous battle, which is rather disadvantageous.”

Roar! The three Morning Star fire elementals charged out at this moment, accompanied by the enraged howls of the Flame Sovereign King

“Bloodline Seal!” Leylin spread his hands and red bloodline force formed a ring of light, binding a Morning Star fire elemental.

“Icy Sphere!” At the same time, a sparkling giant ball of ice exploded in the air, and snowflakes fell everywhere, even causing the temperature of the lava lake to drop by a few degrees.

The two fire elementals that were attacking were covered by a layer of frost, solidifying and fusing with the ground. They were completely frozen.

[Warning! Warning! Energy in the opposing fire elemental’s body has violent undulations, determined to be on the verge of self-detonation. Host, please take note.]

The A.I. Chip’s prompt caused Leylin’s expression to instantly change. At this moment, the sounds of the Flame Sovereign King’s roars were transmitted over.

Awoo! Bang! Bang! Along with terrifying sound waves, the three Morning Star fire elementals were filled up with a bright layer of

red as they exploded, boiling hot heat waves spreading through the area.

Though Leylin had gotten a warning beforehand from the A.I. Chip and darted away in time, he still hadn't escaped completely unscathed.

Roar! Roar! Roar! Roar! At this moment, four bundles of glimmering dark-red balls formed four Morning Star fire elementals, and Leylin's expression went dark.

"If I don't take care of the main body, this will be endless!" Demonic black flames formed around Leylin's body, devouring the waves of fire from the previous detonations.

The black phoenix flames raged in the Fiery World, their devouring ability causing the opposing elementals to retreat. Even the Sovereign King was put in fear.

"Obscure Fireplume Technique— Soaring Demonic Phoenix!"

Along with a high-pitched phoenix cry, a large black phoenix appeared in the air, two blazing flames sweeping across the region. The four elementals immediately burst apart, and their flames were absorbed by the black, demonic fire. This allowed the black phoenix to become even more enormous as it charged towards the Flame Sovereign King.

Roar! The Flame Sovereign King bellowed, a layer of flaming skin

covering it as it collided with the tremendous black phoenix.

Demonic black flames flew in all directions just as the scarlet flames did, both using up each other's strength and devouring each other. The enormous vibrations spread in all directions in the labyrinth...

In another area, Melinda chose a path with extreme familiarity. She'd met almost no dangers along the way, and was moving without obstruction.

Her eyes were now glimmering with something brighter than light itself. "I'm here. Are you ready?"

All of a sudden, the immense waves caused by Leylin travelled here, causing even this path she was taking to shake.

"The helpers this time are very powerful!" Melinda laughed in satisfaction, her figure disappearing into the darkness.

---

Whoosh! A giant black blade slashed out, the sword lights instantly causing four attacks that each beheaded an elemental. Four large heads fell, blazing with raging flames.

"You did well, brother!" The sword-wielding fighter was naturally Clarke. Behind him, Joanna stared at him with an unspeakable tenderness within her eyes.

These two rank 5 Magi had somehow bypassed the limitations of the Alanore Labyrinth and were working together!

“Soon, Joanna. Soon, Brother will bring you along to take revenge!” Clarke chuckled.

All of a sudden, his expression changed. “Be careful!”

# Chapter 657 - The Labyrinth's Collapse

---

Void shattered, and a red figure appeared beside Joanna. Endless flames lay docile on his body, flickering with scarlet light. This was evidently a peak rank 5 Magus.

He solemnly grabbed at Joanna, pure golden flames turning into sharp claws that caused Joanna's defences to break inch by inch.

"Blazing Flame Monarch!" Clarke howled with fury, arriving in front of her. The sharp, flaming claws ruthlessly grabbed him, causing the steel armour to break. Even the skin underneath had been roasted a charred black, revealing bright silver, metallic bones.

Within the Alanore Labyrinth, there was only one person who could move freely. And that was its owner, the Blazing Flame Monarch!

Clarke spat out fresh blood as he and Joanna were sent flying.

"Brother! BROTHER!" Joanna kept screaming, eyes instantly turning blood red. "HOW DARE YOU HARM MY BROTHER. I WANT YOU DEAD!"

Thin, translucent threads emerged from her hands, and even the void itself was cut through as they headed in the direction of the red figure in the air.

Fierce golden flames struck the translucent threads. Under the burning of the flames, the threads gradually melted. Not far away, Joanna turned pale.

“Joanna, get behind me.” At this point, Clarke stood up once again, as if he did not have a life-threatening injury on his chest, “Blazing Flame Monarch, I’ve waited for this day for a long time.”

Bzzt! Clarke’s hands were on his giant black sword, emanating the terrifying undulations from high-grade magic equipment. The sharp rays of light were bright and dazzling, and even the void was constantly crumbling in front of it.

“Sorrow of Gaia!” Clarke yelled in his anger, the phantom of a vast land appearing behind him. An aura of rot converged on his body, forming terrifying sword glints.

“Death and decay are not something a living soul can control.” The scarlet being in the air spoke slowly, a red sword with flames on it similarly appearing in its hands. “In the name of Fire, your only destination shall be the stillness of an eternal death.”

The whole world seemed to tremble and cheer as large amounts of fire elemental particles wound automatically around the surface of the flaming sword.

These two longswords that had surpassed the limitations of space connected in the next instant, the dark green force that represented death and wilting up against the scarlet fire. Their collision formed a storm that annihilated everything. Red sword

light flashed in the roiling storm, and Clarke's whole body fell backwards.

To be precise, 'half his body' fell back. Everything under Clarke's lower abdomen had completely disappeared, as if he had been chopped in half at the waist. It revealed a mechanical backbone and translucent fluids.

The scarlet figure of the Blazing Flame Monarch was revealed once more as the energy storm dissipated. He stared at Clarke's wounds and suddenly laughed.

"It's not even a mechanical modification, just the puppet of a soul servant. The true Clarke should have died long ago." He turned around, staring at Joanna who had tears in her eyes.

"A pretty good soul division technique. It's no wonder the two of you weren't separated when you came in, you are one and the same. Clarke's your courage, longing and hatred; after removing these qualities, your main body is only left with weakness."

"No, my brother isn't dead." Joanna cried out like a kitten whose tail had been stepped on, tears spilling out of her eyes.

"Don't... cry... sister..." The half-bodied Clarke on the ground consoled her with a smile, but the voice grew increasingly rigid, and the sound intermittent. It eventually turned robotic.

"Ah, wait. I seem to remember only a little girl surviving during



that massacre then. Was it you?" A strange smile appeared on the Blazing Flame Monarch's face, "You actually placed all your hopes on someone else. Even if you've reached rank 5, you're still trash."

Words that were as sharp as a blade caused Joanna's face to turn deathly pale. "No, I'm not..." She hugged her head, on the brink of a complete breakdown.

The Blazing Flame Monarch looked proud, and just as he was about to deal her another blow and upset her further, his expression suddenly changed.

Joanna was still hugging her head, but streams of black gas were dispelled from her body. A dangerous aura formed around her, one that even had him considering retreat.

'What's going on? Wait, she's the descendant of that deceased clan. Could it be...' The Blazing Flame Monarch's eyes shrank, and large amounts of flaming shackles appeared and shot towards Joanna. He was one step too late.

Joanna looked up and began to scream. An endless terrifying undulation immediately enveloped the whole region...

Thud! The terrifying rank 5 fire elemental, the alligator-human hybrid Flame Sovereign King toppled down, the flames on its body extinguishing bit by bit.

The two bundles of soul flames gradually dimmed in its eye

sockets. Soul light was constantly dispelled from the body, bringing with it dense fire elemental particles that were like fireflies. They quickly disappeared into the air.

Chirp! A high-pitched cry sounded and a large black phoenix descended from the skies. The flames withdrew to reveal Leylin who was within.

“The rank 5 Flame Sovereign King really was quite troublesome. I almost had to use my Arcane Art...”

Leylin stood at the edges of the lava lake. After the death of the Sovereign King, the black walls of the labyrinth at the other side of the lake pushed and pulled each other like toy building blocks, revealing a pitch-black pathway.

“It’s hard to tell how many stages there are in the labyrinth, unless...” Leylin stroked the ring on his hand.

A maze set up by a rank 6 Magus was something a rank 5 like him could only solve directly. It required another rank 6 to act to break it, or other special circumstances.

“AAAAAAHHHH...” An ear-piercing screech was transmitted to Leylin’s ears, the hatred and terrifying energy it held causing Leylin’s expression to change slightly. “It came from there... Did anything happen?”

Boom! One of the walls slowly crumbled following the explosion,

and large amounts of black dust fell down.

“The labyrinth is already showing signs of collapsing. This power seems to be a unique type that’s rumoured to have existed in ancient times.” Leylin’s eyes glinted coldly.

While he was focused on the energy undulations, space suddenly collapsed around him. A scarlet figure appeared before him like before.

Flames seethed in the opponent’s hands, seemingly breaking their limitations to possess a terrifying heat. They caused the other energy particles to constantly draw back. There were only flames within this domain.

“The Origin Law of fire. So you’re the one who’s been spying on me,” Leylin snickered, his right hand unhesitatingly activating the silver ring.

Streams of fog dissipated, instantly forming a world of fog.

“Roar!” The phantom of a four-armed cyclops with hard skin emerged from the ring.

“The Fog Space of the ancient Misty Fog Giant.” The world of fog enveloped Leylin and the person who had launched a sneak attack. The opponent’s law of fire was already tangled up by the fog, using up its energy.

With the blood from Bevis as the basis, and via in-depth processing by the A.I. Chip, Leylin had successfully created a bloodline imprint of the Misty Fog Giant and sealed it within the ring.

Since it was a spell that could be activated using a bloodline, Leylin's bloodline imprint had reached a might of rank 6.

'Is this... the law of fog?' Leylin could sense a deep-seated force in this world of fog. This was the law that controlled it. Due to its connection with the bloodline imprint, he gained some rudimentary control as well.

Large amounts of grey fog were like the most docile stream of water to him, allowing him to do as he liked.

"Crush him!" With Leylin's command, great amounts of grey fog immediately turned into hardened rock, bringing with them the World Will as they rained down on the red figure.

"This isn't your own ability, it's an ancient rank 6 spell!" The tremendous force caused the scarlet figure to cry out involuntarily.

He was covered by the fog immediately after. Red light constantly penetrated through the fog, yet it grew increasingly dark.

"This is the real ancient Fog Space! If Bevis had used a spell like this, I might have long since been defeated or even killed..." Leylin

sighed.

While Bevis did have the blood of the Misty Fog Giant, he had no A.I. Chip and it wasn't as if he could endlessly consume his bloodline for spells. Leylin was different. After being purified by the A.I. Chip, the blood of the Misty Fog Giant now displayed its might like in ancient times.

“Damn it, there's another one.” Another voice sounded from within the fog, and it soon turned deathly silent. The world of fog dissipated, returning to the scene of the lava lake from before.

“Another one?” Light flashed, and Leylin's figure emerged. “Looks like it isn't the first time he's been at such a disadvantage, and...”

Leylin stared at where the scarlet figure had been. There was now nothing there.

“A rank 5 clone? Looks like the Blazing Flame Monarch has no helpers nearby, and has no choice but to do this himself...”

“Good timing. I'll make use of this.” Leylin waved his arms, and the fog that had not completely dispersed spread out, completely corroding the walls of the labyrinth.

Crack! Crack! The labyrinth walls that had already gone through immense damage could not hold on any longer and began to break apart inch by inch.

Much of the wall turned into powder, and this was still spreading further.

# Chapter 658 - Flame Monarch

---

The Alanore Labyrinth was a maze pattern that a rank 6 Breaking Dawn Magus had painstakingly set up. The Magi who wished to intrude would have to advance by passing through all of the stages, only then reaching the end.

Now, after withstanding all this damage, as well as two intentional attacks on Leylin's end, the labyrinth had begun to crumble. Bit by bit, the walls split open, glowing runes turning to powder.

The lava lake from before was gradually drying up, revealing a surface full of cracks. The pathways were continuously crumbling with this area as the centre.

"The collapse of the Alanore Labyrinth is happening earlier than I expected," Melinda furrowed her beautiful brows and sank into deep thought. A dark shadow then charged towards the heart of the labyrinth at a quicker pace.

Within the barriers of the boundless world crack was the Fiery World. It was like the sun, the exterior of which was the imposing and serene Alanore Labyrinth.

All of a sudden, the labyrinth creaked. It was like it could no longer hold its burden, and began to collapse inch by inch.

Once the foundations completely crumbled, the large building began to topple with a loud rumble, and the surrounding fire

elementals fled for their lives.

Along with a tremendous rumbling sound, the labyrinth completely broke down, revealing a minor plane.

Light flashed in the air, and Melinda took the first step onto this minor plane.

This minor plane was like the Morning Star Area, a world that was yet to mature. This minor plane was obviously much smaller than the Morning Star Area, with only a single layer. One could even see it end to end.

With just one look, Melinda could see a flaming figure sitting on a throne of pure gold at the middle of the place. At the same time, the flaming figure turned and met Melinda's gaze.

Terrifying energy that reached rank 6 emanated from the opponent's body, hovering around him. This was a rank 6 Magus, a Breaking Dawn. It was a Monarch!

The Magus sitting on the golden throne had evidently grasped some bits of the laws of fire. This was the Blazing Flame Monarch, the ruler of an enormous territory and the one who almost caused the extinction of the bloodline Warlocks!

"You're here?" The Blazing Flame Monarch asked, the voice androgynous.



“Yes. I’ve returned to take back what belongs to me!” Melinda muttered, her tone becoming increasingly resolute.

“You were mere emotions that I intentionally dispelled so that I could advance to Breaking Dawn. You’re just garbage I tossed out. What are you taking me back for?” The flames dissipated, revealing the figure of the Magus on the throne.

Yet, this Magus was obviously female. What’s more, her face bore some semblance to Melinda’s.

“No! I am the consciousness of the main body, you’re only a thief that took it over. A despicable thief!” Melinda’s face flushed red.

“So you’re making use of this opportunity and trying to steal everything back?” The female Magus on the throne chuckled, as if she was watching a mischievous child making a fuss in front of her, “But I have to admit, the allies you’ve found are excellent Magi. They’re powerful and hold the possibility of advancing further. They could very well become new Monarchs in the future!”

“Everything’s over! Return what’s mine to me!” Melinda took a step forward, her aura fluctuating abruptly, seemingly even exceeding the peak of rank 5.

“Having lost me, you’re at your weakest. And the more powerful I am, the weaker you get!” Melinda took several steps forward, eyes glimmering with light.

“As long as I can suppress you, I’ll be able to obtain everything!”

Pure golden flames rose once more, and the female Magus atop the flame throne slowly got up, “You’re wrong. No matter how weak a Breaking Dawn Magus is, they’re still a Breaking Dawn at the core. It’s already been three thousand years. Did you think I did nothing at all in this time?”

“It’s just an issue pertaining to the soul. With the support of fire origin force, as well as the amassed knowledge of the Magus World, I found a way to mend the loss of a part of my truesoul.” As if to verify her words, a golden sun appeared behind the female Magus. Boiling hot strength rippled out from the truesoul, emanating energy waves that put Melinda on the verge of suffocation.

This was a Breaking Dawn’s truesoul! The icy cold of moonlight had transformed into terrifying, boiling light; its volume and power showed that it had reached the peak!

“You’ve... recovered?” Melinda abruptly halted her footsteps.

“Not only have I recovered, I’ve even forged ahead to greater heights!” The Blazing Flame Monarch stated, an unquestionably terrifying energy held within her.

“Keke, I seem to have heard something amazing!” A translucent figure emerged, and Jin’s hoarse voice sounded from the shadows.

“So Melinda, you’re my enemy as well!” Joanna and Leylin hurried over around the same time. Joanna was quite different from before, and Clarke hadn’t appeared, as if he’d disappeared.

Joanna was now glaring at Melinda with hatred, “I trusted you so much in the past, but you betrayed me?!”

“Hm?” Leylin observed Joanna’s state, ‘So it’s her. I’d thought the first vibrations were from Jin or Melinda... This appearance, she looks quite similar to one of the twelve top-grade bodies written down in ancient records...’

The A.I. Chip completely recorded down Joanna’s external appearance, and presented it to Leylin with a projection. The Joanna in the projection had completely dark purple hair, and a strange flower-shaped pattern appeared on her forehead like a tattoo. Yet, it rippled with some sort of lustre.

[Beep! Detected abnormal radiations from target’s body. Vigorous increase in ability to attract energy particles with runes seen on the surface of the body...]

The A.I. Chip began to present the results of its scanning, and in Leylin’s eyes Joanna’s body seemed to turn into a gigantic magnet, attracting the free energy particles in the air. They formed a mysterious circuit in her body, allowing her spiritual and magic power to replenish itself continuously. It even seemed to rise, breaking through a bottleneck.

“I really want to...” Leylin lowered his head, eyes flickering with an intelligent glint.

‘I really want to study her! It’s not just her physique. This ability clearly has something to do with a natural ability to increase the aptitude of the soul itself. I can increase elemental affinity, but a natural gift like this to strengthen the soul has practically gone extinct in the central continent...’

“Whatever she did to your clan occurred after I separated from her. It’s the same with the bloodline Warlocks. I am not your enemy!” Melinda glanced at Joanna and Leylin, smiling wryly as she gave an explanation.

“Her strength slightly exceeds my expectations. I’ll need your help!”

“I don’t care about that!” Jin was the first to retort, “You promised to share the Law Comprehension Crystals with us once we killed her. Was that all a lie?”

It was only at this point that Leylin remembered that Melinda had promised to split the Law Comprehension Crystals from the Blazing Flame Monarch’s death evenly. She didn’t even seem to mind losing her own share.

At that point, they had all been against the Blazing Flame Monarch, and Leylin had assumed Melinda was like them as well, only satisfied with the Monarch’s death.

However, by the looks of it, she had left behind a loophole that wasn't quite a loophole.

She was part of the Flame Monarch's soul, and once Melinda returned to her main body and gained control over the Blazing Flame Monarch, that meant the Monarch was 'dead'.

Yet, as the other party had not truly died, it was impossible for there to be any Law Comprehension Crystals, and even more impossible for there to be any distribution.

'This woman harboured terrible intentions from the very beginning and wanted to use us as labourers!' Leylin shook his head inside, 'Though I never did expect much from her, this is still quite upsetting!'

He could tell that if Melinda succeeded, their only gains from this mission would be what they got from Düz City, nothing more.

On the other hand, Melinda would have become the Blazing Flame Monarch. Even they wouldn't dare to complain about a rank 6 Magus even if they had thoughts against it.

Melinda's plan was very perfect, but she had not thought Leylin and Joanna would have strength surpassed her expectations. On top of that, the Blazing Flame Monarch had actually eliminated the issues from the breaking up of a truesoul, and was perhaps now at her peak!

“All who have the audacity to violate my city are to kneel and repent before me!” Boiling hot soul force was like steel that sealed the space around them. The Blazing Flame Monarch’s low voice resounded through the area, putting Leylin under immense pressure.

Melinda’s expression was first terrible but quickly brightened up. “No, that’s not it! We still have a chance! If her injuries were really completely healed, she wouldn’t hide here and watch us invade and destroy Düz City, even letting her subordinates be massacred at our hands!

“Leylin, Joanna, I’m depending on you now. No matter what requests you have after this is over, I’ll agree to them!”

Before, Leylin and Joanna’s strength had been too outstanding and caused there to be some changes in Melinda’s calculations. However, it was these changes that gave her hope!

“How ridiculous!” Before Leylin and the rest could reply, the female Magus in front of the throne snickered.

Golden rays of light were like a world of their own, dazzling gold soul force pouring out with large amounts of flames. It led Leylin to almost believe he was watching the rebirth of the Sun’s Child here.

In the midst of this scorching first sunrise, a pitiful cry rang out. When Leylin opened his eyes once more, Jin was now raised and held in the Blazing Flame Monarch’s hand.

# Chapter 659 - Trump Card And Resolution

---

“Out of all these people, you were the one that I felt was the most dangerous. I didn’t expect it to be an old friend!” The female flame Magus stared at the faint human figure in her hands, a slight smile on her face.

“I don’t know what you’re saying...” Jin’s voice was hoarse and robotic.

“Kellard! I cannot tolerate any outsiders peeping in on my land of flames!” The Blazing Flame Monarch seemed to be confident in herself. A terrifying golden soul force entered Jin’s body with her declaration, threads of gold travelling through the faint body as they burst into golden flames.

The Blazing Flame Monarch conjured an illusory scene from Jin’s body.

A platinum figure seemed to be seated on a throne within a spacious place. The golden flames seemed to pierce through the void, descending in that area.

A low sigh was heard from the platinum figure. A feather appeared, turning into an odd-looking longsword amidst white light. There were feather-shaped ornaments on the hilt of this sword that swung down viciously. The void surged and separated, the palace from before disappearing.

Jin exploded like a balloon in the Blazing Flame Monarch’s

hands.

‘Kellard? Is that the Monarch of the Skies’ real name? I’d assumed Jin was a Spirit Magus... To think he was actually a puppet. It looks like it isn’t just Melinda that’s plotting against the Blazing Flame Monarch.’ Intelligence flashed in Leylin’s eyes, and he looked towards the Blazing Flame Monarch who seemed completely fine but was silent.

‘But a Monarch’s plot can’t be so weak, can it?’ A hint of anticipation rose in Leylin’s eyes. After all, this was a Breaking Dawn Magus working behind the scenes. Jin shouldn’t be so easy to deal with.

Bzzt bzzt! At this moment, a few pure-white goose feathers fell on Leylin’s shoulder like snow, causing him to freeze.

Immediately after, a snow of feathers fell down on the place. The ground was covered by a thin layer of white that even shrouded the Blazing Flame Monarch’s golden soul force.

Cracks began to appear on the boundary of the half-dimension, but the effects were even worse on the Blazing Flame Monarch herself.

Rumble! Golden flames burst forth from her body, immediately burning the feathers that drew close to ashes. However, there was still some white that managed to pass through her defences. Her expression changed, “Damn you, Kellard!”



Boom! The feathers exploded, causing her to sway a little. Immediately after, the scorching sun that was her true soul suddenly dimmed, and the temperature nearby quickly lowered. The oppressive aura in the half-dimension was reduced.

Brown crack streaked across the faint figure of the Blazing Flame Monarch's true soul, and even the Monarch's own aura weakened.

“So you still can't completely suppress your injuries!” Melinda moved forward, an odd aura being emanated from her body as it pounced towards the Monarch.

“Die!” Joanna was even faster. Her aura had already reached the peak of Radiant Moon, and purple gas converged to form a trident that pierced towards the Blazing Flame Monarch.

“Get out of the way!” The golden flames on the Monarch's body grew tenfold as exuberant with her cry, incinerating everything the Monarch of the Skies had arranged.

After launching that attack, the Blazing Flame Monarch staggered backwards, and cracks began to appear on the golden throne behind her.

Facing the attacks of Melinda and Joanna, the Monarch's expression grew solemn. It was as if she was a god when she made the declaration. “I am the Blazing Flame Monarch. The laws of fire in this world shall be controlled by I alone!”

Large amounts of scarlet fire particles appeared, forming something on a level higher than a domain that completely enveloped the area.

“You’ve comprehended the laws of fire? Even just a bit is already so powerful...” Leylin’s head hung down a little, covering his eyes that were constantly emitting light.

He could feel with his senses that the moment the Blazing Flame Monarch summoned this plane of fire that was even more powerful than a domain, the fire elemental particles that he could normally control seemed to have an aura that rejected the summons of his soul force.

This was much more intense than the elemental isolation of a Morning Star domain. Leylin even felt that the fire element now had a life and will of its own, and was automatically rejecting his control over it.

‘Just comprehending a tiny portion of a law gives you a huge advantage over weaker existences...’ Leylin sighed.

At this moment, the Blazing Flame Monarch’s right hand ruthlessly grabbed forward, “Law of fire!”

Rumble! A bundle of flames emerged in front of her, seeming neither strong nor very hot. However, it was like the most primal fire in the world, filled with a great ancient aura of leadership.

The tip of the purple trident sizzled and melted the moment it came into contact with the fire. The sound caused Joanna's expression to warp.

The scarlet flames seemed to have a life of their own in the Blazing Flame Monarch's hands, and immediately flickered as they turned into a fiery whip. Joanna's body was sent flying backwards, a long luminous burn mark on her body.

"I am the master of the flames, one who has grasped the power of law. You can't stop me!" A berserk soul force radiated from the Blazing Flame Monarch as if to prove her point.

Melinda took several steps backwards. The soul force at the Breaking Dawn realm had caused a backlash to her hand, and two streams of blood dripped from her eyes.

She quickly retreated, and transmitted to Leylin, "You're not going to fight back?"

"I can do that, but what benefits will you give me?" Leylin's arms were bunched together as he stared at Melinda coldly.

"What do you want?" Melinda was about to go crazy. At this point, Leylin was still ignorant of the big picture. Did he not know that once the Blazing Flame Monarch killed her and Joanna, he wouldn't be able to escape either?

"I want the method you used to divide your truesoul and sever

the soul!” Leylin was very confident that he could flee, which was why he was in no hurry and was even bargaining for the best benefits.

With his strength, he was confident he could escape even the Blazing Flame Monarch at her peak, much less now when she was incomplete.

He was rather interested in the technique of soul separation that she possessed. Though he wouldn’t do it himself, it would be a good supplement for his database.

“Alright!” Melinda agreed to Leylin’s condition unhesitatingly. As of now, the priority was eliminating the Blazing Flame Monarch. No matter how important the technique of severing souls was, it was just some information. There was obviously no issue at all.

This was not all. Leylin instantly sensed Melinda’s sincerity.

[Beep! Discovered spiritual force data interface. Allow transmission?]

The A.I. Chip asked robotically.

After Leylin chose to allow the transmission, large amounts of information instantly emerged in his mind. Though he did not go

through it in detail, the A.I. Chip's scans showed that this was the real deal.

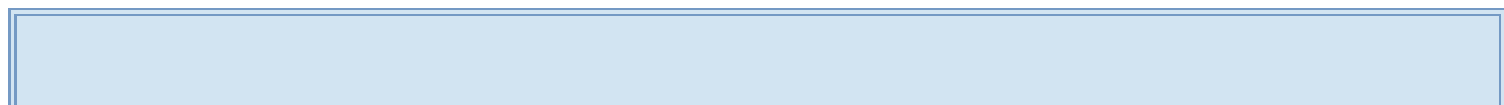
“The power of laws can only be dealt with by laws.” The grey ring on Leylin's right hand exploded and a puff of fog appeared, forming a grey world that contended with the opposing Monarch's flame plane.

“A rank 6 bloodline spell?” Grey fog and scarlet flames each consumed the energy of the other, and space itself was torn apart where these two tremendous domains met. A cry sounded from the Blazing Flame Monarch's side.

“Darned bloodline Warlocks! I should have completely destroyed you long ago!” These words that were filled with hatred did not cause Leylin to stop. He smiled instead, “I've always loved listening to the anguish and ire of those who want to eliminate me. It means they're completely defeated...”

Even if Leylin had sealed a bloodline imprint from Bevis' Misty Fog Giant bloodline in the ring, he could only launch two attacks. One had been used on the Blazing Flame Monarch's clone, and the other was being employed here.

‘A.I. Chip, focus on collecting information!’ Leylin ordered. With the Chip as a medium, Leylin could somewhat sense and manipulate the laws of fog. How could he not record such precious information?



[Beep! Beginning to record under Laws of Fog...]

the A.I. Chip quickly intoned.

At this moment, large amounts of grey fog formed a monster with three heads that was under Leylin's control. Toxins, lightning, and frost were being spewed out by these heads, striking the flame plane.

Even stray energy from the toxins, lightning, and frost caused Melinda and Joanna to retreat in a hurry, afraid to get hit.

“My bloodline imprint only has one attack left. If you have any methods, use them now. I'll break through the opponent's defensive laws.” Leylin stared at Melinda and Joanna without much emotion. The three-headed monster roared and tore at the flame plane, revealing the main body of the Blazing Flame Monarch.

Whoosh! A sharp grey claw descended and extinguished the flames that the Blazing Flame Monarch had summoned, and even tore apart the flame shackles.

At this moment, a trace of astonishment appeared on the Monarch's confident face. She had evidently never thought that Leylin's control over the power of laws would grow this quickly.

“Brother, wait for me! I am about to be done with my

vengeance!”

A deep hatred rose in Joanna’s eyes for the Blazing Flame Monarch. She pounced forward, streams of purple gas appearing from her back to form a gigantic plant that was similar to the flower on her forehead.

# Chapter 660 - Erosion Of The Sun

---

“Let’s perish together!” Joanna had on an insane smile. It was as if death was not the end for her, only a beginning.

Many roots formed from her body, wrapping around her and the Blazing Flame Monarch. The faint image of the purple plant solidified, and the roots wound tightly together as the two fell into the half-dimension. Branches and leaves spread out, the bud at the very top growing and blooming.

With the Blazing Flame Monarch’s infuriated howls, a purple flower bud with unworldly beauty slowly blossomed in the half-dimension. A terrifying strength took form at the same time, forming purple light that spread in all directions. Even the world of fog was affected as it crumbled down.

“This is bad!” Leylin’s pupils shrank. The remaining fog force immediately created a thick wall-like structure in front of him, behind which Melinda squeezed in unceremoniously. Following that, purple light spread through the skies and drowned the area.

The half-dimension hidden within the labyrinth burst apart under the purple light, and many black holes appeared in the region, devouring the surroundings. The scene looked to be of the world’s end. The stray energy from the explosion still bombarded the protective sphere of the Fiery World, causing it to shake.

Once everything calmed down again, the original world crack now looked completely different.



Large amounts of irreparable spatial rifts had appeared in the place, and endless turbulence streaked past the void, causing what was now in ruins further damage.

Even the nebulae around the place, what was similar to his previous world, had completely dissipated in the explosion. Bits of dimmed starlight flashed every once in a while from the edges, as if fading away and reconciling to this fact.

A large bundle of fog dissipated in this shattered void, revealing the figures of Leylin and Melinda.

“As expected from the physique of an ancient clan. The destructive force from her self-detonation...” Leylin seemed to be praising it, yet there was still some regret in his words. He was very interested in studying this sort of physique, and had never expected the other party to so resolutely detonate herself.

The terrifying storm that formed as a result was enough for Leylin and Melinda to be affected even with the defence from the rank 6 energy of the Misty Fog Giant, and they cut sorry figures.

“The bloodline!” Leylin’s eyes turned red, and a small-scale vortex formed in his hands. Some of the items in the void seemed to be attracted by some formless strength and automatically reached Leylin’s hand.

Large motes of light condensed to form a droplet of purple blood with bits of gold shimmering within.

“So this is all that remains? What an overbearing spell!” Leylin sighed, stowing the blood away.

“Not yet! The Blazing Flame Monarch isn’t dead!” There was glee following Melinda’s gasp of surprise. This was the best situation for her, with the Blazing Flame Monarch heavily injured and unable to resist her claim to dominance.

“She’s a Breaking Dawn Magus after all. How could she die so easily?” Leylin nodded solemnly. He’d never dared to underestimate such a high-ranking Magus. On top of that, the A.I. Chip did not give any conclusion of sorts, and instead scanned the space for the aura of the Blazing Flame Monarch. This made Leylin even more acutely aware of the result.

Golden flames abruptly surged in the void, increasing in volume to form a giant blazing door.

The Blazing Flame Monarch walked out of this giant door, her detached eyes full of ruthlessness.

Rumble! The flaming door quickly shrank to form a golden Magus Robe that draped over her body, “I never thought a bug like you would interfere with the ‘reincarnation’ procedure this time. It seems like ancient clans like these and the bloodline Warlocks should all be exterminated...”

A peak rank 6 aura was being emitted from their opponent’s body, and Leylin and Melinda shared a glance as they laughed

bitterly.

“The ability to be revived by flames?” Leylin stroked his chin, “Seems rather well-suited to the fire element. It even has a healing effect which shares some similarities to the Icy World’s Freezing innate skill...”

“We’re already in this situation, and you still have time to think about that?” Melinda didn’t know whether to laugh or cry in response. Yet, the Blazing Flame Monarch had already raised her right hand, and a longsword made of raging flames appeared in it.

“In the name of the Blazing Flame Monarch, I shall judge you!” Immense flames surged out with sword lights. These flames were not ordinary, they were from the law of fire!

Just the descent of a few wisps drew out all the fire elemental particles in the region in an instant. All the other elemental particles were tyrannically rejected and repelled.

With her rebirth from the flames, not only had the Blazing Flame Monarch managed to survive Joanna’s self-detonation, but she’d also healed all her injuries. She had regained her strength as a peak rank 6 Monarch.

“Get out of the way!” Leylin pushed at Melinda, and a large amount of crimson light surged out, “Bloodline Shield!”

Rumble! The flaming sword struck the shield, emitting a frigid

sound. On the other side, Melinda tossed out a piece of magic equipment similar to a statue, blocking the Blazing Flame Monarch's attack.

With Joanna's death, Melinda and Leylin were the only two invaders remaining. Leylin's rank 6 bloodline fog had left a deep impression on her, so Melinda transmitted a query to him, "Do you still have another bloodline imprint?"

"No. Do you think a rank 6 bloodline is so easily obtained? The amount of blood I had was only enough to create two imprints!" Leylin glared at Melinda, waving his right hand. He was speaking the truth. The ring on his hand had long since disappeared.

Upon hearing this, a hint of despair appeared in Melinda's beautiful eyes, "I can't take this lying down! Am I really going to die with Big Brother here?"

'She's going crazy again!' Watching Melinda, whose voice had turned into that of a little girl once more, Leylin was rendered speechless. It seemed like the original Blazing Flame Monarch had discarded more than one portion of her soul, which was why Melinda had such bizarre emotions and a split personality.

"Despicable Warlock Bloodline and the trashes that I had disposed of before... Let me purge you completely today!" The Blazing Flame Monarch that had regained her full strength took several steps closer, the peak rank 6 strength causing Leylin's expression to change.

Only when face to face with her did he realise how terrifying the might of a Monarch was. The opponent's truesoul was like a scorching sun, tens of times larger than that of a Radiant Moon and of better quality. This golden soul force exceeded the strength of Radiant Moon soul force, and made even Leylin feel suppressed.

“Erosion of the Sun!” The Monarch raised her sword once more, the faint image of her truesoul appearing behind her. Black light formed at the heart of the sun, converging on the tip of the flaming longsword.

From the black spot, Leylin could feel a terrifying energy that could obliterate everything in its path.

“Opposing qualities huh? This is incomparably close to the antimatter theory in my previous world...”

“Purify!” Along with an exclamation, the Blazing Flame Monarch swung her sword out, pitch black light beginning to shoot towards Leylin and Melinda.

Full of destructive energy, it surged like a stormy sea and roared.

The world origin force of the Fiery World beside them boiled and disappeared into the Blazing Flame Monarch's body, causing this attack to grow even more powerful.

“An attack befitting one at the peak of rank 6!” Leylin sighed, and then did not hesitate as he commanded, “A.I. Chip, begin defensive

plan number 2!”

[Beep! Mission established, beginning usage of Host’s energy and forming defence.]

The A.I. Chip’s icy voice intoned immediately.

Meanwhile, a layer of black Kemoyin Scales appeared on the surface of his body. He tossed out large numbers of potions that formed a colourful defence. At the outermost layer, the Bloodline Shield changed its shape with the manipulation of the A.I. Chip, welcoming the black light headed their way.

Rumble! Space itself crumbled. Even a world crack could not withstand such a powerful explosion, and spatial storms were formed everywhere.

Leylin emerged from the explosion, much of his Magus robes torn apart. There was a trace of blood at the corner of his lips.

“So, Melinda, are you dead yet?” Leylin’s eyes flashed with wit as he glanced in Melinda’s direction.

White light flashed in the void, and Melinda’s head appeared. Her body had completely severed from below the neck, and on those body parts, there were signs of burns that had clotted and turned into scars.

“If I died, you’d definitely have died before me!” Melinda’s face was now as pale as a dead person, as if she had lost all blood.

“I can’t hold this for long. Do you have any other methods to deal with her? I have one more...” Melinda, who now only had a head, glanced at Leylin and seemed to have made up her mind.

“Yes!” Leylin pretended to struggle with the decision and spoke in a low voice, “But that’s my life-saving trump card. Once it’s used, I’m not going to bother with you!”

“You don’t need to. As long as you can successfully suppress her for a period of time, leave everything to me. All the benefits that I spoke of in the contract will be given to you.” Melinda gritted her teeth.

“Fine!” Leylin chuckled, and a few balls made of crystal appeared. Within these sparkling crystal balls was a dark red gas that was like a river.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Many of the balls exploded, and a strange power spread outwards.

“It’s no use! I’ve already grasped authority over flames! Any attacks below laws...” The Flame Monarch stopped abruptly, her beautiful eyes suddenly showing astonishment.

# Chapter 661 - Seizing And Assist

---

In actuality, the Blazing Flame Monarch was still on her guard against Melinda and Leylin.

Not taking into account her opponent's secret plan before, the tens of crystal balls that Leylin had sent out and exploded made it seem as if he was about to cast some spell. That already made the Flame Monarch feel some unease.

This was an ability similar to prophecy, and was common among high-ranked Magi. However, it was extremely rare for the Blazing Flame Monarch to get one with such a violent warning. Hence, she instantly made her move and golden soul force swept the area as the law of fire covered the void.

However, her strength strangely had no effect on the dark red fog, and no matter how hot the golden flames blazed, the dark red streams of gas still flowed in the air undisturbed.

“Damn it! Erosion of the Sun!” The Blazing Flame Monarch raised her longsword high in the air once more, the black point swelling and emitting a terrifying aura that was even more terrifying than before.

‘This is about half of the dreamforce that I amassed!’ Leylin’s heart was aching as well. There was a limit to how much dreamforce he could store. He needed to use vessels from Dreamscape, and for this reason he’d used up much of what he’d acquired.



It could be said that in order to create this environment, he had thrown in most of his gains from Dreamscape. However, it was because he had put in these hard-earned savings that the effects were extraordinary.

Leylin could sense the dense dreamforce spreading through the area, something that caused even Melinda's eyes to glaze over slightly.

Dreamforce was no weaker than the power of laws, which was why the Blazing Flame Monarch's fires had little effect on it. After all, she had yet to completely grasp the laws of fire anyway, or she would long since have advanced to rank 7 instead of hovering around rank 6.

At this point, the results from the A.I. Chip's scans were presented before Leylin's eyes. [Beep! Emission of dreamforce complete. Meets standards of using dreamforce!]

"It's not as if I've never defeated a rank 6 before!" Leylin's lips quirked up in a smile, and immediately a complicated and illusory spell model with colourful rays was used in that instant. Dreamforce condensed in boundless tides around his body.

"Radiant Moon Dreamforce Spell— Distract Dream!" Leylin's eyes seem to glaze over, and formless waves enveloped the Blazing Flame Monarch.

"This is..." The Monarch's eyes showed her confusion as the

energy undulations from her body strangely came to a complete stop.

Distraight Dream. This rank 5 dreamforce spell targeted a Magus' truesoul, and had a 90% chance of being effective on a Radiant Magus, leading them to be unable to control themselves even if they were about to die. Even when facing a Breaking Dawn Magus, it had a success rate of over 50%!

The Blazing Flame Monarch was now in a dream, her truesoul having lost its way. She was completely unable to move, and her only defence came by instinct.

“Quick! I can only hold it for 3 seconds!” Leylin yelled at Melinda.

“I never expected you to have a trump card like this!” Melinda's head stared at Leylin, eyes full of meaning. Immediately after, flames began to burn and incinerate the remaining flesh and blood she had. A pure white soul figure suddenly emerged amidst the flames.

“Though I have a strong desire to expel the opponent's conscient and return to my body, there's no time!” The soul figure suddenly broke through the boundaries of spacetime and appeared in front of the Blazing Flame Monarch. She was now in a despondent state, and her instinctive defence had no effect towards Melinda. The soul figure disappeared into the forehead of the Monarch, the entire process going through without a hitch.

“Damn it! Get out!” The dreamforce quickly dissipated, and the

Blazing Flame Monarch had regained her senses. However, her expression kept warping, and her muscles trembling.

She abruptly raised her right hand, as if trying to pull something out of her forehead. Yet, the left hand strangely grabbed the right. It was as if there were two people fighting in her body.

“As expected, in a situation with no other methods, Melinda chose to return to the main body!” Watching this, a smile appeared on Leylin’s lips.

Melinda was merely an incomplete soul, while her opponent had the main body that had been tempered over thousands of years. Her soul force was tremendous beyond belief, and Melinda was surely no match for her.

Her initial plan was to take advantage of the Blazing Flame Monarch’s strength being at a low, using Leylin and the rest to deal the Monarch a serious blow. She would then destroy the soul and place her own conscient in the Blazing Flame Monarch’s body.

It was a pity that the Blazing Flame Monarch had a method of suppressing the injuries to her soul, which had caused setbacks in Melinda’s plans. Thankfully, with the Monarch of the Skies helping from behind the scenes and the surprising strength of Joanna and Leylin, the situation had reached this stage.

The situation was currently do or die. Perhaps Leylin had a chance of surviving a Breaking Dawn’s hunt, but Melinda was definitely going to die. As part of the opponent’s soul that had

awakened its own senses and wanted to eliminate the main conscient, she would definitely be hunted down endlessly by the Monarch.

Hence, after weighing the pros and cons, the only thing she could do was take the risk and enter the other party's sea of consciousness and strive to achieve control over the main body.

Though there was a powerful conscient in the sea of consciousness, it wasn't as if Melinda lacked any advantages. At the very least, she had an ally in Leylin.

The Blazing Flame Monarch had accumulated injuries over the various battles and the self-detonation, but she either had some secret methods or was forcefully suppressing them. This was why she was confident in her success. Though her chances weren't greater than 50%, this was a better option than dying without even a corpse remaining.

“Die, you unnecessary trash!” An unusual scene appeared on the Monarch's body. A few illusory female faces appeared on her own, like layered masks.

There was malevolence, anger, even peace on some. The one similarity was that they all looked like Melinda.

“I am the ruler of flames. How can I lose to you...” A white illusory face abruptly emerged, its appearance and tone very similar to the Flame Monarch.

“Stop struggling. You are me! In addition, my control over the law of fire isn’t inferior to yours!” Melinda’s face appeared as well.

Following that, this face switched to one that was childlike, eyes full of tears as it gazed up at Leylin, “Big Brother, help me!”

“How?” Leylin’s expression was cold.

“I can temporarily suppress her defences. You use your soul force and invade the Blazing Flame Monarch’s sea of consciousness. Believe me, this will be extremely beneficial to you!” The young Melinda’s expression was miserable and moving, yet Leylin remained apathetic.

“Yes. There are definitely benefits from experiencing how energy revolves in a rank 6 Magus’ body, and I’ll even be able to make contact with the law of fire. However, I’ve my own method of dealing with this!” Leylin chuckled, a malicious intent gleaming in his eyes.

“Don’t worry, I’ll help you now!” Crimson rings of light formed at Leylin’s back, causing him to transform into a terrifying ancient Kemoyin Emperor, two gigantic amber pupils staring at the Blazing Flame Monarch.

“You’re thinking of– “ The young Melinda showed the expression of a struggle before she went silent, and the Blazing Flame Monarch’s face got out.

“Damned Warlock, what are you going to do?” Boundless golden shackles appeared around the Monarch.

“I’m obviously going to help!” A callous voice was transmitted from the Kemoyin Emperor, and petrifying light burst forth and caused the flame shackles to be covered with a layer of stone as they cracked.

The Kemoyin Emperor’s tail ruthlessly struck the Blazing Flame Monarch, and with a flicker of black light she flew backwards a great distance. The defensive magic equipment on her body shattered.

With the Monarch’s wealth, she definitely had at least a piece of high-grade magic equipment on her person, but under Leylin’s attack it was as fragile as paper-mâché. This wasn’t purely because of the frightful offensive ability of the Kemoyin Emperor. It had to do in part with there being nobody controlling it.

“You...” The Flame Monarch suddenly stopped speaking, and the sound of bones breaking could be heard, causing the soul’s face to contort with pain. The light dulled by a large extent.

“Very good! Continue attacking her and attract her attention!” Lights flashed and Melinda’s face appeared.

“It’s my pleasure to do so!” Leylin laughed, and immediately after terrifying rumbling could be heard in the void.

Pak! Pow!\* Pak! Pow!\* The terrifying force from an ancient rank 5 creature caused the void to shake in the world crack. The Blazing Flame Monarch at the centre had now sustained injuries that were difficult to even imagine. If not for the support of the law of fire, as well as the durability of the body of a Breaking Dawn Magus far exceeding that of regular people, she would long since have become minced meat.

Two tiny wormlike souls nibbled away at the largest soul body on her face, causing the Blazing Flame Monarch to let out cries of misery. Gradually, the soul's light dimmed and allowed Melinda to gain the upper hand.

“Good! That's enough, stop attacking! When I've gained complete control over the body...” Melinda's face showed her glee, but that quickly turned into an enraged shriek, “What are you doing?”

She could see the Kemoyin Emperor that Leylin had turned into constantly shrinking until it turned into a python that was only tens of metres long, abruptly charging towards her. Its fangs were bared...

# Chapter 662 - Departure And Harvests

---

The Kemoyin Emperor was originally over a hundred kilometres long, but its figure had shrunk a thousandfold as it became a python that was only tens of metres in length. Terrifying light burst forth from what used to be its scales.

The two eyes of the python stared straight at Melinda, and her heart couldn't help but palpitate upon seeing the merciless expression in them.

Leylin's voice came from the python, "You've had enough, but that doesn't mean I have. According to our deal, I've come for my reward."

Following these words, the humongous python suddenly spread its mouth wide open, and a black hole formed within.

"Innate ability: Devour!"

"Nooo..." In the midst of Melinda's pained cries, the Kemoyin Emperor that Leylin had transformed into bit ferociously onto the arm of the Blazing Flame Monarch. Soon after, it ripped open the space without hesitation and escaped.

Buzz! Its scales flashed with a glaring brilliance and even had traces of blood.

Leylin had obviously used some sort of secret method that



allowed him to disappear from Melinda's senses almost instantly.

Whoosh! Golden blood droplets suddenly started splashing from where the arm was broken. Blood dripped into the empty space drop by drop, forming a large ball of golden flames in the blink of an eye.

It was only now that Melinda started to let out a hysterical blood-curdling screech.

As a Breaking Dawn Magus, limb damage was not even considered a severe injury to her, but what Leylin had used earlier was his own innate ability, Devour. He had bitten into her flesh and devoured her bloodline! This even included a portion of her comprehension of laws and her soul! Her comprehension of laws had been stolen!

The anguish of her soul being ripped apart almost made Melinda think she'd returned to the moment when she'd split her soul.

It was at this time that the Blazing Flame Monarch's conscient, which had been suppressed, appeared suddenly and unleashed a ferocious counterattack.

"Damn it! Damn it!" Melinda roared, and horrifying golden flames spread out in all directions continuously.

Her other losses were still tolerable, but the disappearance of her comprehension of laws and the damage done to her bloodline

could even make her drop in rank. The counterattack by the Blazing Flame Monarch's conscient at this moment left her without any time to chase after and attack Leylin. She could only roar in depression and once again concentrate her energy on fighting the Monarch.

The pure gold flames gradually filled up the region, and even traces of dust were burnt until there was nothing left. Only the gigantic golden yellow cocoon in the centre was still throbbing rhythmically, as if a phoenix waiting to rise from the ashes.

In a world where flames were everywhere, space was pulled apart as though it were a curtain, revealing Leylin's silhouette. He peeked at his surroundings before giving a command without hesitation, "A.I. Chip!"

[Beep! Begin connection sequence! Activating astral gate!]

With the A.I. Chip's voice sounding out, an enormous door bathed in blue flames slowly formed in front of Leylin, and he stepped into it without the slightest situation. The world began spinning with a single step, and when he ran his eyes over his surroundings once again, he had already arrived in the laboratory at Düz City.

Faint roars and shrieks could still be heard from outside, Düz City having descended into chaos. Outside of the laboratory, the subordinates of Jupiter's Thunder and Joanna stood on guard, and all seemed still.

In the midst of such a disorderly scene, it appeared even more eye-catching.

A few civilians and such came forth to request for help from time to time, but were all rejected without mercy. The bodies on the ground still emitted a strong aura of death, effectively intimidating the few who still wanted to try their luck.

As for the biological beasts? Having seen the terror that Leylin could bring, they had run away as far as they could long ago. Whether they created disasters elsewhere was not of Leylin's concern.

“Sir!” A few of the Morning Star Magi who were standing guard saw the astral gate open. Upon seeing that only Leylin had returned, their expressions changed.

“Hm!” Leylin nodded his head, indifferent. His entire being then transformed into a ray of black flames which dispersed. In just a few flashes, he vanished into the horizon.

The Morning Star Magi from the other powers looked at each other in dismay as they gazed in the direction that Leylin vanished in.

They were of Morning star rank at most. Forcibly stopping Leylin was simply an impossible task, and having seen how cold-hearted Leylin could be they didn't dare to do anything that would provoke him.

---

In the air. Blood was still seeping out of the corners of Leylin's mouth, yet his face was filled with excitement. "Those few Morning Star Magi are rather tactful. I didn't have to take any further action..."

"A.I. Chip, erase all the useless memories and emotions!"

At this moment, layers of flesh suddenly grew from Leylin's body, carrying along with dense comprehension of the laws of fire. His Devour skill was still digesting the arm of the Monarch.

The A.I. Chip swiftly operated per Leylin's orders, getting rid of all the useless memories and emotions in what he had obtained. The useful information was then processed into specialised folders, and the Blazing Flame Monarch's comprehension of laws— the most important part— was carefully extracted by the A.I. Chip into a specially established database.

'The most important bit, the comprehension of laws, has been obtained!' Leylin was brimming with excitement.

To him, no matter how plentiful the Blazing Flame Monarch's treasury was, it was not enough. The only thing he was currently interested in was the pursuit of an even higher realm, one to which the power of laws was key.

Leylin still couldn't believe himself as he recalled how he had

made use of his devouring ability to absorb the comprehension of Laws and memories from the Blazing Flame Monarch's body.

The exhilaration and delight almost made him break through the boundaries that he had set himself, and greedily take in everything that the Blazing Flame Monarch had to offer. Luckily, at the final juncture, he forcibly controlled his body with an unwavering determination that was as strong as steel, and left the Fiery World.

He didn't deal any killing blows to the Flame Monarch directly as he was afraid of her counterattack.

Regardless of the differences between Melinda and the original Blazing Flame Monarch, with their lives under serious threat there was a definite possibility of an alliance.

In fact, the A.I. Chip's derivations revealed that if Leylin took advantage of the time when both of them were battling, there wasn't even a 10% probability that he would be able to directly take one of them out. The remaining possibility was that both parties would ally under immense pressure, which would result in Leylin returning without achieving anything, or even resulting in his fall.

In such a situation, Leylin would, of course, choose the method that was in accordance with his own interests, and leave after fishing up the best gains.

Although he was unable to get rid of the Blazing Flame Monarch, making her suffer some losses was good enough.

Initially, when he was extracting the Blazing Flame Monarch's bloodline and laws, Leylin had almost lost control of himself, and the A.I. Chip's had alerted him in time. He was so close to even being a threat to the Flame Monarch's life, which would cause unforeseen repercussions to the situation.

But fortunately, all went according to Leylin's script.

Although his final blow made the Blazing Flame Monarch suffer heavy losses, it did not exceed Melinda's tolerance. Hence, she didn't choose to reach a compromise with the original conscient, and instead continued to annihilate her greatest enemy. It was because of this that Leylin managed to escape successfully.

As for what happened prior to that, Leylin had simply scoffed at how Melinda had invited Leylin to help.

While his soul force was relatively powerful, it also depended on what it was being compared to.

In the face of the Breaking Dawn soul force of the Blazing Flame Monarch's, his soul force was so meagre that it was not worth looking at. Even if he was called in to help, he would just be a mere soldier who wouldn't even have autonomy over his own soul force; his life and death would be controlled by his opponent.

What annoyed him even more was that after fighting such a tumultuous battle, the items received would depend on whether the other party would fulfil their promises and also their mood. Leylin wouldn't do such a silly thing, of course.

“However, I didn’t think that merely the arm of the Fire Monarch contained such a crazy amount of energy. Furthermore, there seems to be a mystery hidden in the knowledge and memories of the laws of fire...” Leylin faintly felt like his body grew bigger, but it was actually an illusion due to the excessive energy in his body.

The corners of Leylin’s mouth curled up in a bitter smile as he recalled the past few times where he had transformed into the Kemoyin Emperor. No matter what he had devoured before, nothing had possessed such terrifying energy.

‘It’s fortunate that I chose to devour only one arm. If I’d chosen to swallow her whole, I’m afraid that even if she didn’t retaliate I would’ve burst apart due to this force.’ Leylin’s gaze flickered, as he changed his route of travel, his silhouette turning into a phantom.

This ability was brought about by dreamforce. Not only did it strengthen his resistance towards magic, it formed an illusionary forcefield which was effective at concealing his tracks.

The fruits of this battle were plentiful, so much so that even the almighty Leylin needed to find a spot to digest them fully.

---

Leylin didn’t expect that what he originally thought would be a simple digestion process would end up extending into a few months. The Blazing Flame Monarch had her own imprint of

power of flames, and one of its characteristics was that it was extremely concentrated. This had given him a headache.

A squirrel bounded about continuously, a pine cone cupped between its paws as it nibbled on it with its buckteeth as quickly as lightning. White mist encircled the mountain range that stretched endlessly into the distance. Together with the green forest, it formed a dreamlike scene straight out of a fairytale.

Countless runners formed a natural protective screen under a humongous tree, leaving a rather big space inside. Black fog filled the air here, hiding and isolating the place. In the heart of the fog, Leylin slowly let out a breath and opened his eyes.

‘The energy composition of a rank 6 Magus and its characteristic concentration is truly horrifying!’ Practically all of the Blazing Flame Monarch’s flesh was densely constructed by the most concentrated of fire laws, and merely the digestion process required vast amounts of effort on Leylin’s part. He still felt traumatised at the thought of it.

In actual fact, without the innate devouring ability of the Kemoyin Emperor, analysing the Monarch’s arm would have been a huge problem. It had taken him this long to finally figure it out.

Just a moment ago, Leylin had not only fully swallowed the last trace of the Blazing Flame Monarch’s bloodline energy, but he had also completely sorted out the memory fragments and made the comprehension of laws his own.



# Chapter 663 - Flame Laws

---

The structure of a rank 6 Magus' blood and flesh as well as information on the modifications to their body gave Leylin much inspiration and sprouted fresh ideas. He had also obtained many other benefits from the Blazing Flame Monarch's abundant life energy.

He pulled up his stats with a thought, and quite a few of the information on the A.I. Chip's screen was refreshed.

[Beep! Discovered high-grade cell structure. Simulating... Host has absorbed large amounts of life energy. Vitality increasing!]

[Beep! Host's soul has been strengthened. Spiritual force crossed bottleneck, reached Half Moon!]

[Beep! Host's stats have changed. Regathering info...]

It was after these messages that the A.I. Chip showed Leylin's new stats.

[Leylin Farlier, Rank 5 Warlock. Bloodline: Kemoyin Emperor (Complete form). Strength: 76, Agility: 62, Vitality: 176.9, Spiritual force: 2003.5, Magic power: 2003 (Magic power is in synchronisation with spiritual force). Soul force: 200, Half Moon.]

Leylin had long since expected a rise in soul force, but the huge increase in vitality gave him a great surprise.

With a treasure like the phoenix egg, raising his soul force wasn't an issue. It was just that his body couldn't keep up.

It was funny now that he thought about it. Most Warlocks' vitalities surpassed the growth of their spiritual force, but he was different. He progressed much too quickly, to the point that his spiritual force advanced by leaps and bounds and left his vitality far in the dust.

'A Half Moon truesoul, and such soul force!' Leylin focused on his point mass. His truesoul was perfectly round as before, but the cold light of his soul force already occupied over half of it. 'A truesoul like this is very powerful, but in comparison to a rank 6 Magus, it's quite lacking...'

Leylin sighed, thinking back to the truesoul of the Blazing Flame Monarch that was like a scorching sun. The soul force seemed to have solidified. A truesoul like this could be said to have reached a peak, and could exist for a long time even without the Magus' body.

Soon after, he couldn't help but burst out in laughter, finding himself too greedy. The path of a Magus was one of accumulation. Not only was the Blazing Flame Monarch of a higher rank than he was, she had spent tens or even hundreds of times longer than he had on searching for the truth. He was confident that, once he reached Breaking Dawn, his truesoul would not be second to hers.

“And this...” Leylin began to check all his profits. He'd been assigned many treasures from the attack on Düz City, a portion of the holdings a rank 6 organisation had amassed over time. Whether Morning Stars or even Radiant Moons, everyone would go green in envy at such wealth.

And yet, these things were all additional items to Leylin, not something he paid much attention to. What he was more interested in was the information recorded in the A.I. Chip.

“Soul splitting technique?” Leylin glanced through a document in the A.I. Chip while muttering to himself. He'd gotten this terrifying technique that could split apart a Magus' truesoul when he'd taken advantage of Melinda earlier.

This technique could separate a truesoul into two parts, forming individual bodies that could think for themselves. It could also be used to discard unnecessary emotions or memories from the main body of a Magus, an extraordinary effect.

“Sometimes, psychological issues can be a hindrance to the advancement of a Magus. This technique is even better for

Warlocks. Perhaps Offa and the others would be more than willing to take out all their wealth in exchange for this...”

Leylin stroked his chin. After obtaining this truesoul splitting technique, they could strip off the berserk emotions from their bloodline instability by placing it in another soul. To some extent, this was a way to completely cure the Warlocks’ bloodline instability. A rational Warlock still retained their advantages but had no weak points. It was a terrifying thought, but it had one small issue.

After the truesoul was split into two the separated soul was, in some way, an individual body of its own. It could even become like Melinda, forming a will of its own and becoming hostile towards the original Magus.

However, because they had originally been one body, Magi could not just destroy this parted soul, or else their truesoul would be affected. They could only choose to banish the soul or suppress it, which would leave a danger lying around.

‘Whatever it is, this technique is very valuable. If not for that being an emergency, Melinda probably wouldn’t have given this to me...’ Leylin thought about Melinda. The female Magus had initially been one with the Blazing Flame Monarch, but there seemed to have been some issues when splitting the truesoul which led to her returning for revenge.

‘She’s lost part of her energy and bloodline, and is also facing issues from the cracked soul which haven’t been solved yet. It’ll be difficult for her to recover to her original strength...’ Leylin’s eyes

flickered.

This was a situation he had intentionally created. The conscient of the original Flame Monarch was done for, and Melinda had to heal the wounds to her body and soul. None of these were easy tasks. It would be a miracle if she could even remain at rank 6.

Leylin thus concluded that the Blazing Flame Monarch's organisation would die down for a very long time. After gaining control of the body, Melinda wouldn't be the same as the Monarch was before and it was unknown whether she would come after him in the future. He'd made the best choice in the situation.

"A.I. Chip, show me the database on the Blazing Flame Monarch!" Leylin commanded. Immediately after, a large file was projected in front of Leylin, the information within an incomplete mess.

Leylin hadn't just devoured his opponent's flesh and blood with his innate skill. He'd also managed to absorb her memories and her comprehension of laws.

However, due to a lack of time, the memories he had were incomplete. Yet, they were good references for the A.I. Chip.

Leylin's eyes scanned through these incomplete memory fragments and came to the deepest ones. The few fragments here were like crystals that gave off a majestic aura, emitting burning hot rays of light.

Given that this was how the information was being displayed within the A.I. Chip's database, it aroused Leylin's interest.

[Beep! Comprehension of the laws of fire incomplete. Unable to scan and present as data, host needs to perform a soul force probe.]

The A.I. Chip's explanation rendered him speechless.

This was the bit on the comprehension of laws that the A.I. Chip had separated from the remaining memories in the bloodline Leylin had forcefully obtained. However, it was currently in a strange state that even the A.I. Chip could not decipher.

"This is the issue of having different power systems," Leylin sighed.

In his view, the world was one complete existence that had various focuses. His previous world was one that focused on atomic studies.

The Magus World, on the other hand, was a world of energy and laws.

In reality, there was only one real world. Atoms, energy and laws were all just the same thing viewed from different perspectives. These differences in perspective allowed Magi and the people of his

old world to come up with different conclusions.

The A.I. Chip was a result of microscopy, and it could not decrypt things like the comprehension of laws. It was only something to be expected.

However, with its continuous upgrades and the establishment of the database on the soul, the A.I. Chip had made continuous progress. It now accepted the embodiment of energy and laws.

Leylin was very confident in the learning abilities of the A.I. Chip. Some day, it would be able to analyse anything in the universe, becoming the best tool to search for the truth with. For now, the current ability of the A.I. Chip to store the comprehension of laws separately already left Leylin satisfied.

Though it could not be sent to him, perhaps comprehending laws himself was the best way to go about it.

Leylin closed his eyes. Half Moon soul force spread out from his truesoul, making contact with the scarlet Law Comprehension Crystals.

Rumble! A vast current gushed forth, and Leylin felt like an ordinary being standing amidst a flash flood in the mountains.

Terrifying force weighed down on him from all sides, pushing and pulling at him with immense power. Many different scenes flashed before his eyes without end, detailing the comprehension

the Blazing Flame Monarch had towards the laws of fire.

The red fire elemental particles seemed to be magnified a million times over as they appeared in front of him, their mysteries being unveiled layer by layer. Never had he felt as close to the fire element before.

This feeling came and left very quickly. In a few seconds, Leylin regained his senses from this comprehension.

[Host's brain waves in a peculiar state. No records in database!]

[Beep! Host's blood flow rate has increased. Increase in energy wave radiation.]

[Beep! Host's fire elemental affinity has increased. Aptitude has been slightly strengthened.]

.....

The A.I. Chip's new prompts caused a smile to appear on Leylin's face, 'Comprehending the laws of fire can increase soul aptitude on top of increasing my elemental affinity?'



Leylin had never worried about his elemental affinity. His foundations were not half bad, and he'd never misstepped. Through the advancements in and strengthening of his bloodline, his control over darkness and fire exceeded that of most Radiant Moons.

However, his original soul aptitude was only at grade 3. Compared to grades 4 and 5, or even special geniuses, he still had a ways to go. His few advancements had only pushed him to the peak of grade 3.

# Chapter 664 - Descendant And Discovery

---

Not only did Leylin have a lot of information on methods to increase elemental affinity, he'd also attempted some of these methods himself.

There were ancient records detailing this field in the central continent, and the A.I. Chip had recorded the information down and used it well.

However, even the central continent that was touted as the cradle of the revival of the glory of Magi had very little information on soul aptitude.

It had been extremely unlikely for Leylin to find a physique from an ancient dead clan, and it might have been useful to him. However, Joanna had ended up self-destructing, something Leylin found a huge pity.

With what he understood, Leylin found that the power of laws could alter his soul aptitude. How could he not go crazy in excitement?

‘The power of laws is boundless and inexhaustible, and can even modify a Magus’ soul aptitude!’ Leylin’s eyes brightened. While he was a bloodline Warlock, he still paid much attention to his soul aptitude.

‘But...’ At the thought of what he had comprehended, a look of hesitation rose on his expression.

The Blazing Flame Monarch did not have complete authority over the law of fire, else she would long since have advanced to rank 7.

Her comprehension of laws was incomplete, and what Leylin had found from her memories was pieces of a fragmented version. He'd comprehended less than a tenth of the power of the laws of fire, and it was impossible for him to fully understand them and become a rank 7 Magus with this.

With the A.I. Chip's lack of research and information on laws, it was impractical to rely on it to simulate the complete version of the law of fire.

“Hah... There's no way around it...” Leylin sighed, “Profiting through that risk was already extremely lucky. Do I have to sneak attack another Magus that has comprehended laws and steal their comprehension?” He was unwilling to go up against someone who had completely grasped the power of a law and obtained control of it.

The World of Gods had a special title for existences at rank 7 and above; they were called True Gods. This was because once one completely understood the power of laws, even a regular human would step into the domain of divinity! The gap between the two was even wider than the gaps between ranks 1 and 6.

Hence, while Leylin and Melinda dared to grievously harm a Breaking Dawn Monarch, they definitely wouldn't set their sights

on a rank 7.

He wanted to live for a long time, hopefully peeking at and transcending to a state of immortality. Why would he intentionally seek death?

“Those things don’t matter yet. For now, I need to break the bloodline shackles as quickly as possible and break through to Breaking Dawn. After all, only peaking the power of my soul force will give me the foundations to begin to comprehend the power of laws...”

At the thought of what had happened during the comprehension process, Leylin’s expression turned grim. With his current soul force, analysing and comprehending the power of laws was much too difficult. Even though he had compiled all of the information, he had only felt a bit of the aura of the law of fire, and had not even understood 0.00001% of it.

Only Breaking Dawns could comprehend laws. Even being able to achieve what he had was because Leylin was talented and had the great help of the A.I. Chip.

“Whatever it is, I need to obtain the power of laws as soon as possible. Breaking the bloodline shackles will depend on it...” Recalling the meeting with the Wisdom Tree as well as its ‘gift’, Leylin’s eyes blazed as he immersed himself in understanding the law of fire.

---

Crimson light fluctuated around Leylin under a tree in the darkness.

His eyes were closed tightly, as if he was in contact with a world full of mysteries. Large amounts of this light surged around his body, the endless information forming a strange code as they hovered before his eyes.

He tried to stretch out and grab those flaming words, but the action was in vain. He could sense some flaming words continuously dig into his body like earthworms, causing him to tremble slightly. The comprehension of laws had begun.

Bzzt bzzt! Just as Leylin's comprehension of the law of fire was about to begin, a massive amount of crimson light interrupted him.

"No! What's going on?" Leylin almost roared. The state he'd been in was clearly one that was hard to come by, and it had been interrupted just like that. It filled him with a near-insane bloodlust.

"Wah! Wah!" Both his bloodline and the innate controlling ability of the Kemoyin Emperor laid a scene out before his eyes.

In an extravagant bedroom the dark subterranean world, a bed sheet had blood stains on it. A woman who was sweating profusely trembled as she held onto a wrinkled baby.

“Goo Gaa!” The baby with jet-black eyes still had amniotic fluid on its body. The umbilical cord had just been cut, and as if noticing Leylin peeping, the crying baby beamed up at him, causing the woman to be shocked.

“My blood! My blood has been born in Twilight Zone!” Leylin opened his eyes wide. All Magi had a strange sensitivity to their own blood, and given that the Kemoyin Emperor was the ruler of a race, Leylin’s sensitivity was even greater.

“Has the child I left to Celine been born?” His gaze penetrated through the ground and arrived at Twilight Zone. He hadn’t let the A.I. Chip control his interactions with Celine, intentionally leaving behind his bloodline with her. It was about time for the child to have been born.

Because these children were Warlocks, they would be different from regular humans. They would have some inborn talent, and could cause elemental storms or leak radiation at birth. Celine was a Magus herself and had defences against these situations. Most regular women would be done for.

The younger generation would mature quickly with Leylin’s rank 5 Kemoyin Emperor bloodline, and they would definitely be terrifying beyond belief.

With Celine’s influence, what kind of changes would be brought to Twilight Zone? Leylin’s eyes showed he was deep in thought.

And yet he was the same detached Magus after all, and he waited

for a long time after observing the law of fire. With a slight sigh, Leylin placed his attention on himself, and the A.I. Chip's prompts popped up.

[Beep! Host beginning to grasp unknown force, determined to be power of the law of fire. Fire elemental affinity increased by 50%.]

[Host's soul aptitude has been strengthened. Recalculating... Determined to be upgraded to grade 4.]

‘My elemental affinity and soul aptitude have been upgraded after crossing the threshold of comprehending laws?’ Leylin was surprised by this. From his days as an acolyte to the current day, he'd only been able to raise his soul aptitude to the peak of his initial grade of 3. This one step he took into comprehending laws had pushed it up a grade, something with a terrifying meaning.

However, that would be it for Leylin's current soul in terms of comprehension of the power of laws. He was only a Radiant Moon Magus after all, and his truesoul was still at Half Moon and hadn't even reached peak Full Moon. It couldn't support the study of laws.

In other words, Leylin himself wasn't good enough to accommodate a greater understanding. He had to upgrade himself to break through, and that had to be accomplished by reaching

rank 6, Breaking Dawn.

This discovery rendered Leylin speechless. Though he had stolen about 10% of the Blazing Flame Monarch's comprehension of the laws of fire, he had only understood about 1%. The rest would have to be shelved due to him not meeting the prerequisites.

“My injuries have completely recovered, and I've gone through pretty much all of my profits. It's time to return...” Leylin suddenly sighed, figure turning into black flames and disappearing from the area.

---

In an astral river, countless light-years away from the Magus World.

A starlike coiled up snake in the Purgatory World revealed the figure of the Snake Dowager. Every strand of her hair was a different serpent, emitting different kinds of energy. Her face was extremely exquisite, and her eyes held within them the life and death of worlds themselves.

Every inch of her body seemed to embody the law of darkness, and it was full of perfection and harmony.

Currently, there was a rare grimness in the Dowager's eyes. “The Emperor of the Kemoyin has already begun to make contact with the power of laws? Its bloodline has begun to spread as well...”



The Snake Dowager could see the events in the faraway Magus World from across the astral river, causing her to sink deep into thought. Though the Kemoyins were only a small branch of her bloodline, they still represented a portion of her abilities and authority!

The imperial bloodline had left her on guard. This uncontrollable variable could one day become a power that would tear apart her divinity.

“Through the shore of clouds and stars, my bloodline shall all return to my embrace...” The Dowager’s voice was faint and tender, giving one the urge to lose themselves within it.

With what sounded like a prophecy, a tremendous illusory world slowly emanated from behind the Snake Dowager, and as if she was stepping through time and space, she entered the Magus World.

# Chapter 665 - Wooden House And Meeting

---

It was as if he had gone through a long fall. Leylin felt like he was in another world when he finally touched the ground.

‘What... is this place?’ Observing the dusky fog of the mountains and the black forest in the distance, he sank into deep thought.

Caw! Caw! Caw! A crow with three blood-red eyes spread its wings and took off from a tree branch beside him, leaving behind a few fallen feathers. Its piercing shrieks spread far and wide.

‘A.I. Chip!’ Leylin subconsciously commanded.

[Beep! Beginning scan of surroundings. Scan completed! Begin...]

The A.I. Chip’s voice was normal at first, but near the end, it suddenly grew rough as if it was facing some strong interference.

”AAH! AAH! AAH!” After some time, the voice changed to become piercing feminine shrieks. They grew higher and higher in pitch until they threatened to blast Leylin’s eardrums apart, at which point he had no choice but to order it to halt operations.

“Wind probing...” Leylin stretched his arms out, and light green wind elemental particles gathered around him, the slight green

wind elemental particles gathering extremely slowly, causing his brows to furrow. Soul force appeared, causing a light green gust of wind to spread in all directions.

‘This seems quite familiar, but I just can’t put my finger on it!’ Leylin frowned, feeling as if his memories were shrouded by some fog. Yet he managed to remember a lot of things, such as his magic. Still, he seemed to have forgotten something important, and it gave him a bad premonition.

Soon enough, the scattered wind gave him some results which let him know of his current location. He was outside a forest, and there was even a dark red river flowing nearby. There was a wooden house not far away, with what seemed to be a human figure inside.

‘This range...’ Leylin’s brows furrowed, ‘Not only is it difficult to use spells at all, even their effects have been suppressed to a large extent. Could this be some high-ranked World?’

The temperature of the forest lowered with the setting sun, and the fog around him grew denser. It even turned a dark red, which sent a chill down Leylin’s spine. He quickly got out of the area and arrived at the wooden house he had discovered.

Golden roses were in full bloom behind the fence, and traces of grey smoke rose from within that allowed Leylin to feel some warmth. The wooden door creaked open, and a kindly woman walked out. The woman seemed rather young, around twenty years of age at best, but the intelligent glint in her eyes made Leylin feel like she was someone with abundant experience.

“Little brother! You’re back!” The woman chuckled after seeing him, the brilliance of her smile leaving Leylin intoxicated. It was as if the flowers surrounding her bloomed with her laugh.

“Who are you?” Leylin couldn’t help but ask.

“Me? I’m your sister. This is your home!” The woman’s face was beautiful, and the brilliant golden strands of hair that blew in the wind felt familiar to Leylin.

“My... home?” Leylin mumbled.

“Yes, your home! Welcome back!” His gentle sister spread her arms wide open, as if wanting to give him a warm embrace.

“You’re my... sister?!” Leylin kept repeating it over, and the beautiful woman’s face gradually matched to one in his memories.

“Yes! Little brother, you’re finally back!” There were tears in the woman’s eyes. And yet, he suddenly felt immense terror as her arms approached him for an embrace. An unknown malicious intent caused him to quiver in dread. ‘WAIT!’

‘I’m Leylin Farlier, a bloodline Warlock from the Magus World. Why am I here?’ a voice kept shouting out in his mind, but Leylin could no longer control his body. His limbs moved automatically, and he was only one step away from pouncing into a hug.

“Defiant Ring of Fire!” “Shadow of Quandary!” “Dark Serpent Tendrils!”

Spell models flashed one after another in front of Leylin’s eyes, but his spells that had already been suppressed to a large extent seemed to lose all their abilities. No energy was emitted at all.

“Come back!” “Come back!” “Come back!”

The faint voice caused Leylin’s eyes to show further perplexion, and the surroundings of the wooden house underwent a huge change. The dark red fog grew more dense, and the bright golden rose gradually wilted to reveal white skeletons below. A few small snakes slithered out of the occasional eye hole.

The wooden house had changed behind the roses, becoming a coiled up bundle of snakes. A few triangular serpent heads popped out from it, spitting out a dark red poison. In an instant, the peasant home had turned into a terrifying hell.

‘This feeling of suppression is familiar...’ Streams of dark red fog automatically invaded Leylin’s body, and it caused the familiarity to grow more intense.

Finally, light flickered in the depths of Leylin’s eyes.

“It’s dreamforce! This is Dreamscape! I’ve been dragged into a dream!”

---

[Beep! Host determined to be in Dreamscape!]

As if the fog in his memories had been completely swept away, the A.I. Chip's voice was no longer that of a shrieking woman; it grew clear once more.

Feeling his elemental control and his soul force being isolated, Leylin's thoughts flashed to something, 'Dreamscape is a profound world that rejects all powers that are not dreamforce.'

"Come back!" At this moment, the fingers of the woman nearby were about to touch Leylin's face.

"In that case," a spell model was abruptly transferred to him by the A.I. Chip, "rank 4 dream spell— Illusory Scepter!" Large amounts of dreamforce waves gathered in Leylin's hand, forming a strange ancient scepter.

"Go away!" Leylin pointed the scepter at the woman, and dark red demonic flames sprayed out of it.

"AAAHH!" The woman screamed, covering her face and retreating.

"Who are you?" Leylin's expression was very serious as he watched the woman who stood up once more.

A large portion of her face had disappeared, but strangely enough she had no reaction to it. There wasn't even any blood at the site of the injury.

“I never thought you'd have already altered yourself for Dreamscape and grasped control of dreamforce...” The woman spoke dully, but the familiar voice made Leylin's pupils shrink, “You're... The Snake—”

Rumble! The scene broke apart, revealing an astral river that stretched through the void. A starlike bundle of snakes opened up in the river, revealing the Snake Dowager within.

“My child, return to my embrace!” The Snake Dowager's voice held within it some bizarre attractive force, causing the blood in Leylin's body to boil, out of his control.

A voice inside urged him to submit and fall at the knees of the Dowager. Large numbers of giant snakes were hissing and roaring at him, the sound waves causing his expression to change. “This is not Purgatory World, but a dream.

“My free will shall not be controlled by anything else! Snake Dowager, your biggest mistake today was dragging me into Dreamscape!” A decisive look immediately appeared in Leylin's eyes, and an even more illusory, dazzling spell model formed in his hands.

“Rank 5 dream spell— Distract Dream!” Strange undulations shrouded the region...

Feeling wetness across his cheek, Leylin opened his eyes to find a strange large beast looming over him with its mouth wide open. Its scarlet tongue licked at his face, and a terrible stench assaulted his nostrils.

“The central continent’s Bone Grey Badger? Then this is the real world, which means I’ve escaped?” Leylin’s eyes regained their radiance as he easily chased the monster away, glee apparent on his face.

He took a look around, and found skid marks on the ground, greenish yellow soil peeking through the tracks made in the grass.

“That’s right. I was on the way back to the Warlock Union, but the Snake Dowager pulled me into a dream, which is why I suddenly fell...” Leylin touched his chin, guessing what had happened.

“Darkness and dreams share a strong connection. It’s no surprise that she can use the power of dreams. The only thing she didn’t expect was that I’d already undergone Dreamscape alteration and be able to use dreamforce...” Cold sweat streamed down Leylin’s back. If not for his prior experience with Dreamscape, the consequences of being pulled into that dream would have been disastrous.

There was a huge gap between the Magus World and Purgatory. With the added limitations of protective spheres, the Snake Dowager would not be able to attack Leylin so easily.



Yet, Dreamscape was different. Space itself was muddled there, and everything was everywhere. An attack through dreams would be the most energy efficient.

Though there were some limitations, it should have been enough for the Snake Dowager to suppress Leylin. Perhaps the only thing she hadn't considered was that Leylin had already made contact with dreamforce, and his body was used to it. This allowed him to snap out of it automatically, and even use a rank 5 dream spell.

While he could do little to her, the time he had gained was enough for him to escape.

"Snake Dowager..." Leylin muttered, his eyes flickering with light. Her attack had made it clear to him that she would not tolerate any descendant escaping her control.

The more outstanding he was and the faster he progressed, the more intense the conflict of interest would grow.

'I never expected that a tiny existence like me would catch the attention of the Snake Dowager.' Leylin's lips quirked up in a bitter smile. He'd already felt like he was being watched when he'd evolved to become a Kemoyin Emperor Warlock. He just hadn't expected this day to come so fast.

# Chapter 666 - Allsnake Curse

---

“A.I. Chip, conduct a full body scan!” Leylin commanded. He had just escaped from the Snake Dowager’s dream.

The Dowager was an existence that surpassed rank 7, and her power exceeded the limitations set by worlds. She could cross world borders and attack through Dreamscape, a strength that was unimaginable for Leylin.

When dealing with someone like her, it wouldn’t hurt to be cautious. Hence, thorough checks were a necessary thing.

[Mission established. Beginning scanning procedures. Atomic microscope has been authorised, beginning scan...]

Large amounts of blue light scanned every region of Leylin’s body after the A.I. Chip sounded, the images resolved to the cellular level. The atomic microscope scanned everything. The blue light took the form of countless threads that swept through him.

[Skeleton normal. Internal organs normal. Scanning bloodline and sea of consciousness...]

Leylin looked rather calm, but when the A.I. Chip’s rays scanned his blood and sea of consciousness his expression changed.

Tiny black runes wiggled out from the surface of his body, and after they emerged Leylin felt the blood circulation in his body abruptly speed up tenfold! The increase in blood flow caused his face to flush, and fine blood appeared deep inside his pores.

The black runes crawled to his forehead, forming the image of a little black snake. Around this snake was a ring of tiny pointed runes, resembling chains and a cage that kept the snake within.

“What’s going on?” Leylin felt the bloodline force in his body show signs of going berserk, and the rune on his forehead began to exert more strength. It was restraining him!

His bloodline force was rebelling against its owner, and restraining him. It sounded like a joke, but Leylin did not find it funny at all.

“Quiet down. Innate spell of control!” Leylin exclaimed.

Hss— The terrifying image of a Kemoyin Emperor appeared behind him. Currently, the phantom was encircled and bound by a circle of black chains as well. The massive Kemoyin Emperor hissed and roared, but it had no effect on the bindings.

There were even sharp barbs on the chains, and they pierced through his scales into his flesh. The intense pain was transmitted directly to Leylin’s truesoul.

HSS— The Kemoyin Emperor roared again, but this one seemed very feeble. Still, the will of a rank 5 ruler could somewhat control the rebellion of the bloodline force, and allowed the odd phenomenon in his body to calm down.

“What is this?” Feeling the binding rune on his forehead absorbing his bloodline force on top of suppressing him, Leylin’s expression grew grim.

He’d already guessed that this was something left behind by the Snake Dowager. She was someone who exceeded rank 7, an existence that had grasped laws. Even though she had been careless enough to let him escape, she still had enough time to leave something behind. As the source of Leylin’s bloodline, manipulating his bloodline force slightly was a simple task for her.

‘The rebellion of bloodline force... All those who walk on the path of bloodlines will eventually be shackled by the very bloodline itself...’ For some reason, Leylin suddenly recalled the time when he’d first obtained Kemoyin’s Pupil, more specifically the inscription by Great Magus Serholm.

[Beep! Host has been struck with an unknown curse. All stats decreasing.]

The warning from the A.I. Chip was bright red, showing the urgency of the situation.

“Show me the information!” Leylin grew grim as he felt the weakening of his body. The rebellion of the bloodline force as well as the suppression of a portion of his strength made him feel unprecedented weakness.

‘I was too careless before! Strength that depends on a bloodline might be very useful initially, but there are going to be some hidden dangers no matter what. If not for my bloodline having evolved to the Kemoyin Emperor and having gained some degree of independence, this mark could very well have caused me to lose all my strength and become subject to the whims of the Snake Dowager!’ Leylin’s expression was incomparably dark.

[Leylin Farlier. Rank 5 Warlock. Bloodline: Giant Kemoyin Serpent (Complete form). Strength: 45 (76), Agility: 40 (62), Vitality: 100 (176.9), Spiritual force: 1013.5 (2003.5), Magic power: 1013 (Magic power is in synchronisation with spiritual force). Soul force: 101 (200). Condition: Weakened by curse, stats lowering on all fronts. Currently at New Moon, future undetermined.]

Leylin now looked worse. These stats pulled him down to the level of one who had just stepped into Radiant Moon.

Though it had only been a short period of time, the curse had lowered his strength by about half, and there was a possibility of worsening.

Leylin looked at the ‘future undetermined’ in his status screen,

and his voice was icy as he asked, “What does ‘future undetermined mean?’

[Based on evaluation of model, the curse will continuously absorb the host’s bloodline and increase its capabilities. The host’s stats are set to continue to decrease, and there is a possibility of a permanent drop in rank.]

The A.I. Chip quickly answered him, but Leylin had nothing to rejoice over.

“Decrease? To what extent?”

[Unknown. Possibility exists of a complete loss of bloodline force.]

The conclusion given by the A.I. Chip caused Leylin’s expression to grow even more serious.

‘Is it the bloodline shackles or a backlash? Or is this something the Snake Dowager chains her younger generations with?’ In an instant, Leylin’s mind came up with many possibilities.

This force was evidently linked to his bloodline force, and the closeness far exceeded Leylin’s expectations. In order to go further on the path of a Warlock, one would need to be modified by

bloodline force, which was why it equated his own power.

However, when the Snake Dowager became hostile, Leylin finally knew the terror of the incomparably tame bloodline force when it rebelled.

Debts had to be repaid. Bloodline Warlocks relied on their bloodline force to amplify their progress, and be it in rate of advancement or battle strength, they exceeded their peers at the same rank. However, they were restricted by bloodline shackles, and once one met the source of their bloodline there was no way to fight back against them.

No. They, whose souls fused with the source of their bloodlines, would not even have thoughts of rebellion!

Leylin was sure that if Gilbert or any other Kemoyin Warlock was in his position, they would not even resist the Snake Dowager. Their wills were all subservient to her. This control extended past their bloodlines and into their souls. This was a powerful manipulation of souls! Unless one changed the soul, it was impossible to eliminate any influences.

‘Hehe... Once I have the intention of rebelling against you, you strike me down and make me a regular human? How overbearing!’ Leylin stroked his chin and suddenly began to laugh coldly.

‘But I will never let anyone take control of my freedom. Bloodline force? It’s my bloodline, and even though it originates from the Giant Kemoyin Serpent, it’s been altered and refined by the A.I.

Chip. I even had it automatically evolve to become a Kemoyin Emperor, you can't control me so easily...'

[A similar record has been found in the database]

the A.I. Chip intoned at this moment. With the accumulation of knowledge from Sky City and the Warlock Union, the A.I. Chip could be said to be a museum of the Magus World. No matter how rare and obscure a topic was, information could be found about it.

[Allsnake Curse: The Snake Dowager of the Shadow World has supreme control over all of her progeny. This is a blessing and also a curse, one condensed with bloodline force. Once a descendant has thoughts of disobeying the will of the Snake Dowager, the Allsnake Curse will appear and automatically absorb as well as seal off the descendant's bloodline force, turning into the most powerful bloodline curse. Effect: Continuous weakening of power of Warlock, until target's death.]

There was also a projection of an image beside this introduction, and it was a carbon copy of the one on Leylin's forehead.

"Till death? I like it!" Leylin snickered, "A.I. Chip, based on this rate, how much time do I have left?"



[Beep! Based on current situation, host will fall from Radiant Moon in 26 hours, and in 267 hours lose Morning Star strength. 312 hours later, bloodline force will be completely lost and host will become a regular human.]

The complicated calculations were completed by the A.I. Chip in an instant, giving him a conclusion. “It’s too rushed. Is there anyway to slow the process?”

With its massive calculative ability, Leylin was given an answer.

[Host can suppress their own bloodline force and seal off their Radiant Moon strength. Such a situation can easily extend the period by three years in tandem with the Medusa’s Gaze potion.]

The Allsnake Curse was a curse that absorbed his bloodline force, which was why sealing his own strength would slow the effects of the curse temporarily.

Leylin nodded, but suddenly froze.

“Sealing off my Radiant Moon strength means I’ll be able to maintain this condition for three years, but I can’t use any strength at rank 5. In that case, if I were to meet a powerful enemy...” Leylin knew fully well that the more he used his own power, the closer he was pushing himself to death.

However, his enemies would not let him off so easily, especially the Snake Dowager. With the attacks from Dreamscape, he'd been forced to run for his life constantly, and this situation would force him to use his bloodline force. He had then suffered the backlash from the Allsnake Curse, which was probably her intention.

“In that case, she definitely won't give up after one attack!” Leylin's pupils shrank abruptly.

“Hss—” At the moment these thoughts emerged, his true soul was distracted as he entered Dreamscape once more.

A terrifying gigantic white snake was spitting out its tongue, its gaze of one looking at a dead man.

# Chapter 667 - Mask Of The Dreamless

---

“A.I. Chip, conduct scan!” Leylin ordered, and the A.I. Chip quickly sent a passage of information to him.

[Alabaster Devilsnake: Rumoured to be a descendant of the Snake Dowager that inherited dreamforce. Likes to torture its prey in their dreams before digesting them. Matures at rank 5.]

It gave him a thought. ‘Even the Snake Dowager needs to use a large amount of energy in order to send dreamforce to a faraway world. That’s probably why she just activated the Allsnake Curse and then left the rest to her children...’

Hss— At this moment, the Alabaster Devilsnake was flicking its scarlet tongue as its blood red eyes were fixed on Leylin. Its body rumbled as it moved abruptly, turning into a streak of white lightning.

‘There’s no choice but to act!’ Leylin laughed wryly, the energy in his body beginning to boil, “Dream spell...”

White lightning seemed to flicker through the void, and when things returned to normal Leylin was back in the real world.

At this moment, his face looked wretched. The Allsnake Curse on his forehead spread a lot of black veins, greedily absorbing his own bloodline force and turning the strength from his own body into a

curse. It was a continuous cycle with no cure.

[Warning! Warning! Host's bloodline force has reached the threshold and is about to drop from Radiant Moon.]

The red warning prompt the A.I. Chip sent out caused Leylin's heart to sink. While he'd done his best to hold back his strength, in order to escape from Dreamscape he had no choice but to use dream spells and his bloodline force. It had provided the Allsnake Curse with an opportunity to act up.

'No, this can't go on! A.I. Chip, set up a maze in Dreamscape,' Leylin quickly commanded. The possibility of being dragged into a dream and assaulted from all sides caused his face to turn dark.

[Beep! Mission established, beginning projection of guiding coordinates. Setting up Dreamscape firewall]

the A.I. Chip immediately intoned. That was the result of Leylin's studies on Dreamscape. He could try to prevent others from pulling him into a dream, and while he did not know how well it would go, it was still better than nothing.

Making use of this borrowed time that would be hard to come by, Leylin immediately started on other plans, 'A.I. Chip, begin procedure D-23, let's forge the Mask of the Dreamless!'

This command was to make the necessary preparations for the Snake Dowager attacking through Dreamscape.

[Mission established! Beginning simulation. Materials required: 300g of Luk Alloy, tooth of single-eyed snake...]

These were all materials Leylin had found could isolate dreamforce in his previous experiments. A black gas appeared on his body with the A.I. Chip's report, and the materials it had mentioned floated out from a flickering light in his waist pouch.

A bundle of demonic black light was formed, devouring the materials. Leylin looked calm as he watched the materials dissolve in the flames, occasionally making some seals and transferring some refining runes into the flames.

Just these few casual movements were extremely fluid, exhibiting the terrifying abilities of a Grandmaster alchemist.

With Leylin's powerful control, it wasn't long before a mask with only one half hovered above the flames. This mask was completely black, its fluid lines and decorative designs giving it a unique aesthetic. A strange aura was emitted from it.

The mask flew out and covered Leylin's face, blocking the Allsnake Curse on his forehead.

Leylin seemed to change after wearing the mask, and now seemed to have some mysterious charm.

The A.I. Chip soon listed the ingredients and all sorts of information about the mask.

[Unique Magic Item— Mask of the Dreamless. Weight: 200g. Material: Luk Alloy, tooth of single-eyed snake. Effect: Prevents being spied on with dreamforce. Protects truesoul from invasions from Dreamscape...]

The icy cold mask covered part of Leylin's skin, making him feel at ease, "Thankfully, I'd already been focusing on dealing with dream invasions, and had invented the Mask of the Dreamless."

His fingers stroked the mask, feeling the complicated and intricate patterns. This mask was formed from simulations based on the A.I. Chip's database. On top of that, with Leylin's eye as a Grandmaster alchemist and his creativity allowed him to create this item.

It only had a singular function in blocking dream invasions, which meant it couldn't be classified as a magic artifact or equipment. However, it's ability did not lose out in value to some magical equipment either.

To Leylin, who'd altered himself for Dreamscape and was

sensitive to dreamforce, the Mask of the Dreamless was something that finally allowed him to relax. ‘Unless the mask is destroyed, my opponent’s can’t just drag me into a dream and use up my strength...’

Leylin now fully comprehended the terror that was the Snake Dowager. Even while they were in different worlds, he could do nothing against her. Thankfully, with this as a buffer, he could now calm down and think through this matter.

“A.I. Chip, check the database of all the simulations I authorised and find a method to solve the Allsnake Curse.”

Leylin’s voice was low, and the A.I. Chip quickly began to operate as large amounts of information appeared in front of him. Countless formulae were used, and a faint image of the Snake Dowager even appeared in the virtual space.

With the countless calculations, the A.I Chip came up with a conclusion.

[Host has 3 options:

The Snake Dowager removes the mark of her own accord.

Host gets the blessing of a rank 9 existence, using their origin force to purge the Host’s bloodline.

Host completely breaks through bloodline shackles, severing all ties with the Snake Dowager.]

‘Plans 1 and 2 are impossible, there are too many uncertain variables. I can’t do anything for a high-ranked existence, so I’d have to rely on luck,’ Leylin touched his chin, light glinting in his pupils, ‘The only choice is to break through the restriction on the bloodline and break away from these shackles completely!’

The control and curse of the Snake Dowager came from the Giant Kemoyin Serpent’s bloodline force. If Leylin could completely shatter the bloodline shackles and become an independent being, he would no longer be affected by her.

As he was now, this was the most feasible plan.

“But I didn’t expect to meet her so quickly. I’ll have to find a way to break the bloodline shackles. I can’t skip this, and I’ll have to go to Purgatory World...”

Leylin looked grim, ‘With my current state, I need to keep a low profile for a period of time...’ With this thought, he transformed into a bundle of black flames and disappeared.

---

In the Morning Star Area. Jeffrey wore a black swallow-tailed coat with not even a hair out of place, seeming like the most upright gentleman.

“Lady Freya is about to give birth. This is something worthy of celebration for our Warlock Union!”



“Yes! The rank 5 bloodline in our union now has been passed on! With the talent His Highness Leylin has shown, the future of his bloodline descendants is going to be bright...”

Offa laughed as he spoke. He was now waiting with Jeffrey above the castle for Leylin.

Flustered maids and servants ran everywhere in the castle. A layer of crimson energy spread through the area, gradually enveloping a room and still travelling outwards. The low voice of a woman sounded within.

“This is a rank 5 bloodline! Is it the Giant Kemoyin Serpent? What’s going on? Does the Kemoyin Serpent have an ancestor or something like that?” Jeffrey was rather curious about this.

“No. His Highness’ bloodline is the purest Kemoyin bloodline, there’s no doubt about it. Based on my observations, the bloodline he’s inherited might very well be that of the ancient Kemoyin Emperor, the ruler of the Giant Kemoyin Serpents!” Offa’s voice was soft, as if he was revealing some huge secret.

“Hss... In other words...” Jeffrey sucked in a breath of cold air.

“Yes! The royal family of the Ouroboros Clan has appeared. There is no leader more proper than the Kemoyin Emperor!” Ruling bloodlines held immense control over bloodline clans. This was the same case with the Snake Dowager over Leylin, and based on his Kemoyin Emperor bloodline Leylin had authority over the

lives and deaths of the Kemoyin Warlocks under him.

His bloodline definitely ruled the Ouroboros Clan!

“The Ouroboros Clan will forever be subservient to the ruling bloodline to the day that the bloodline dies off. Unless that happens, betrayal will not occur for eternity!” Offa’s voice was still as low as before, “We have to be even more prudent when dealing with His Highness.”

“That I know, but... Bevis...” Jeffrey could only laugh wryly.

No matter what organisation it was, the appearance of talents like Bevis and Leylin were worthy of celebration. However, the two geniuses did not see eye to eye, which resulted in a great catastrophe.

To be honest, the reason they were here was to serve as protection and as a warning.

If not, Leylin would definitely not let Bevis go. If he were to do anything drastic the consequences were not anything they wanted to see.

Otherwise, even for the birth of a child with a rank 5 bloodline, there wouldn’t be two Radiant Moon Warlocks on guard duty.

At the mention of this, Jeffrey seemed to think of something and suddenly asked. “Lord Offa, did you see the news regarding the

Blazing Flame Monarch?”

# Chapter 668 - Return And Birth

---

“Of course! The Blazing Flame Monarch’s lair in Düz was destroyed! Even the whereabouts of a Breaking Dawn like the Monarch are unknown now, how would I not know of something so big?” There was a bitter smile at the corner of Offa’s lips.

This was the biggest news these days in the central continent. No, for the core of a rank 6 Monarch’s power to be struck so severely, this was something that hadn’t happened in the past few thousand years!

News concerning the Blazing Flame Monarch themselves being seriously injured and their whereabouts being unknown horrified Offa and the other Radiant Moon Warlocks.

This was a rank 6 Magus, a Breaking Dawn! It was someone who’d come into contact with the power of laws!

Even with the amplification from their bloodlines and having transformed the Morning Star Area into a large fort, in front of such an existence they could only defend themselves. In contrast, Leylin not only struck at and robbed the Blazing Flame Monarch’s Düz City, but he also left his opponent missing, with no news whether they were dead or alive. Such a terrifying strength and methods caused Offa and the others to grow even more vigilant and fearful.

“Really, this time His Highness Leylin...” Even the highest authority of the Warlock Union, Offa, could not help but feel

shocked at Leylin's boldness and strength. His group had originally thought Leylin wanted to launch a surprise attack on the Blazing Flame Monarch's troops for revenge; they'd never expected that he'd been targeting the Monarch themselves all the while.

The most crucial thing was that he seemed to have succeeded! His courage and exemplary strength were displayed through his success, and it even left Offa incessantly frightened.

Jeffrey was a little speechless as well. "I've received news that the outside world not only placed Leylin's rank 5 bloodline as the Union's most powerful inheritance, it even listed him as the most powerful Radiant Moon. They're claiming he'll bring about the rise of bloodline Warlocks."

He'd thought before that he already had a deep understanding of Leylin's prowess, but he hadn't thought that his previous performance was only scratching the surface of his abilities.

"However, His Highness Leylin's military success will awe many people," Offa lifted his head and looked at the surroundings. A smile emerged at the corner of his lips, "It seems His Highness Bevis won't be coming this time. That's great!" He was happy that he could avoid internal strife.

Jeffrey rolled his eyes. "After learning of Leylin's feats, how would he have the guts to come here? We're just here in case anything happens."

Even he had no choice but to admit a slight fear of Leylin's

methods. You dare offend me? I'll show up at your doorstep to kill you. I won't bother with your soldiers or anything, I'll eliminate the mastermind directly. How many come is how many I will kill, even if the opponent is a Monarch. This method that went against common sense would usually be suppressed by the masses, but if one possessed enough power to contend against the opponent, they would turn into the largest threat.

At the very least, it was very clear now to Bevis that if he tried any tricks, even if he didn't act himself, if Leylin thought he did it he would find and kill him. Be it Offa or Jeffrey, their counsel would not help.

As for the other Warlocks of the Union? Even if the Blazing Flame Monarch hadn't been eliminated, they'd at least sustained grievous injuries. Did Bevis believe that their help would equate to Breaking Dawn strength?

"Actually, this is also a good thing!" Offa let out a faint smile, "For now, His Highness Leylin, said to be invincible below Breaking Dawn, is the Warlock with the greatest hope of advancing to rank 6. Gaining a military deterrent like that will greatly improve our circumstances in the central continent..."

"Invincible below Breaking Dawn?" At this moment, a figure emerged before Offa and Jeffrey. His voice was extremely familiar but it caused their expressions to change.

"Your Highness Leylin?" Jeffrey looked at Leylin who suddenly appeared, fear secretly emerging in his heart.

He and Offa were Radiant Moon Warlocks, and on top of that they were actively monitoring their surroundings. Even the flow of energy particles in the air could not escape their senses, yet Leylin had bypassed them so easily to appear behind them. Didn't this mean that, if Leylin intended it, he could mount a sneak attack on any of the Warlocks here?

Only now did Jeffrey truly realise how different Leylin was from before. The current him indeed was the hope of the bloodline Warlocks, the Warlock invincible below Breaking Dawn!

Leylin was wearing a dark gold Magus robe, and it was as if the aura on his body had completely vanished. It left Jeffrey unable to measure him clearly. On top of that, Leylin currently had a strange black mark covering half his face, and it caused him to be slightly doubtful.

"This is..." Offa took the initiative to ask.

"Ah," Leylin touched the mark on his face, "A small injury I got a while ago." Trying to cover it up would easily arouse suspicion, so he felt like he might as well admit it.

"Indeed, the terror of a Breaking Dawn is hard to resist," Offa nodded, deep in thought. The opponent was indeed a Monarch; no matter how powerful Leylin was, avoiding injury was impossible.

Offa had formed his own picture of things with Leylin's misleading words. The mark on Leylin's face had automatically

been categorised as the aftermath of his confrontation with the Blazing Flame Monarch.

“Before I forget, it’s been a long time Your Highnesses,” a wicked smile adorned Leylin’s face as he took the initiative to make a bow, “Freya and the Ouroboros Clan have been in your care during my absence, this humble servant is thankful.”

“Don’t mention it. Your Highness managed to destroy Düz City in one move, even inflicting serious damage to the Blazing Flame Monarch. Compared to such great news for us suppressed Warlocks, is this anything big?” Offa and Jeffrey answered respectfully. No matter what, the friendship of a Warlock invincible below Breaking Dawn would be extremely beneficial for them.

“Let’s skip the words of thanks, may our friendship last forever!” Leylin smiled; he certainly knew what these two Warlocks wanted.

“Of course! Our friendship is like a bond of brotherhood,” Offa and Jeffrey were both Warlocks with age and much knowledge, while Leylin, too, had a multitude of experiences. The three Warlocks kept flattering each other and beat around the bush, but did not get to the point.

Watching Leylin’s carefree attitude, even as if he didn’t care much for Freya who was in labour downstairs, Offa could not help but secretly call him an ‘old fox’ in his mind. Still, he took the lead to question him, “We’re not sure what the results of Your Highness’ trip this time was. The Blazing Flame Monarch...”



Of course, the life and death of the Blazing Flame Monarch was their priority; and how could the news in the outside world be more accurate than the account of Leylin who was one of the parties involved? This also was a measure of Leylin's military strength, and would have an inexpressible change in the dynamics of the central continent afterwards. They had no choice but to be concerned.

“Oh, about that. I'm sorry,” Leylin laughed with ‘embarrassment’, “Although I took Düz down with some like-minded friends, and even attacked the Fiery World and inflicted serious damage to the Blazing Flame Monarch, I still couldn't quite kill them.”

Although this was just a short and simple explanation, just the dangers implied by them caused Jeffrey and Offa to break into cold sweat in terror.

Hearing that the Blazing Flame Monarch was seriously injured but not dead, relief flooded Offa's heart despite his slight disappointment. If Leylin was already able to get rid of a Breaking Dawn Magus, he didn't know what sort of attitude to hold towards him anymore.

“However...” Leylin deliberately paused, causing Offa's and Jeffrey's hearts to grow alert again.

“Although we didn't manage to get rid of the Blazing Flame Monarch, we were successful in inflicting serious damage on the

opponent instead. Not only would it take a long time to recuperate from such a thing, it's hard to say whether the Monarch will even be able to remain at rank 6 even after a full recovery..."

He then dropped another bomb before Offa and Jeffrey could digest this shocking news, "It's also worth wondering if the Blazing Flame Monarch will treat us as enemies in the future. I don't believe that will be a huge issue..."

The explosive news that Leylin dropped one after the other caused Offa and Jeffrey to be dazzled. They couldn't understand at all. The Blazing Flame Monarch could possibly fall in rank, and on top of that end their enmity with Warlocks even in spite of such great losses? How was this even possible?

However, looking at the proud Leylin, Offa and Jeffrey couldn't help but consider this possibility from all angles.

Leylin smiled. The 'Blazing Flame Monarch' had lost a part of her laws of fire, sustained serious injuries, and worst of all experienced the trauma of her truesoul being split and fused back together. With so much damage being stacked on her, if Melinda was able to recover even within a few hundred years, Leylin would look up to her.

Furthermore, the Blazing Flame Monarch's will could thoroughly be suppressed or annihilated by Melinda before that. Whether the current Blazing Flame Monarch could still maintain her previous attitude of desiring the extinction of bloodline Warlocks remained to be seen.

Although Leylin was ruthless in his betrayal, they were still ‘allies’ after all. With her power weakened, what she needed now was a peaceful environment to recuperate in, not an impetuous vengeance. Leylin believed that an old witch like Melinda would easily be able to think of that.

Hence, it was almost certain that even the extremist portion of the Blazing Flame Monarch would choose to stay low profile and live in seclusion now.

Although this was the case, the obstinate ruthlessness the Blazing Flame Monarch showed towards Warlocks was deeply seared into their minds. They wouldn’t be able to react to this quickly at all.

Seeing them like that, Leylin could not help but feel slightly amused. And at this moment, “Wah! Wah!”, an infant’s cries echoed from the castle.

The loud and clear cries strangely reverberated through the entire castle, a hallmark to this child’s remarkability.

# Chapter 669 - Departure And Twilight

---

“And now my second descendant is born,” Leylin didn’t know himself what he was feeling exactly, but the birth of a descendant still caused a slight tenderness in his heart.

“Please excuse me,” he said to Offa and Jeffrey, knocking them out of their stupor.

“Of course Your Highness, go handle your own matters first,” they answered with understanding.

Black flames flashed as Leylin disappeared, only to arrive at a room in the castle. This luxurious room was filled with the smell of blood and amniotic fluid. A few wet nurses had already collapsed on the floor, the main culprit being the infant that was still crying out loud.

These wet nurses had been carefully selected, and almost all of them were rank 1 Warlocks. Still, the power from the rank 5 bloodline in the child’s body surpassed the limits of what they could bear.

After all, Leylin, Freya, and the rest normally suppressed their vital radiations on purpose to avoid polluting the surrounding environment. A newborn couldn’t possibly have such awareness.

As the infant wept, darkness elemental energy particles emerged and began circling around it. Black flames burnt constantly, beginning to wreck the surrounding furniture and bed sheets.

“Its spiritual force and bloodline force are rebelling?” Instead of frightening him, this news actually made Leylin glad. “This child’s innate skill is very high!”

This degree of rebellion did not bother him, and he easily suppressed it as he held the infant up. Seemingly due to sensing the bond of their bloodline, the infant immediately stopped crying upon seeing Leylin, and even let out an innocent smile.

Being a peak rank 3 Warlock whose vitality surpassed most others, Freya had managed to maintain her consciousness till now. When she saw who had arrived, she was shocked at first but then relaxed, “Dear... Our child...”

“Yes, our child is born. It’s been hard on you,” Leylin comforted her gently, his palms still caressing the forehead of the infant in his embrace. Black light flashed in the room, causing it to fall into a deep slumber.

Just like this, Leylin embraced the child and accompanied Freya quietly. Even though she was a Warlock, the fatigue due to the pregnancy and labour of a child with such a unique bloodline still caused her to fall into a deep sleep very quickly.

‘A legacy of the bloodline, eternal from generation to generation.’ Leylin seemed to grow some special feelings as he looked at the soundly sleeping infant in his hands.

The pursuit of eternal life was the dream of all humans, but there

were almost none who succeeded in the endeavour. Hence there was another method; by producing offspring and passing down their bloodline, one could achieve a sort of immortality of genetics.

Then there was a sort of spiritual immortality. By passing on one's own knowledge and perception of the world to others, teaching students of one's culture and wisdom, one could achieve an immortality of its own.

Descendants would need to be nurtured. One would need to inculcate their own ideas in their blood descendants, spreading their knowledge. This, too, created an eternal life in some sense. As long as this tradition was passed from generation to generation, one could be considered as having partly accomplished the goal.

Hence, be it in his previous life or in this world, humans always held feelings for their descendants. Although individuals who broke this norm did exist, they were not the mainstream.

To Leylin, passing down his bloodline was not only a means to form his power. His descendants would inherit his ideas and legacy. Although true eternal life existed in the Magus World, something much more attractive than having descendants, that did not hinder him from keeping them as a last resort.

‘The power of its bloodline is very rich, but it also conceals some dangers!’ Soul force swept through the infant, revealing everything about its body before his eyes. Leylin's eyebrows furrowed.

At rank 5, the Kemoyin Emperor bloodline would definitely be detected by the Snake Dowager. With him taking the heat, these bloodlines that were diluted with others might not be given much attention, but even small movements, combined with the infants' inability to stay on guard, would lead to complete annihilation. Hence, he had to take precautions.

‘A.I. Chip, construct a Dreamscape defence,’ Leylin commanded.

The A.I. Chip quickly responded.

[Beep! Mission established! Beginning to transfer runes...]

Misty runes began to appear on Leylin's hands one after the other, forming a unique seal that merged into the infant's back before flickering and fading.

‘The possibility of his bloodline attracting attention was already very low. With the addition of these defences it should be negligible,’ Leylin was nodding as he thought of Celine, ‘I still need to find the time to make a trip to the Twilight Zone.’

The main door was pulled open with a thud, and he walked out while carrying the child. Outside the door, Gilbert and Emma were waiting alongside Kubler and his other subordinates, all of them with excitement in their expressions.

“Congratulations, Master!” His first subordinate Warlock knelt down respectfully. Kubler’s actions were followed by the loud sounds of congratulations.

“Mm,” Leylin nodded, raising the infant in his hands above his head, “This child shall be called Syre. Syre Farlier, son of Leylin Farlier!”

In the language of the central continent, the name Syre carried the connotation of being honourable and blessed. It was a very good name. Hearing Leylin’s announcement, Kubler and the others momentarily drowned the area with cheers, “Syre! Syre!”

---

A grand feast was held that night in celebration. Not only did Offa, Jeffrey and Wayde attend, even Bevis had to force a smile on his face and come over to congratulate Leylin.

After the grand feast ended, Leylin gathered Gilbert, Emma, Offa, and the others, announcing his decision to set out on a long journey. He told these people that he’d discovered another world, and was preparing to delve into a long-term expedition.

Although Offa and others did not really understand Leylin’s actions, they still consented and promised to support the Ouroboros Clan as they always had. To the outside world, the Warlock invincible under Breaking Dawn was going to conduct long-term research, and he would hence stay in the Morning Star Area for a very long time.



Leaving aside the effect this news had on the central continent's current situation, Leylin had left the Morning Star Area the very next day in secret.

His departure this time was very low-profile. By the time someone realised it, they'd already lost his tracks.

---

Twilight Zone.

The lake of lava burst apart, revealing Leylin's figure, looking expressionlessly at his cuff. There, the lava had impressively burnt a round hole, leaving a mark.

‘Indeed. Now that I’m sealed, I’m not as strong as the last time I came here. I can only be considered an ordinary Morning Star now...’ A bitter smile hung at the corner of Leylin’s lips.

Due to the restrictions from the Allsnake Curse, he could no longer utilise power at Radiant Moon, even having taken the initiative to seal his bloodline force. Still, all that had only bought him three years of time.

He had to use this time to break through the shackles of his bloodline, resolving the curse. If not, the consequence would be his bloodline being completely sealed by it, something that would lead to immediate death!

Now that he’d taken the initiative to seal a large portion of his

bloodline, the A.I. Chip evaluated him to be no stronger than a Morning Star Magus. The best proof of this was the lava passageways. He could run amok in them before, but now it had managed to break through his defences and even leave a mark on his clothes.

‘This doesn’t feel good,’ Leylin’s eyebrows furrowed.

Being sealed due to the Allsnake Curse, he was now inferior to an ordinary Radiant Moon Magus. He had to conceal his own aura in the Morning Star Area to deceive people, so how would he dare to stay there for any length of time? With his strength having suffered great losses, the central continent was too dangerous for him. He had to go into hiding for some time.

Leylin never believed in fairness and good blood. Only the most meticulous plans would guarantee his safety as he advanced on his path. Remaining in the Morning Star Area would cause unending problems. Going out instead was better for both parties.

Before confirming that Leylin had thoroughly died, who would dare to harm the Ouroboros Clan, Freya and her child?

There was, in fact, a darker thought deep in Leylin’s heart. If anyone reached out for his power, he could at most come back for revenge later on, paying them back tenfold. Those with no qualms made the most terrifying of enemies.

‘After resolving the matters in Twilight Zone, I’m afraid I’ll need to make a trip to the south coast.’ Making silent calculations,

Leylin suddenly lifted his head to look at the gloomy rock ceiling, letting loose a quiet sigh.

The current him had to leave for the Purgatory World to resolve the Allsnake Curse. With the Snake Dowager's lair being there, the amount of danger could not be described.

Thus, even Leylin wasn't very confident in his outing this time. Thus, settling all matters on his hands evidently became important. The central continent was taken care of, and next would be Twilight Zone.

After that, he still wanted to return to the south coast in his heart. Be it the rank 3 Magus who inflicted serious damage on him at that time and force him to flee underground, or the matters related to the Farlier Family on the Chernobyl Islands, he needed to tie up all loose ends.

Even a Morning Star like the current him would be invincible in the south coast.

Only when these matters were totally resolved would Leylin be able to abandon everything completely. He could then enter the Purgatory World, striving for his own path forward even at the cost of death.

'Twilight Zone's matters are easy. Only, should I leave behind a hand in the shadows?' Leylin stroked his chin. His entire figure suddenly transformed into a black flame, whistling into the horizon.

Celine was currently beside a cradle. Looking at the figure that suddenly emerged beside her, she exclaimed with pleasant surprise, “Leylin!”

# Chapter 670 - Return To The South Coast

---

He named his first child Daniel. After setting up some isolation spells and asking Celine to hide herself for a period of time, he reckoned everything should be fine. With his business done, he headed for the south coast.

Though the surroundings were filled with dangerous areas that even rank 3 Magi were known to be unable to escape, this north coast that was isolated from the world seemed to Leylin like his backyard.

“It’s been so long, I wonder how those friends and enemies are now?” Leylin looked at the clouds through his window, and familiar faces appeared in his mind.

George, Nyssa, Damien, Number 4 and 5, and the former principal who were all his friends and servants. There were also his enemies like Gargamel and Alric as well.

Memories were dusted off one after the other, especially of him taking an airship to the south coast before he was even an acolyte. It all seemed as if it had happened yesterday.

“Time flew by in the blink of an eye...” Leylin raised his arm, glancing at his youthful and energetic palm as his mind drifted away once more.

“With fifth-grade aptitude, Jayden should be alive and well even now. As for George and Kaliweir... After all, one’s soul aptitude is

the most important thing for a Magus.”

Leylin sighed. If not for choosing the path of a Warlock, he would likely still be stuck as a rank 1 or 2 Magus, even with the help of his A.I. Chip. Forget Morning Star, the current him had even reached the Radiant Moon realm, something unheard of in the south coast. His bloodline had a large part to play in these advances. Things were always unpredictable...

“Besides...” Leylin looked at the near Volcano City and let out a sinister smile.

Red light circulated around his hand, and through his bloodline he could feel the activity of other Farlier descendants in the nearby Teljose City.

‘Descendants of Viscount Farlier?’ Leylin laughed, ‘Didn’t I not have any siblings before I left? Viscount John Farlier is very much like our ancestors indeed...’

Leylin still held some attachment towards the Farlier family; after all, his current body came from them. Even though he’d sent Damian over to protect them along with Number 4 and 5, he still couldn’t thoroughly cut his ties to them. Still, because it was difficult for him to face them at that time, he’d done it anyway.

A few hundred years had passed since then, and all that would be left of his relatives and friends would be ash and bone. This would make things easier for him; all he needed to do was give a few benefits to his descendants and everything would be fine.

“Attention to all passengers. The airship is arriving at the terminal in Teljose City! Please gather your belongings and leave the ship in order,” The gentle female voice sounded again, “Furthermore, the next flight will begin half a year later. The airship will circle the eastern line. Please make any reservations if need be. One final announcement: Traces of the Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect have been detected in the eastern portion of the city. Please be careful.”

The first few announcements didn’t net much of a reaction from the passengers, after all the airships here were not comparable to those of the central continent and needed a period of maintenance after each flight. If not for the fact that Teljose City was the trade center of the south coast, they wouldn’t have set up any airship routes at all. The last announcement with regards to the Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect, though, it wreaked havoc in the hearts of the passengers when it was made known.

“What do we do now, Darlie? The Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect’s disciples are all madmen, won’t it be too dangerous for us in town?” A few female Magi near Leylin got anxious.

“Rest assured. Teljose City is one of the main camps of the light Magi, and Lord Alric is protecting us. Nothing will happen here. Forget that, aren’t the Death Soul Protection and Soul Pollution Isolation spells our forte?” The girl named Darlie quickly calmed her partners down. The presence of the light Magi and Alric gave them a lot of confidence, and even the rest of the airship’s passengers started to quieten down afterwards.

‘Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect? Alric?’ Leylin laughed, ‘It seems like I can settle that debt quite easily this time.’

He hadn’t taken this airship out of convenience. There was a slight sentimental value to it, but most important was that it would allow him to collect crucial information. With his current abilities, just his dreamforce forcefield could force many Magi to hand over a large amount of information that included their secrets. With the A.I. Chip’s abilities added on top, Leylin grew more or less clear on what had happened in the south coast after he’d left.

During his escape after the fight for the essence of the Wisdom Tree, the light Magi had suffered great losses. This incident had sparked off the third great Magus War!

With multiple rank 2 light Magi injured or killed, the dark Magi were stirred into action. With the additional encouragement from the incident with the Wisdom Tree, they started vying over the Eternal River pocket dimension and launched the war.

High-level members, all previously hidden from the world’s eyes, emerged in an unprecedented battle above the Thousand Soul Island. Spells of darkness and light blotted out almost half the sky, and the battle ended with the island sinking down. Both parties had suffered great losses.

The third Magus War was supposed to last for a long time, but it was halted abruptly due to the appearance of another strong party. Right after the battle at Thousand Soul Island ended, the ancient Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect took advantage of the fact that both



sides were severely damaged and rose quickly in power and position. Their leader was rumoured to be the terminator of all souls— Gargamel! Members of the Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect were demon fanatics, and even wantonly collected souls in the south coast, regardless of whether they belonged to magicians or humans. They also didn't care whether they were attacking light magicians or dark ones, all in their sights were attacked.

With so many souls in hand, Gargamel's power recovered quickly. It had even advanced to the peak of rank 3 in a short period of time!

With all this, both sides decided that they could not let such a thing go on, quickly ending their original war and cooperating to suppress Gargamel's rise along with her Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect.

Finally, in an intense ambush, the rank 3 Magi of all three sides suffered grievous injuries or even death, and the Magi used their many inherited treasures to inflict great damage to Gargamel and the sect.

But Gargamel was indeed an ancient demon; it had managed to escape from the dark and light Magi and recuperated in hiding, silently waiting for a chance to make a comeback.

Rumours in recent times said that Gargamel's wounds were healing quickly, something that explained the increasing activity of the sect's members. They were conducting massive blood sacrifices and collecting souls. The entire south coast was laden with anxiety.

‘So to say, the south coast is currently experiencing a three-way stalemate between the dark Magi, light Magi, and the Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect...’ Leylin yawned, even if he’d sealed the majority of his abilities, enemies of such a level were still ants to him.

‘Let’s end things here quickly and find the Purgatory World. My time is far too precious!’ Leylin stood up and came to the entrance queue, waiting to alight. Darlie and his partners were in front of him.

“Hey Darlie, look. The hunk who sat with us before is here too.” The female Magus in front tugged on Darlie’s sleeve.

“Yeah, let’s go strike up a conversation! I’ll count myself lucky today, none of you can fight me!”

“You guys...” Darlie’s voice was soft and she looked like she was done with them, “Aren’t you guys afraid of offending him by speaking so loudly when we’re so near? And didn’t you guys try the other time as well? that sir over there hates to be disturbed...”

The female Magus looked at Leylin stealthily again after Darlie finished her words. The elegant black robe exuded a sense of royalty and the black mask on his face gave Leylin a few pints of mysteriousness. Though only half his face was revealed, the charm he gave off unknowingly was driving all the female Magi mad.

# Chapter 671 - Darlie

---

He had to say, with his bloodline strengthened his charm had also achieved a new peak. The current him could even charm ghosts and humans of any age. Even Darlie's face flushed and she lowered her head.

At this sight, Leylin couldn't help but feel a little good about himself. He smiled at Darlie.

Unfortunately, the action misled the female Magi in front of him, "Oh my god! He smiled at me!" "No! It was me!" Frustration coloured their faces as they fought over it.

"It's so good to be young!" Leylin shook his head, sauntering out of the airship after it came to a halt.

"Sir over there must be a Magus with a rich history." Darlie watched as Leylin walked away, curiosity burning in her eyes.

She was someone with pretty good aptitude and could be considered a talented person. On top of that, she was hardworking and had advanced to rank 1 at a young age. She'd even started on her elemental conversion already!

Despite this, her past few attempts at probing Leylin failed, and she realised that Leylin was not any ordinary Magus.

Sadly, her other companions did not seem to notice this; she

sighed as she looked at her starry-eyed friends.

‘Teljose City still looks the same as it did...’ Standing in front of the city wall, this large city built around a volcano seemed to have remained the same. The only difference was the aging of the walls.

Leylin couldn’t help but think of the first time he’d come here. That poor Magus, Jenna, and her meditation technique of Sacred Flame.

He managed to enter the city quite smoothly when he revealed his power as a Magus. The place was as bustling as it used to be, and had been separated into different strata. As his soul force probed through the city, he managed to find his old villa. However, it was now decked out with a whole new set of spell formations, set up by the Magus currently residing there.

Leylin shook his head and dismissed all thoughts of probing further, instead moving towards a tavern. He’d gotten a general idea of the current situation, but there was still some information he needed to probe further into; this was especially true of the issues surrounding the Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect.

Furthermore, since he was already here, Alric and the other Magi wouldn’t be able to escape him. He could wait at ease.

“Descendants of my blood, heed my command. Head here!” Leylin’s eyes turned crimson as his terrifying soul force spread out. His power, however, couldn’t be detected by anyone. Soul force was far too advanced to be detected by anyone in this city.

Still, it was a bad omen for the Magi who'd been picked by him. A fountain pen broke apart in Alric's hand as he stood up clutching his chest. "What... is this? What's going on?"

Magi usually had accurate premonitions. As a rank 3, Alric's intuition had saved him from umpteen dangerous situations.

That same sense of danger hit him again, and this time it was ten times as strong as the previous times. How could he stay calm with that?

"Someone get in here!" He shouted.

A handful of old Magi arrived in order, standing outside the door, "What may I do for you, my Lord?"

"What has the Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect been up to lately? I need to know everything about them, and I mean everything!" Alric looked gloomy.

"Yes sir!" the Magi echoed, looking at Alric as if he were their God.

A rank 3 Magus was the top of the pack in the south coast. After the third Magus War, the status of rank 3 Magi had even increased by a huge amount given how many had perished in it. Alric himself actually oversaw the entirety of Teljose City, and was one of the best light Magi.

Naturally, his orders spread out like wildfire. It took no time at all for everything about the Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect to cover his desk.

“That’s all?” he asked, flipping through indifferently.

“Whatever we could find is in here, my Lord. The recent batch of sect members who came here seem to be hunting someone down instead of collecting souls.”

“Mm, I saw the report. For a rank 2 Magus to be leading the team, it seems like those they’re after are a force to be reckoned with...” Alric sat back down once again, and rubbed his forehead. Bothered by the look of hesitation on the aged Magus’ face, he asked, “Is there anything else you’re hiding from me?”

“I wouldn’t dare, my Lord!” Now intimidated, the Magus immediately knelt before him and sought forgiveness, “It’s just that there are a few rumours related to the Magi we caught. However, we wouldn’t dare come to any sort of conclusion before verifying them...”

“Speak!” Alric’s face grew gloomy.

“Of course,” The old Magus shot Alric a look, and started breaking out in a cold sweat, “The rumours state that the Magus who’s being hunted down by the sect members is a member of Leylin Farlier’s family.”

All the Magi present tensed their bodies the moment the name was mentioned. That name was an absolute taboo to Alric. His only son had died at Leylin's hands!

When he'd chased after him, he'd instead been used by Leylin who escaped with a teleportation spell formation. Furthermore, he barely escaped the rank 2 Magus' trap, something that had caused him immense humiliation.

Boom! A terrifying energy ripple spread out, and all the objects in the room began to shake.

"A surviving member of Farlier's family?" Alric's voice held a tinge of bitterness. In his hatred towards Leylin, Alric had once disregarded the unspoken rules of the south coast and brazenly sent troops to exterminate Leylin's family clan. During that operation, the entire Farlier Family seemed to have been uprooted. Only a few specific bloodlines seemed to have received the protection of some mysterious characters.

"My- My Lord, I can't be too sure of this as well, but the only thing I know is that they have already infiltrated our city," the old man stuttered out. Despite being a Magus himself, he was only rank 1 while Alric was rank 3, the peak of the south coast's Magi. The disparity between them was simply too huge.

"Go look for them now!" Alric commanded, and all the Magi rushed out of the room while cursing at their target.

“Leylin...” Alric’s gritting teeth echoed throughout the room after all the Magi had left.

---

“Please come back, my Lord.” An elderly man accompanied Leylin to the entrance of his shop, maintaining a half-bow until Leylin’s back disappeared from his sight.

He ran a store that specialised in the sale of information and data. He’d met hardly any customers who were as straightforward as Leylin was in his store. Moreover, the energy coming from Leylin’s body had stifled him slightly.

‘Things seem to be the same but the people have indeed changed!’ Leylin sighed in thought as he wandered the streets.

The information he’d acquired on the airship only formed part of the picture, barely scraping the surface. After they touched down in the city, he obtained a lot more detailed information through the information broker he’d found from the tavern.

First was the Abyssal Bone Forest Academy. Leylin’s alma mater still seemed the same as it was before, the only difference was the Dean of the academy had changed. Siley was nowhere to be found, but other than that there were no anomalies.

And even though the Four Seasons Garden greatly suffered after their encounter with Leylin, they’d slowly recovered due to their strong foundation.



Other than stronger groups like the Four Seasons Garden, many names which Leylin was once familiar with had all vanished into the annals of history.

Leylin had even gone to the extent of intentionally revealing the names of his past friends like George and company, but that got him nothing. After all, when Leylin left he was only an acolyte, it was impossible to leave footprints. Or maybe the events in the Eternal River pocket dimension had discouraged all of them so greatly that they chose to hide themselves from the world.

On the other hand, it was Leylin himself who caused trouble between the dark and light Magi. Even now, his work was being described in detail and with much cursing.

Furthermore, many Magi and even the Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect had put a bounty on Leylin's head. Learning that it hadn't been taken down till date, he was left speechless.

"Sir, I really am capable. I know some things about alchemy and potioneering, and I know how to..." A female Magus was dragged violently out of a store, the owner a Magus as well. Many of the onlookers took a step back, not interfering. The owner himself was actually a semi-converted Magus, a faint halo of elemental particles surrounded him.

"Sir! My Lord! Please give me a chance, I really need this job—" The female Magus grabbed onto the hem of her skirt, pleading with urgency and yearning. Still, she was rejected mercilessly.

“Don’t make me repeat the same thing twice!” A tremendous amount of power started to bleed from the owner’s body and Darlie started moving back uncontrollably.

A powerful supporting force surfaced suddenly and helped Darlie to her feet. “Thank you! Oh? Aren’t you the Mister from...”

“Count yourself lucky!” The store owner had obvious reservations about Leylin and stomped back into his shop while shaking his head.

“Are you alright?” Leylin looked at Darlie, thinking this situation was a little ridiculous. Judging from Darlie’s current state, she was evidently in a poor predicament. “Want to go for a drink?”

# Chapter 672 - Travelling Together And Appearance

---

“I was too naive. No matter how lax the professor from the Ennea Ivory Ring Tower could be in his requirements, a novice Magus like me isn’t competent enough...”

Leylin and Darlie sat facing each other in a fruit juice shop. Leylin was watching the passersby outside the French window as he listened to Darlie narrate her experiences after they parted ways.

Darlie was a talented Magus who had perseverance. She had a fault, however, in her youth.

Knowledge was the foundation of a Magus’ power. She was extraordinary for advancing to become a Magus at her age, but compared to those old freaks who’d amassed knowledge over hundreds of years she was nothing.

Hence, she had completely failed recruitment into the Ennea Ivory Ring Tower, being rejected at the start itself.

Her other female companions had fared the same way, and after the setback from the huge difference between their ideals and reality, they had long since returned to their hometowns. Some had even given up completely. Only Darlie had not let up, persevering and staying in Teljose City.

Soon enough, however, she was faced with a serious issue— she had gone broke!

Official Magi might seem extremely wealthy, but those who had just advanced had used up all their resources and magic crystals while breaking through. They weren't particularly skilled in any area, and since they lacked magic crystals to purchase spell models and the like to grow in strength, it was an endless cycle. Magi were normally at their poorest after advancing, and the costs of Teljoce City were too much for someone like Darlie.

On top of that, she still needed to obtain more magic crystals in order to purchase things like spiritual force potions and spell models. Hence, after racking her brains, she had no choice but to swallow her pride and look for a job.

However, reality dealt her a ruthless blow. Darlie cared little for regular jobs, but she did not meet the requirements for jobs that needed official Magi. She had hit a wall many times already before bumping into Leylin today.

“It's been just a few days, but you've already had so many experiences...” Leylin had the urge to laugh, but he forced it down.

Since he'd advanced as a Warlock, he was always stronger than others of the same rank as gim. On top of that, the A.I. Chip was a cheat that allowed him to amass knowledge that did not lose out to those old freaks. He'd never experienced such things.

In actuality, Magi like Darlie were the norm in this world.

“Is there anything I can help with?” Leylin asked kindly. He had some magic crystals lying around, and it wasn’t like they were of much use to him. They were effectively rocks to him, and he obviously wouldn’t mind showing some generosity.

“It’s alright. I’ve taken on a mission to gather starlight grass, and the rewards aren’t half bad. I’ll be able to survive for a while...” Darlie said in rejection. She was a strong and prideful child, and obviously would not accept such charity.

“Starlight grass, huh...” Leylin checked with the A.I. Chip, “That ingredient is only produced in Ebole Town. Though it’s not far from Teljose and it’s easy to gather it, a wave of disciples from the Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect fled there recently, making it more dangerous...”

“No wonder...” Darlie covered her little mouth, “I was wondering why the task was so simple, yet the rewards were so generous. Damn it...”

Seeing her finding this difficult, Leylin could not help but laugh, “I need to go there anyway. Let’s go together...”

“Mister...” Darlie grew extremely emotional, tears forming at the corner of her eyes.

“I really have something to do there!” Leylin emphasised. With a few days of soul and bloodline hints being transmitted, the Farlier descendant had come here, and was about to reach Ebole Town as

well.

Leylin wasn't someone with too much time on his hands. If not for such a thing, he'd just give her some magic crystals. Why would he waste his precious time and accompany her?

“Many thanks!” Darlie bowed deeply, a red flush appearing on her cheeks and spreading downwards.

---

The wheels kept turning, producing creaking noises. The uneven surface of the road left the carriage constantly shaking.

Within the carriage, Darlie was watching Leylin's mysterious face that was covered with a black mask. She hesitated for a long time before she spoke, “Mi- Mister, my name is Darlie. May I know...”

As Leylin had kept his mask on all this while, Darlie had assumed that he was hiding his identity, which was why she had not asked for his name. Now, however, the two of them were going to Ebole Town together, and it seemed too lacking in manners if she did not inquire into this properly.

“Oh, I'm Leylin!” Leylin told the truth plainly. In his senses, the bloodline descendant was very close to the town.

However, the life aura on his body had been weakened to a maximum, and there was even an aura of death coming from him.

If Leylin didn't save him, it wasn't likely for him to make it back to Teljose City.

“Leylin...” Darlie repeated the name a few times, and her expression suddenly changed, “The name ‘Leylin’, it's the same as a Magus who's in our history textbooks!”

“Oh?” Leylin stroked his chin. The Third Magus War and the rise of the Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect were very serious issues for the Magi of the south coast, and every detail about them had been noted down.

Leylin was mentioned, obviously. After all, he'd been the person who somewhat sparked all these issues. With Darlie's own studiousness, she'd remembered it to this day.

“Hoho... I didn't expect Lord Leylin to have the same name as that Magus in history. How interesting! Heehee...” Darlie covered her mouth, shoulders shaking slightly.

Perhaps it was because she was not wary of Leylin at all, or because she was charmed by the dreamforce surrounding him. She hadn't even considered the possibility that Leylin was the same one from history.

“Oh? May I ask what the books say about him?” Leylin was rather curious of how the historians of the south coast evaluated him.

“Of course!” Darlie nodded, closing her eyes and seemed to recall content about him:

“Poison Sovereign King, Leylin Farlier of the Chernobyl Islands. A rank 2 Magus, and an important figure who caused the Third Magus War. Initially a student at the Abyssal Bone Forest Academy, he betrayed them and then fled to Four Seasons Garden. Countless battles allowed him to garner a reputation, with the most famous being the battle at the Eternal River Plains’ pocket dimension, as well as that at the Brambles Iron Door. Whereabouts currently unknown, he is wanted by both dark and light Magi. Evaluation: A rare Magus talent, seen only once in a thousand years in the south coast!”

It was as if she was reading the textbook itself, and the words she recited left Leylin laughing at himself.

“I never thought there would come a day that I’d enter a textbook!” Leylin touched the glossy and cold mask on his face, and couldn’t help but feel incredulous.

“What about your opinion of him?” Leylin asked her curiously.

“That Leylin?” Darlie’s eyes glazed over, as if a layer of fog had gone over them, “He’s a genius! There are rumours that he’s even a Potioneering Grandmaster, but he isn’t of high moral standing. I don’t like him!”

“Looks like I left behind a bad impression on the south coast!” Leylin could only shake his head, “Actually...”



“Actually? Oh, by the way Mister Leylin, why do you keep asking me questions about that fellow?” No matter how dim witted she was, she finally reacted.

“Oh, it’s nothing... just that we’ve reached Ebole Town!” Leylin opened the window on the carriage and nodded.

Starlight grass was a distinctive product found around Ebole Town. Irregular silver spots dotted its tender green leaves, sparkling with a charming light. It was hard to mistake it for something else.

Due to the threat of the Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect, which caused Ebole Town to lose all contact with Teljose City, the mission of gathering starlight grass now yielded very generous rewards.

“There are so few people in the town. I can’t even get people to buy from if I try...” Darlie felt helpless.

Since she knew how dangerous this place was, she was unwilling to stay longer. If she could purchase enough portions of starlight grass, she wouldn’t be at such a loss. However, the Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect’s bad reputation of going around collecting souls, not even leaving commoners, left the town practically empty. Many residents had left this area and fled, causing the town to become desolate. The Potioneers and those who gathered materials had disappeared.

“Ugh... looks like I’ll have to do it myself...”

Darlie lowered her head sadly, and then glanced at Leylin, who was beside her, “Sir Leylin, what are you here for?”

Leylin wore gorgeous clothing, just one of his gloves worth everything she was. Combined with his great bearing, he probably came from some ancient noble family. Why would a person like this find value in things like starlight grass?

“Me?” Leylin chuckled, “I’m waiting for someone!”

“Oh! You agreed to meet someone outside Ebole Town? If it’s convenient, could you tell me his name? I’ll look out for him,” she asked.

“Yes! He’s a younger generation member in my family. As for his name...” Leylin scratched his head. He had used the power of his bloodline to guide the descendant from the Farlier Family over. How was he to know the child’s name?

“Oh, there’s no need for that. He’s arrived.” Leylin’s eyebrows raised up, and he walked out. Darlie followed closely behind, her eyes showing her curiosity.

The scene of a chase appeared quickly in front of Darlie as she followed him out of town...

# Chapter 673 - Alric

---

“That’s...” Darlie watched the streaks of light that were pursuing someone vigorously, and felt herself getting tense. In front of her were Magi from the Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect.

They wore loose blood-red robes emblazoned with an inverted silver cross on the back. A white skull was at the heart of the cross, its eyes filled with an abyssal darkness. It seemed to be smirking at her.

This was the standard attire of the disciples of the Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect. She could feel the traces of elemental conversion from all of these Magi, ‘They’re at least semi-converted Magi. And that leader, he’s... he’s...’

Practically the very moment she turned her attention to him, the leader suddenly turned to face her, the terrifying silver light from his eyes paralysing her, “A– a rank 2 Magus! Someone who’s materialised their spiritual force?”

When Darlie felt her knees go weak and was about to fall, her shoulders suddenly moved and her body was supported by a powerful force. Immediately after, Leylin’s gentle words entered her ears, “Don’t worry, it’s fine.”

His voice seemed to be infectious, and she managed to recover from her crippling fear.

“Thank you!” Darlie chanced a glance at Leylin, and felt

immediately at ease.

From her point of view, with someone as powerful as Leylin whose strength could not be fathomed beside her, she could escape successfully, even from the Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect.

Mind calm, she now was able to focus on other things. These sect disciples were chasing a young man with sky-blue eyes and brown hair. The elemental particles surrounding him were near substantial, and helped him move faster and resist the attacks.

‘Peak rank 1, with elemental conversion at least 75%? Who is he? Why is he being pursued by the Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect?’ Darlie’s eyes flashed with puzzlement.

“You can’t escape!” the rank 2 Magus yelled in a low voice, and silver spiritual particles converged to form an incredibly fine silver whip that was tens of metres long. With an elegant flick of his wrist, the long silver whip snapped straight, pushing towards the back of the fleeing Magus.

“Fallen Star Pendant!” With the Magus’ yell, a layer of dark-red light formed a faint armour around his body.

Thwack! Boom!\* A dull thud was heard from his back, and the dark red armour shattered. The young Magus flushed red.

Because of that, the silver whip halted its movements. It allowed the young Magus to dart towards the entrance of Ebole Town, the

same place Leylin and Darlie were heading for.

“Don’t expect a mere middle-grade magic artifact to be able to save you!” Seeing his opponent escape the blow that should’ve taken care of him in one shot, the rank 2 Magus’ expression grew dark. Phantom skeletons twisted as they brought darkness and despair to the surroundings.

Darlie could see practically every pore on the escaping Magus’ face, as well as the crazed disciples whose eyes were glinting with bloodlust. She couldn’t help but pull at Leylin’s sleeve, “Mister! My Lord! Let’s go!”

“Go? Why should we?” Leylin chuckled indifferently. He had merely summoned the male with his soul and bloodline, and not saved him personally. This was to gauge his strength and luck. Seeing this scene, he concluded that the little guy’s strength was passable and that he had rather good luck, something that caused him to nod inwardly.

The young Magus who was currently fleeing was naturally the Farlier Family descendant who Leylin had sensed. He was likely related to a brother or sister of Leylin’s, and he could see similarities to his father and even himself in the young man’s features.

‘Damien has already met with them? He’s passed my Fallen Star Pendant over too...’ Leylin touched his chin. The magic artifact that emitted the dark red armour was the intricate cross pendant on the youth’s neck. It even had some broken gems on it. This was the middle-grade magic artifact that Leylin had created in the

south coast, the Fallen Star Pendant.

Middle-grade magic artifacts had little effect past rank 1, which was why he'd handed it over to Damien in the hope that he would hand it over to the outstanding descendants of the Farlier Family. It looked like Damien had completed his task well.

"Mister Leylin... is he the person you're waiting for?" Darlie pointed at the fleeing Magus, something suddenly hitting her, "He's a member of your family, so you're especially here to save him?"

"Something like that!" Leylin's eyebrows raised, and he then glanced up towards the sky, a ruminating smile on his lips, "It's quite lively today!"

"You can't escape. When we of the Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect want to kill someone, we've never fail!" The distorted skeletal images soared out with what sounded like a prophecy from the rank 2 Magus, turning into a few bone necklaces that instantly locked around the young Magus' ankles.

Thud! The Magus lost his balance and fell, seeming very pitiful as blood-laden bandages were revealed on his chest. Evidently, this was a wound from his time being chased.

"Weren't you running? Go on, run some more." The rank 2 Magus steeled his expression as he approached the fleeing Magus, watching him from above.

“I said that there’s never been a Magus who’s escaped on our kill list. Consider yourself lucky, our sect master will meet you personally and extract your soul, boiling it in fire for a hundred years...”

“Just... Kill me!” The Magus who had fallen turned over with difficulty, spitting out the words with no hope in his eyes.

The long hunt as well as being unable to join any large organisations had already left him weary to the bone, “I’m sorry, Grandpa Damien. I couldn’t help you in your vengeance...”

“Lock him up properly. Be careful,” the rank 2 Magus instructed the disciples behind him. He then scanned Leylin and Darlie who were at the entrance of Ebole Town.

The aura Darlie emanated showed that she was a newbie who had recently advanced. With Leylin concealing his abilities quite well, he was treated like small fry.

“Kill them all and extract the souls of the residents in the town. We finally managed to get out, so it’ll be good to bring something back...” The leader commanded, and the sect disciples answered loudly. Crimson appeared in their eyes as they drew closer to the two with malicious intent, as if beasts that had found their prey.

“Mi- Mister Leylin! You’re very powerful and can defeat them quickly, right?” Darlie took multiple steps backwards. All of those disciples were semi-converted, and could suppress her easily.

“There’s no hurry. There’s someone else yet to arrive.” Leylin replied without enthusiasm.

“There’s someone else yet to arrive? What does that mean?” Her little face had turned deathly pale.

“Keke, this female Magus has pretty good meat. How tender!” A disciple pulled at his nose, displaying an evil grin.

“You can do whatever you want with the body, but you have to extract her complete soul. The soul of an official Magus isn’t too bad, and you can even exchange it for points...” a dried-up old man him while snickering.

“I...” Tears appeared in the corner of her eyes. She was a traditional light Magus, and in Four Seasons Garden the most danger she had ever met was some accidents while taking part in some outdoor experiments. However, there had been mentors around and she had always survived, shocked but safe. She had never met with a situation like what was happening now.

“Don’t come over!” Darlie wailed, like the last cries of a feeble lamb. It only stimulated the appetite of the ravenous wolves in front of her.

“Rest in peace.” Just as the disciples were about to make their move and Darlie was in despair, the air seemed to freeze. Piercing sounds echoed out from explosions in Teljose City, and a terrifying gust parted the clouds themselves.



A white light in the horizon grew increasingly dazzling, finally forming a faint world of holy light. The unprecedented terrifying pressure caused Darlie to go limp and fall, feeling suffocated.

The disciples surrounding her all collapsed, and the rank 2 Magus' expression changed. Watching the white world of light, he turned grim, "Holy Light Domain! A rank 3 Magus!"

A Magus appeared out of nowhere in the hazy domain, holy light forming an illusory scene behind him.

"Lord Alric of Teljose City! Are you here to break the balance in the south coast?" The Magus yelled, though everyone could hear that he was only putting on a brave front.

This was a rank 3 Magus, a peak existence in the south coast! Alric's strength was well-known even among rank 3 Magi, and he was in charge of Teljose City which was a large base of the light Magi. He was in the top stratum of light Magi.

Someone like that could kill a mere rank Magus like him easily, especially with how tense the relationship between their opposing factions was.

Alric coldly answered the rank 2 Magus' question with a word. "Scram!"

"You-!" The rank 2 Magus flushed red and finally gritted his teeth, "Take him. We'll be off!"

“You can go, but you’ll have to leave him behind,” Alric pointed at the Magus on the ground.

# Chapter 674 - Recognition And Ease

---

“No, he’s my assignment!” The rank 2 Magus of the Spirit Slaying Sect rejected immediately. Apprehending this Magus was the very reason he’d even come here.

“You’ve gotten this wrong. I’m not here to discuss terms with you, this is an order! Since you wish to die, let me help you!” Alric couldn’t be bothered to listen to reason, and he instead made his move. A violent, aggressive power crushed down on them, forming a domain of holy light.

Rumble! The forcefield of a rank 3 Magus left no way out for any Magi below that rank. The disciples of the Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect melted down in the holy light, their blood and flesh just dissipating away. Piercing screams sounded out.

“Lord Gargamel won’t let you off!” The silver spiritual force surrounding the rank 2 Magus flashed, abruptly forming a cloud of black fog as he planned to flee into the distance.

“What a bunch of noisy flies! Let Gargamel look for me.” Alric’s brows furrowed as his right hand began to grab towards the black fog. Boundless holy light converged to form a giant blazing claw of platinum. The cries of the rank 2 Magus sounded out as well.

With the flames burning it up, the black gas seeped out from the gaps between the fingers. Silver spiritual force light gradually dimmed, and eventually was extinguished completely.

In mere seconds, that arrogant sect disciple who left Darlie with no way out was annihilated.

The holy light vanished, turning into a gold-trimmed scholar's cloak that appeared on Alric's back.

Meanwhile, Darlie was completely frozen on the ground. Only after some time did she manage to yell out, "It's Alric, Lord Alric! A rank 3 Magus!"

For the light Magi, Alric was synonymous with light and justice. His sort of strength and his terrifying influence were the life goals of all light Magi.

"You're a descendant of the Farlier family?" Alric did not bother with Darlie, instead slowly descending as he looked at the Magus on the ground like he was looking at a corpse. His voice held the chill of millennia of winter, and would cause anyone to shiver in fright.

"Hehe... another one!" The Magus could not be bothered to move, or rather he knew that there was no hope of escape in front of a rank 3 Magus.

"You're very unlucky." Alric's eyes were like two balls of flames, "If you were caught by the people from the Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect, they'd at most torture your soul for a century. I'll instead torture your soul to death, extracting all your blood to prepare bloodline sensing magic so the Farlier bloodline will be destroyed completely..."

It was as if he was narrating something that happened every day. The cruel words laced with bloodlust left Darlie shuddering, ‘What’s going on? Wasn’t that young Magus being chased down by the Spirit Slaying Sect? How has he offended Lord Alric too?’ She felt giddy with confusion.

“Wait, the Farlier family? I seem to have read something about it... In the battle at the Brambles Iron Door before the third great war, Alric’s sole son Jojane died at the hand of Leylin Farlier. Because of the modifications he’d made to himself before, Lord Alric had lost the ability to reproduce further, and this turned into a blood feud...” As a top scorer, Darlie was familiar with this piece of history as well.

However, the consequences of her having the time to even think of this resulted in Alric fixing his attention on her, eyes full of a chilliness. She dropped to her knees, “My– My apologies, Lord Alric. I didn’t mean to...”

“Ha... haha!” The Magus on the ground began to laugh maniacally, “Alric, you’ll never have a kid even till your death. It serves you right to have no blood kin!”

“Damn it, damn it, damn it! You must all die!” With salt sprinkled on his wounds, Alric’s facial muscles began to contort as flames began to emerge from around his body.

“Die!” Light surged forth from his body, the milky white rays of death able to melt flesh and cause Magi to die an excruciatingly

painful death.

Clap! Clap! Clap! Applause sounded from within the light, interrupting Alric's attack. He could not help but shift his attention.

It was only then that he realised there was someone standing at the side, wearing a luxurious black scholar's robe and a mask on his face. He had no aura undulations, which was why Alric had overlooked this man's existence before.

This realisation caused his pupils to shrink, and suddenly left him with a bad premonition. A Magus that could conceal his aura so well would definitely be someone difficult to deal with.

"Who are you?" Alric glared at Leylin coldly, finding the face familiar the more he gazed upon it. The half of the face that could be seen seemed extremely familiar, yet there seemed to be a fog in his mind that made it hard for him to remember the name.

"Who am I? Alric, you should know best!" Leylin chuckled, and turned to encourage Darlie, "You explained it well!"

"That voice..." Alric's brows were furrowed and the fog of confusion dissipated slowly. He had the feeling he was about to find the name he was looking for, hidden in the depths in his mind.

All of a sudden, Alric's body trembled and he was instantly wide

awake. Immediately after, Leylin's face lined up with the one in his memories, causing him to bellow hysterically, "You're... Leylin Farlier!!"

"Leylin Farlier?!" Two cries of alarm were heard from the sides, and the Magus on the ground's eyes were filled with emotion as he stared at Leylin's figure.

Darlie was completely horrified, 'He- He's the legendary Toxic Sovereign King? The rank 2 existence who worked behind the scenes and caused the Third Magus War? He's Leylin Farlier?'

Her hands covered her mouth, and her brain halted.

'Right... He never denied he was that Leylin. I was the one who wishfully treated him as someone with the same name...' Scenes of her time with Leylin flashed in her mind, causing Darlie's face to turn as red as an apple.

'He-He's very different from the legends!' Darlie watched his back, eyes showing her worry. 'Alric is a rank 3 Warlock! Can Mister Leylin...'

"Hah... hah... you're Leylin Farlier. That voice and that face... Even if it's half covered I won't be wrong." Alric huffed, his body twitching like he was an epileptic. He was so excited that he was practically frothing at the mouth.

"You finally appeared. Great, I can finally enact my vengeance!"

He roared in a low voice, terrifying energy undulations exploding forth from his body that seemed to touch upon the Crystal Phase.

“Indeed, it’s sensible that hatred can drive one’s improvement. Alric, you’ve improved so much from before.” Though Alric’s improvement surprised Leylin slightly, those under Morning Star were still like ants to him. It was no big deal.

The terrifying forcefield of a rank 3 Magus caused the Magus and Darlie to lie on the ground like toads. The young Magus couldn’t help but yell towards Leylin, “My Lord, be careful!”

“Any amount of cautiousness is useless! The hatred from Jojane’s death, as well as the torture of the long wait... It can only be purged by all the blood in your body!” Alric roared, and holy light dazzled as it formed a gigantic cage ringed with pillars of light.

He had learnt his lesson from chasing Leylin down before. He knew that Leylin was powerful, and what’s more, quick. With just a slight misstep, Leylin could flee. In order to prevent such a disaster from happening again, he had to limit his opponent’s range.

“Die!” Having set everything up, Alric made his move. Boiling heatwaves converged in his hand, the light forming a gigantic statue of a goddess, her two wings spread to form a bow. A holy aura emanated from the bow that had formed.

A ray of light condensed to form the bowstring, and a terrifying energy undulation was released as Alric pulled back on it. Platinum



flames converged, rushing forth from his fingertips to form a blazing arrow.

An explosive screech could be heard as the arrow was launched, leaving behind a glimmering white trail in the air.

“You’re focussing on long-ranged attacks? Looks like the lesson I taught you was deeply engraved in your mind!” Leylin shook his head and extended a finger, tapping on the flaming arrow.

This slight motion caused Alric’s expression to go dark, and the Magus and Darlie both were filled with concern.

“Unfortunately... Just this is far from enough” The flaming arrow struck Leylin’s finger, producing a crisp sound.

Immediately after, Alric’s expression quickly changed. The flaming arrow had fallen down, split in two. It charred the surrounding land before the flames went out.

“If that’s all you have, you’re too disappointing.” Leylin smiled at Alric, who in turn staggered back. It was only then that he realised that Leylin was no longer the rank 2 Magus who needed to keep fleeing from him.

His opponent was considered the greatest genius the south coast had produced in a thousand years. With hundreds of years having passed, what level of strength had he reached?

“What– What rank are you at now?” Alric slowly stepped backwards, two snow-white wings of light extending at his back. “That question isn’t important. You just need to die obediently...”

Leylin spoke without a care. Coupled with how he was dressed, he seemed very much like the stereotype of a huge rebel.

# Chapter 675 - Defeat And Curse

---

At this moment, the young Magus that had collapsed to the ground immediately shouted out, “Lord Ancestor, you can’t let him off so easily! He attacked our Farlier family and even indirectly caused Grandpa Damien’s death!”

“Oh?!” Leylin furrowed his brows. Black flames blazed as he instantly moved to the youth’s side. With just a scan, he understood the youth’s body like the back of his own hand. “Did the Spirit Slaying Sect give you that wound on your chest?”

“Yes. I got hit by the attack of a soul plague from the sect disciples, and was also poisoned by a Malaria Spider!” The youth looked defeated, but then had an excited flush on his face.

“A small issue.” Leylin’s finger moved, and the bandages around the youth’s chest automatically fell off to reveal twisted muscles and horrifying wounds.

“Bear with it for a bit.” Leylin dripped a crimson potion onto the youth’s injuries. White gas steamed from the wounds, causing the youth to cry out in pain involuntarily. Shortly after, black gas streamed out of the wound and the flesh began to mend itself rapidly. The wounds were healing.

“WHAT?” Darlie shouted from not far away, “That’s even faster than a rank 3 healer! Is this an ancient healing potion from legends?”

Leylin had no wish to answer Darlie's question. Instead, he noticed Alric beginning to make a move. "Tch, so stubborn."

Rumble! Countless holy javelins made of platinum flames appeared around him, shooting towards Leylin like thousands of arrows being launched at the same time. Alric himself revealed a large pair of wings as he took to the skies.

"I said, stay there quietly. Did you not understand the first time?" Leylin's expression darkened, and an aura several times more terrifying and powerful than Alric's descended. Formless energy rippled, causing those javelins to explode in the air and dissipate into motes of light.

Seeing Leylin take care of his attack, Alric made a strange sound from mid-air, spreading his wings and escaping as far as he could go.

"Get down here!" Leylin's right hand pulled downwards, and Alric gave a blood-curdling cry from within the streak of light. He fell down, the two wings on his back being torn off by a formless force. Some flesh and blood remained at the end, revealing long gashes on his back from which blood spurted forth.

The cage with pillars of light that sealed off the region had, with a sound as if it could not hold on for longer, exploded bit by bit.

"..." His wound completely healed, the youth now stood up and watched the scene silently. He was surprised, yes, but the events that had played out so far had far exceeded what he could take. He

was now numb to everything.

When he'd been fleeing from the sect disciples, a voice in his mind urged him to change course, veering towards Teljose City. Before the Spirit Slaying Sect disciples who were after him could attack him, Alric appeared. Faced against the sect disciple and a rank 3 Magus who both had grudges against him, the youth would rather be caught by the sect than even see Alric's face.

However, things were far from over. Just when he thought everything was done for, an even more bizarre thing had happened. Leylin, the genius from his Farlier Family who'd been missing for centuries, had suddenly reappeared. On top of that, he dominated and defeated Alric the moment he showed himself!

The youth watched Alric lying on the ground like a dead dog, his expression stiff. He had a strong suspicion that this could be a mere clone, or perhaps a fraud. Since when was a rank 3 Magus, the best of the south coast, so weak?

'Or is it that he isn't weak, but the Lord Ancestor is just that powerful?' The youth watched Leylin's masked face, his eyes full of admiration. He was fully privy to Alric's prowess. Under the forcefield the rank 3 Magus had shown off, he would have been killed like an ant...

However, Leylin had defeated his opponent with a mere wave of the arm. How large was the disparity between them?

"Your wounds are all healed up. By the way, what's your name?"

Leylin's face held some rare gentleness as he faced this descendant.

“My– My name is Krupp, I'm Audi's descendant...” Krupp knew Leylin had no interest in his family tree, and directly mentioned the person in Leylin's generation.

“Audi? Did this happen after I left?” Leylin stroked his chin.

“Yes, he's your brother, born two years after you left...” Krupp carefully watched Leylin's expression, and then pointed at Alric, “Lord Ancestor, he once sent people to attack our Farlier family and almost caused us to be completely uprooted from the Chernobyl Islands. Only a few of us escaped under Grandpa Damien's protection. You must take revenge for us!”

Having said all this, Krupp clenched his fists tightly, his eyes brimming with tears.

“Don't worry,” Leylin nodded. After hearing news that the Farlier family had almost been destroyed, he strangely felt no anger. It was as if he was hearing someone else's story; even he was surprised at his reaction.

Leylin immediately thought of the reason for this. He was someone who'd come from another world, and wasn't the original Leylin who was just a playboy. Because he had the A.I. Chip and was a grandmaster in the field of souls, issues with things like soul fragments that were retained from the original soul causing melodrama wouldn't be an issue for him.

The old Leylin's soul had long since been annihilated, with not a trace left behind. He would not be able to affect Fang Ming the slightest. Hence, after hearing that the Farlier family had almost been wiped out, he only nodded slightly in acknowledgement.

Emotions and the responsibility towards one's bloodline were different, however. Leylin believed he still had some work to do in that regard.

Krupp and Darlie felt the temperature of their surroundings lower in an instant. A slight explosion could be heard from Alric's body, and it seemed like he was strangled at his throat by a formless strength. He now hung before Leylin.

"My..." Alric tried to sound from his throat. With a blink of Leylin's eyes, his face had flushed red. He squirmed as the blood drained from his face; it turned an ashen grey.

In that short moment, Leylin had destroyed Alric's spiritual force. He was now just slightly stronger than a regular human.

"You've really got some guts. To dare go against the unwritten rules of the south coast and take revenge on my family..." Leylin's hand grabbed at the void, and crackling sounds were heard from Alric's body. The bones automatically broke apart inch by inch, but Alric was still awake and had to deal with the suffering alone. Soon enough, blood spurted from his mouth, and some of his teeth were broken.

"I believe there's a need to set a precedent, so that the other Magi

will be aware.” A thin crimson thread was extracted from his body and hovered in front of Leylin.

“Let’s see!” A trace of blood-red light could be seen in Leylin’s eyes as countless translucent mirrors opened up before him, revealing vague figures within.

“NOO...” Alric immediately grew agitated upon seeing them, his body trembling unceasingly as his eyes pleaded with Leylin.

However, Leylin himself cared nothing for this, “Mm, you don’t have any direct descendants yourself, but there are a lot of other branches. Siblings?”

Alric did not answer, his tongue had long since been bitten off. If not for Leylin intentionally keeping him alive, he would have died long ago. Alric would much rather die early than face what was to come.

“You know my character. I rarely use curses or other spells in that vein. It’s not because I’m unfamiliar with them, but because they’re troublesome; not only is the preparatory work tedious, there’s also a backlash,” Leylin continued on as if he were chatting with a friend, “But things are different here. The backlash from some rank 1 and 2 Magi, and even regular humans, means nothing to me...”

As he spoke, leylin produced a large amount of materials from his spatial pouch, carving strange altar-like runes on the ground.



“Trace back the path of the bloodline to all branches...” Terrifying curses rolled off Leylin’s tongue in a strange accent, “Ye of his blood, shall become the source of the curse!” After a few ceremonies, Leylin extracted some blood with a dagger and threw it onto the altar under Alric’s look of despair.

“AAAAHH...” With sounds of anguish being transmitted from the altar, a faint distorted face with empty eyes wailed as it pounced into the air.

“Go!” Leylin snapped his fingers.

Bzzt bzzt... Formless ripples spread, and immediately after a blond Magus’ expression changed in one of the round mirrors, green warts appearing all over his body. They then exploded, spurting out corrosive liquid that caused him to become a pile of white bones amidst his howls.

Black fog occupied the entirety of a castle elsewhere, and broken limbs were thrown out of it every once in a while.

“Noooo...” Alric lowered his head. All that remained in his dead eyes was boundless hatred.

“Did you think that was all?” Leylin could not help but laugh as he saw Alric in this state.

“Soul extraction!” A translucent figure was pulled out from Alric’s forehead.

# Chapter 676 - Fallen Star: Magic Equipment

---

“A.I. Chip, organise Alric’s memories, separate the information I require.”

[Beep, mission established. Beginning analysis. Extracting data from target.]

As a Grandmaster in the field of soul research who possessed the help of the A.I. Chip, Leylin found what he needed in mere seconds.

Alric’s body died once his soul was pulled out. Now translucent, he’d regained the ability to speak. Information was extracted from his soul as he let out cries of misery. Having memories extracted from your soul wasn’t exactly pleasant. “AAAHH... What are you doing? I won’t let you off! I curse you and I curse all that is yours!”

“Oh, so you have a brother who you’re not on good terms with. It’s a bit of a pity that he died under the curse as well,” Leylin said as great amounts of data streaked past him, “Whatever. If he’s dead he’s dead. Did you think it would just end like this?”

“Void Assassin!” A translucent figure appeared instantly with a flutter of his sleeve. These servants that he’d gained from the ruins of Scarlet Crescent each had a strength of up to rank 3, and with their ability to travel through the void even Morning Stars had to guard carefully against them. They were practically invincible in the south coast.

“Here’s the information. Kill all his friends, acolytes, and anyone else he treasures.” With a stretch of his arm and a tap, Alric’s soul was sealed into the Void Assassin’s head, “Make sure he watches everything. Once you’re done, sink into the lava underground and have his soul roast for eternity...”

“Understood.” A robotic voice sounded from the Void Assassin.

Immediately after, its body disappeared into the void, leaving behind Alric’s despairing cries that seemed to echo in this land.

“Are you satisfied with how I handled this?” Leylin turned to look at Krupp.

“Yes, very satisfied! No matter what Patriarch does, you’re the most correct!” With Leylin’s eyes on him, Krupp stiffened in his nervousness.

At the thought of what his ancestor had done, Krupp couldn’t help but break out in a cold sweat. This was someone who already knew of the darkness that lay in the Magus World!

‘Using a method to extinguish one’s bloodline and not even letting off their friends or acolytes...’ Krupp secretly wiped off the perspiration, ‘Patriarch is no saint...’

Having taken care of Alric, Leylin glanced into the horizon and beckoned to Krupp, “Let’s go! A few worms will come and disturb

us if we don't leave quickly.”

But before they got onto the carriage, a thought flashed through Leylin's mind. He looked at Darlie, ‘It's my fault that she got involved. Since she came with me, I should at least bring her to the next city...’

Leylin pointed at Darlie, but the female Magus was in a state of complete shock. The roaring skeletal horse was blazing with black flames; it seemed like a demon from a nightmare, it's hooves leaving behind flaming marks.

The large carriage sped down the road like a black whirlwind. Krupp sat inside with some reservation, occasionally sneaking glances at Leylin's black leather boots. Darlie was still frozen, hiding in the corner and trembling with her arms wrapped around herself.

The recent events had dealt a huge blow to this female Magus. In reality, if not for Leylin intentionally protecting her, she and Krupp wouldn't have been able to live past the moment Alric burst out. However, she didn't believe that her survival was some stroke of fortune.

The fall of a rank 3 Magus, and the curse that accompanied it, made it easy for her to imagine what kind of chaos was going to arise in the south coast. And as the witness, she was in a bad situation. Though the light Magi revered order, they were the first in line to trample over their own rules for the sake of benefits.

Darlie shut her eyes, and could already imagine a large number of high-ranked Magi cutting open her skull and extracting parts of her brain.

Though the dark Magi were more famous for it, Darlie knew very well that many light Magi were no inferior at the skill of extracting memories. They could probably clone all her thoughts from her childhood with not a single error.

As for what would happen to her? That was something no Magi would ever care about. Sacrificing herself for the big picture and for all light Magi was something that she should feel honoured to do. They'd expect her to serve herself up voluntarily.

Darlie only realised how helpless she was under such immense pressure. While she'd always been prideful of the order and glory of the light Magi, all she wished for now was their destruction.

In matters of life and death, everything could be renounced.

'But as long as this lord is around...' Darlie peeked up and saw the figure that had caused her immense fear. That stern gaze that shot out from behind the mask seemed to pierce her body, suffocating her.

She quickly lowered her head respectfully, her breathing becoming rough, "Starting with Alric's fall, the return of my Lord will bring about great changes in the south coast..."

Leylin knew what this female Magus was thinking of immediately, but he couldn't be bothered with it. To him, she was but a stranger he'd picked up somewhere and embroiled in this because of a coincidence. Even if he wasn't with her, having taken on the task of gathering starlight grass she would've come to Ebole Town anyway. Without his protection, she would probably be in even worse a condition by now. Thus, he believed she owed him a favour.

That last thought was because they'd travelled together and grown slightly more familiar with each other. Reaching a rest point and then tossing her away was a very simple alternative, however based on Krupp's expression this might be a variable that would change things. Leylin chuckled at that thought.

Leylin suddenly spoke. "Krupp, give me the Fallen Star Pendant around your neck."

"Oh, of course, Patriarch!" Krupp deferentially took the pendant down and passed it to Leylin with both hands.

Light flickered from the broken gems on the dark red cross' surface. The slight weight in his hands left Leylin nostalgic.

"Grandpa Damien gave it to, me and he even told me..." Krupp watched Leylin hesitantly.

Leylin nodded in acknowledgement, "Yes, this is a magic artifact I created. Damien was under my orders to protect the Farlier Family in the Chernobyl Islands." He observed the creation in his

hands. With his current insight, he naturally noticed the defects in his original craftsmanship, and the immaturity when he'd made it.

“Though the materials in this Fallen Star Pendant aren't all that great, it isn't as if there's no room for improvement...” Crimson light wrapped around the cross in tandem with Leylin's words, causing it to float into the air and emit powerful energy waves that shocked Krupp and Darlie.

“This– This is...” Darlie looked stunned, “He's working without any tools? Only Grandmaster Alchemists from legend can do something like this...” The red glow expanded unceasingly, gradually forming a beautiful flaming daffodil that slowly bloomed within the carriage.

When the last petal withered, the pendant suspended in the air now looked different. It was more slender before, its dark red surface more pure. Many fine black lines were on it, making it seem like the back of a python.

“I've re-smelted the artifact, and added a few functions. On top of that, I've restricted its use to those with the Farlier bloodline...” Leylin said lightly, and then Fallen Star Pendant fell into Krupp's hands.

‘He re-smelted a magic artifact so quickly, and upgraded it to become a high-ranked magic artifact!’ Still hiding in the corner, Darlie's eyes were now shining. Only rank 2 or 3 Magi were qualified to possess things like high-grade magic artifacts in the south coast.

For low-ranked Magi like her, just taking a glance at a treasure of this grade was like a dream come true.

The person who was across her, however, had refined one without so much as a change in expression, and gifted it away as if it was nothing.

‘Perhaps... my hopes for the future will all rely on this person...’ Darlie made up her mind, vigorous flames bursting forth in her heart.

“Many thanks, Patriarch!” Krupp took the pendant, pleasantly surprised. This magic artifact had always been very useful, and it was an unexpected surprise for it to be upgraded to become a high-ranked one.

However, after his spiritual force made contact with the pendant, his eyes grew as round as saucers. It was as if he’d been struck by lightning.

“What? Is anything the matter?” Leylin found this descendant rather funny.

“Magic– A piece of magic equipment! The Fallen Star Pendant!” Krupp spoke of the grade of the item, “Patriarch, you upgraded it to magic equipment?”

It was already a huge surprise for the Fallen Star Pendant to be



upgraded to a high-grade magic artifact, but the fact that it had become the legendary magic equipment was shocking.

This was magic equipment! It was of a level even greater than magic artifacts, and regular rank 3 Magi weren't even qualified to have them! These were the trump cards of the largest organisations! However, this ancestor of his had casually managed to refine a middle-grade magic artifact into one...

Krupp was rendered speechless...

# Chapter 677 - Nonou

---

“Mm. Because of the materials used to make the Fallen Star Pendant, it can at best only become a piece of low-grade magic equipment.”

Although Leylin found this quite a pity, Krupp instead grew so excited he was about to froth at the mouth.

On the other hand, Darlie grew even more emotional. Seeing that the Fallen Star Pendant had really been upgraded to become a low-grade magic equipment piece, she was at first frozen before she pounced at Leylin’s feet. “Revered Lord Farlier, please take me in as your disciple... No, how could I qualify to be the disciple of such a great Magus? Please give me any chance regardless of what it is. Whether as a maid, a servant, or even a guinea pig, just give me a chance to learn from you!”

“You– You’re serious?” Leylin watched this female Magus. With her her thirst and pursuit of knowledge, she was very similar to how he had been back then.

Krupp had a stiff expression. It was nothing much for a Magus to become a disciple, but becoming a servant or a guinea pig would effectively render one dispensable to a dark Magus. This female Magus seemed to care nothing for her life. Rather, she was giving up her very life for the pursuit of truth!

“My Lord...” Krupp gaped but was unable to speak.

He was merely Leylin's nephew. There was nothing beside that relationship that bonded them together. Before he was sure of what place he held in Leylin's heart, speaking out like this seemed rather risky.

"I don't have plans to teach anyone now, and I'm not lacking in servants either." Leylin spoke indifferently, causing Darlie's eyes gaze to dim. But Leylin's next words brought her from the depths of hell to heaven. "But I give you permission to observe and emulate me for a period of time. How much you learn will depend on you."

"Many thanks, my Lord!" she replied, tears lining her eyes.

However, Leylin had yet to finish speaking, "What can you offer me though, that is of equal value?"

"My everything!" Darlie's tone was firm.

"Good. Swear it. Swear it on your soul and your honour, that from hereon out your power, your body, your soul and everything will belong to the Farlier Family branch head on the south coast, Krupp Farlier!"

Leylin sounded unenthusiastic, but Krupp's eyes went wide, "What? Me?"

Darlie took a look at Krupp who was beside her, and immediately made a vow with her soul, "I swear on it!" With Leylin as a

witness, it would haunt her throughout her life unless a Magus who comprehended laws aided her. Of course, the chances that an existence at or above rank 7 would help Darlie were pretty much nil.

“Patriarch... Why?” Krupp watched Darlie, looking puzzled.

“As the descendant of our Farlier family, you should help our family continue the bloodline!” Leylin chuckled, “Darlie is a great choice. She’s talented, and you’ve seen her willpower and good qualities for yourself...”

Astute as he was, Leylin had long since noticed Krupp’s slight crush on Darlie. This meant nothing to him, but as he was the real descendant of the Farlier Family he placed more importance on Krupp spreading his blood than his vengeance.

Having done this, he now felt that he’d done enough to make up for everything he owed the family.

Hearing Leylin saying something so shameless out in the open, a trace of a blush crept onto the faces of Krupp and Darlie, Magi as they were.

“Cough cough... My Lord, where are we going now?” Krupp directed the conversation elsewhere. He’d been running for his life ever since birth, and experiences like this one were rare. The only reason he’d felt anything for Darlie was that she was pleasing to the eye.

“Let’s go to the Abyssal Bone Swamp. I want to see how the academy is doing, and there are also some people I want to find out about.” Leylin smiled, considerately changing the topic, “It also looks like I need to show off some strength, display that the Farlier Family has a solid backing. It’ll be very troublesome if we keep getting harassed like this.”

“Troublesome?!” Krupp was first baffled, but his expression quickly changed.

An aged voice was transmitted to them, “Mister Leylin, could we trouble you to come out of the carriage?”

“Let’s go out, we have guests!” Leylin beamed, shaking his robes as he got to his feet. Krupp and Darlie exchanged a glance and lined themselves up behind him, seemingly with good chemistry seeing how they occupied his left and right.

The nightmare horse snarled in dissatisfaction and the carriage stopped. Getting out of the carriage, Leylin caught sight of a few aged Magi.

At the front was a white-browed old man with layers of wrinkles on a face that was covered with spots. He looked about to die at any moment, wearing a simple grey robe that contrasted the dazzling golden staff in hand. He seemed to be the speaker.

Beside him was an old woman wearing the clothing of aristocracy, her hair that had pearls and gems embedded within it tied in a bun.

The two stood on top of a large banyan tree which was blocking Leylin's path. A large face emerged from the trunk. This banyan tree was actually a Magus, and its life force was the strongest amongst the three Magi!

The three immediately went on guard when they saw Leylin coming out. The one holding the staff was the first to speak, "Leylin Farlier?"

"That's me." Leylin's body floated up, and he stood on top of the carriage. While the lack of an aura coming from his body gave no reason for it, the Magi opposite him felt a great feeling of danger.

"I am the Saint Nonov Ciel Andrew; you can call me Nonov. Beside me is Mistress Marjorie, and this giant tree is Lord Keefa!" The auras of Crystal Phase Magi became apparent as the old Magus introduced his party. All three of them were mighty rank 3 Magi whose spiritual force had crystallised!

Leylin could also sense scattered undulations from some bloodline treasures and other unique magical items, and there was even a high-grade magic artifact on them. It was apparent that they'd brought everything they had.

"Mm, you must be the leaders of the light Magi." Leylin nodded.

"Yes," Nonov said as he forced a smile. Even face to face he couldn't sense Leylin's aura. It was like his immediate vicinity was a boundless sea, drowning out any probes and leaving no traces

behind.

“Is this about the issue with Alric?” Leylin asked casually. He could eliminate ants like these in one blow, but for the sake of the Farlier Family it was prudent to leave them alive to spread word of the terror he wrought.

“The matter with Alric was a personal feud between you and him. Though my Lord’s methods are a little... overboard... they aren’t unacceptable.” Realising that Leylin was not to be trifled with, Nonov immediately changed his plans. His conceding seemed quite pathetic to Leylin.

If he was considered weak, these Magi wouldn’t have bothered with such words and instead just killed him. They would cut the person who had tarnished the reputation of the light Magi up into a million pieces. However, realising Leylin wasn’t going to be pushed around, Nonov gave up his pursuit of enmity on Alric’s behalf.

After all, it was irrational to provoke a powerful Magus for the sake of a dead person, what more one whose family, organisation, and subordinates had all disappeared. It was all for the ‘big picture’. The casual sacrifice of Alric even left Leylin wanting to sneer in response.

This sort of thing was exactly why he was hellbent on becoming stronger himself, rather than depending on organisations.

“However, Lord Alric was still a colleague of ours. Shouldn’t

Mister Leylin do something about this?” Nonov finally got to the point.

“What ‘something’?” Leylin watched the old man playfully.

“Mister Leylin was once a professor at Four Seasons Gardens, which means you were once a light Magus. As a light Magus, it’s our obligation to fight against evil!” Nonov seemed to be spouting righteous words. “The source of all evil in the south coast, the ancient demon that the Spirit Slaying Sect believes in, the Gargamel is alive. Is Lord Leylin willing to aid us in destroying the sect? I’m sure that once you contribute enough, Four Seasons Garden will be very willing to welcome you back...”

‘They can’t beat me, so now they’re trying to assimilate me to their cause’ Leylin chuckled inside, but Nonov had already begun stating his conditions. If Leylin were to attack the Spirit Slaying Sect and even kill the Gargamel, they would compensate him by admitting him once more into the Four Seasons Garden, even allowing him full control of it. It was indeed an enticing offer.

If Leylin was a peak rank 3 Magus, he would have put some consideration into it. However, there was no need to fake courtesy with his current strength. “I reject your proposal!” he exclaimed unceremoniously. Though the Gargamel had long since entered the list of beings he had to kill, he hated being threatened to do anything.

“What?” Such a blunt answer put the old man in shock, and his expression dimmed.



“There should be some enmity between my Lord and the Gargamel, no? Wouldn’t this be getting the best of both worlds? Or are you thinking of siding with the evil dark Magi?”

# Chapter 678 - Ease And Departure

---

“You learnt about that too... It seems like you know me quite well,” Leylin shook his head, “But did you know that the thing I hate the most is being coerced?”

His expression instantly darkened. “Furthermore, it’s better to deal with dark Magi than the likes of you. As long as I display enough strength to shock them, they become even more obedient than dogs, and won’t resort to sneaky actions in the shadows...”

“It looks like Sir Leylin is very prejudiced against us light Magi. What a pity...” Nonov spoke slowly, the golden scepter in his hand emitting even more dazzling rays of light.

“Are you done with all that nonsense? Like I said earlier, we should just eliminate him. He started out as a dark Magus!” Marjorie, who was beside Nonov, began to speak with a piercing voice.

Sou sou! The giant tree Magus under them did not speak, but large amounts of roots spread out from it to envelop the surrounding region. It formed a grid of roots in the area.

“Increasing your vitality by combining your life with plants? How pathetic.” Leylin shook his head, seeing through the tree with a slight glance. While he didn’t say more than that, the look of pity in his eyes threw the banyan tree into a violent rage.

Boundless green light spread around the area. It was like it had

formed a translucent crystal in the air, sealing the air around Leylin.

“As we discussed before. Keefa will be in charge of restraining him while you amplify our power. I’ll take the charge.” As he said that, Nonov took the lead, the golden scepter in his hands abruptly increasing in size to become a golden holy lance.

“Understood!” Marjorie answered quickly from behind him. All sorts of complicated and mysterious runes appeared from her body, disappearing into the giant tree and Nonov’s body. With that support, more of their spiritual forces crystallised, approaching the limit.

“Even after the amplification, they’re still only close to the limit of rank 3?” Leylin sighed, the disappointment evident in his eyes as he waved his arm.

Rumble! Black flames began encircling the horse carriage in defence. “Wait here, don’t come out and block me.”

Numerous tendrils that had come to probe the area sizzled, instantly burnt to ashes by the black flames. It caused the large banyan tree to let loose a miserable cry.

The black flames looked to be about to burn right up the roots, and the tree had no choice but to sever the affected ones, cutting its connection with them. Jade-green sap flowed out of the wounds in great amounts.

“AARGHORH...” The human face on the trunk let out roars that nobody could make sense of. On the other hand, the faces of Nonov and Marjorie changed.

“These flames burn the very soul! Lord Leylin seems to have obtained some amazing inheritance in his time away.” Golden light was produced from the lance, covering Nonov’s body as if some kind of golden armour.

“You think I’m relying on some inheritance? You think that’s what gives me my strength?” Leylin replied, disapproving.

“Heaven’s Lance, make a judgement for light and justice!” Nonov’s body seemed to burst into golden flames. He hurled the lance in his hands into the distance, and it seemed like a golden meteor was launched. The lance reached Leylin in the blink of an eye. Black even streaked near the tip of the lance, fine spatial cracks being formed.

“I must say, you’re quite good for a rank 3 Magus.” Leylin stretched out his hand as he yawned. In front of that pale hand, be it the golden flames or the spatial cracks, everything was destroyed. The terrifyingly sharp tip of the holy golden lance could do no harm to his skin as he grabbed it.

“It’s best not to show this stuff and humiliate yourself.” As if in answer to all the taunting from the three Magi, Leylin exerted a bit of force with his two hands.

The golden lance broke apart at the center, the screech it left

behind sounding miserable. Golden sand fell from where it had broken apart, causing the main body to quickly collapse.

“No, how is that possible?” Nonov took several steps backwards, blood flowing from the corners of his mouth due to the backlash of having his holy lance destroyed. Two streaks of red fell from his eyes, “This is a treasure that’s been passed down in our academy! Even peak rank 3 Magi shouldn’t be able to so much as move it!”

“Let’s go! He’s even more terrifying than that Gargamel!” Marjorie pulled at Nonov, and the banyan tree below them abruptly pulled up its roots and fled like a giant, each step allowing it to cover hundreds of metres.

“Activate the interference formation we’d planned for the Gargamel!” Nonov seemed to have recovered, but his eyes still held a trace of shock. He took out a white handkerchief to cover the blood from the corner of his mouth even as he gave his command.

The earth rumbled as four pillars of light, red yellow, blue, and green, shot up around Leylin. Smoke and multi-colour light appeared in the air, forming a tremendous spell formation with runes snaking around its surface.

“Nonov, the enemy is far stronger than we expected. The four-pillared stone seal shouldn’t be able to hold him down for long. We’ll need to use our final treasure!” Marjorie exclaimed solemnly.

“Roar...” The banyan tree Magus under them thundered, emitting spiritual undulations of approval.

“In that case...” Nonov’s expression underwent several changes before he finally gritted his teeth and reached into his robes.

Rumble! All of a sudden, loud thuds sounded from the sealing formation, causing shivers to go down the spines of the three Magi. It was like some powerful ferocious beast had been set free in there, bursting forth with enough force to break it open. Bumps appeared in the barrier, and the runes on top of it shattered like glass.

“How is that possible? That’s our four-pillar rock seal, even the Gargamel was trapped inside it for a few minutes. How long has it been?” Marjorie let out a piercing shout.

“Prepare to strengthen the seal. Use the Aquatic Devil Seaweed and help me gain time. Quick!” Nonov looked exceptionally sinister.

“But that’s the last secret trick we have. There’s only enough of the Aquatic Devil Seaweed to be used once...” Marjorie obviously hesitated.

“His strength is the greatest catastrophe for us. I even suspect... quick!” Nonov coughed out blood.

“Fine.” Marjorie merely hesitated for a moment and immediately grew clear-headed, tossing a dried-up seaweed into the formation.

“Emissary sleeping deep within the sea, please heed my call...” With her chants, the small dried-up marine seaweed abruptly swelled in mid-air, as if it had absorbed a large amount of moisture. Even its surface grew wet.

Large amounts of moisture gathered within it and formed a dark green ball of plants, with all sorts of seaweed on it. The plant ball shifted above the sealing spell formation before it suddenly exploded, threads of black seaweed forming a web that covered the area.

“Alright! Even if it’s a peak rank 3, the Aquatic Devil Seaweed can still achieve...” The glee in Nonov’s eyes only lasted a short while. His eyes nearly popped out from their sockets and he lost all of his previous demeanour, “How is that possible?”

He could see a gap in the middle of the formation, be it the four pillared stone seal or the threads of seaweed. A Magus wearing dark-golden scholarly robes and a mysterious mask on his face walked out arrogantly. Immediately after, a black hole appeared in his hands, sucking in the surrounding seal and the aquatic seaweed.

Pow! A slight explosion sounded in the air, and in the blink of an eye, the spell formation and the devil algae seal had turned into a miniature model in Leylin’s hands.

“This is far beyond rank 3. You’re a Morning–” Nonov’s face immediately seemed to lose all blood, becoming so pale that it was frightening.

However, Leylin did not give him the chance to kneel and beg for forgiveness nor flee, “The tasteless games shall end now. I’ll return this to you!” He tossed the model in his hand lightly in front.

The seal that was compressed a thousandfold rumbled, abruptly blowing up along with the devil algae. Formless energy buffeted all directions, shaking the earth itself. Multi-coloured light rippled in the air, the magnificence concealing a deadly danger.

“I’m warning you right now. Don’t provoke the Farlier Family, or else...” Leylin gently landed above the carriage, and under Krupp and Darlie’s reverential gazes headed inside.

The demonic nightmare horse neighed and galloped wildly, several times faster than before. It even soared into the air after a while, turning into a flash of light that streaked through the horizon.

The terrifying explosions continued for a while in the place they’d left behind before gradually ending to reveal two figures, both in a sorry state.

Keefa, the gigantic banyan tree of a Magus, had already disappeared; he’d used his body to absorb most of the attack.

“Keefa!” Marjorie was not in a very good condition, but what had given her the greatest blow was not her injuries. It was instead that terrifying and invincible figure.



“It’ll be fine! Though his body was destroyed, his seed is still alive.” Nonov produced a green seed.

# Chapter 679 - Return And Change

---

“Keefa has already become a living plant. As long as this true seed of his still exists, he can revive at any time. However, it’ll take a long while for him to amass the amount of life force he had before...” Nonov sighed, fixing his eyes on the green seed.

It was the size of a grown man’s fist, with complicated plant runes on it. She could vaguely sense a familiar spiritual force undulation coming from it, as if there was a gravely injured life that had fallen asleep inside.

“He seems to have let us off intentionally, restraining himself at the last minute. If not, none of us would have been able to survive...” Nonov laughed wryly, “What do you think?”

“We still have our final treasure. If we’re pushed to the limit, we can use it to deal him immense damage,” Marjorie said hatefully, before her expression suddenly changed, “What?”.

The sound of an item shattering could be heard from Nonov’s body. More specifically, it was from a secret compartment in his robes where the final treasure was kept.

“What’s going on? Could it be...” A chill rose in her heart.

Nonov expressionlessly shoved his hand towards the area and fished out a few shattered metallic pieces. There still remained powerful radiations and complicated, intricate patterns and clearly was a part of a high-grade magic equipment.

“The Blade of Avarice! What’s going on? It’s a high-grade magic artifact. How can it suddenly shatter?” Marjorie yelled, her extremely sharp voice even dispersing the clouds in the sky.

This high-grade magic artifact that was the final treasure of the light Magi could recharge itself automatically. It produced a terrifying attack that could destroy peak rank 3 Magi, hence it was regarded as the final trump card of the light Magi, being safeguarded tightly. It wouldn’t be used unless it was a life or death situation.

It was this very item that had injured the Gargamel previously, but now... Nonov looked at the blade fragments in his hands, and suddenly felt like the honour and glory that the light Magi upheld seemed to be collapsing magnificently.

“To be able to go past my defences and even destroy the Blade of Avarice without my knowledge, lowering the energy waves to the limit so that the explosion wouldn’t injure anyone... This strength...” Nonov felt as if all the bones in his body had been extracted as he collapsed to the ground.

He took a deep breath and then guessed, “He must be stronger than the peak of rank 3, having reached the unfathomable Morning Star realm!”

“Morning Star... A rank 4 Magus!” the old woman shrieked, “What kind of joke is this? A Magus of this rank in our south coast... a Magus of this rank...” She kept repeating the words, her

voice becoming softer.

She was beginning to believe in this conjecture. Perhaps only Magi at and above the Morning Star realm could break out of their attack so easily, leaving them powerless and in despair.

After staying silent for a long while, she asked a very practical question. “What should we do next? What kind of attitude should we use to face that... Lord?”

“I don’t know,” Nonov laughed wryly, “But what I do know is that the whole situation in the south coast is going to experience a tumultuous change soon. Whatever it is, we know one thing for sure— never provoke the Farlier Family!”

At the end, Nonov’s expression turned incomparably grim...

Flames streaked across the sky. Krupp was instantly terrified by their speed once he opened the door to the carriage.

“If we’d hurried on at this speed earlier, those light Magi wouldn’t even have had any time to react, right? Why...”

“Why did I deliberately slow down and let them chase up to us?” Leylin reclined on the sofa in the carriage, his eyes narrowed slightly. His expression was hidden by the half-mask.

“Per—perhaps Lord Leylin wanted to exhibit his strength to them. This can be seen from how Lord Leylin let them off at the end!”

Darlie stammered out while clutching at her skirt.

“You said it well!” Leylin nodded in praise. Darlie was a smart girl, and her talent and qualities were all good. In addition, with the limitations of her soul vow, she could never go against the will of the Farlier Family, and instead become Krupp’s valuable companion.

“These Magi are obviously nothing to Lord Leylin, but my lord is making plans for us? My Lord is taking precautions so that once he leaves, they will be too terrified to give us trouble,” Darlie guessed.

“Patriarch, are you leaving?” Krupp turned pale in fright.

“Mm, the south coast is just too small. This place is too barren for me and there’s nothing worth my attention here. If not for the Farlier Family being here, as well as some debts I had to settle, I wouldn’t have returned.” Krupp grew disappointed as Leylin nodded, “I’ll leave the task of restoring the Farlier Family to you. The reputation I’ll leave behind won’t count for much; what you’ll really need to rely on is your own strength. I’ll teach you and Darlie well in this period of time...”

.....

News of Leylin’s reappearance did not shock most of the lower-ranked Magi in the south coast. What made them sigh with sorrow was the change in the leadership of Teljose City, as well as the strange death of the rank 3 Magus Alric along with his friends, disciples, and family.

The acolytes and rank 1 Magi were too far removed from the upper echelons, and the news that spread to them was limited. Hence, they believed that Alric had been struck by some unknown curse. Suffering a curse due to some lab accident or mistaken summoning was common in the Magus World, even ones that ended one's lineage. It was just that the scope of the curse this time was far more terrifying.

Though their guesses were rather close to reality, never did they expect that the one who had caused Alric's fall was the wanted Magus, the Toxic King Leylin, the name that was just a symbol in their history textbooks.

However, no matter which organisation they belonged to, the higher-ranked Magi were shaken. This trend did not seem to vanish, but instead became increasingly intense. The fall of Alric and his families was like a giant rock being thrown into a lake, resulting in immense ripples in the south coast.

As a rank 3 Magus, Alric was probably one of the top five in the light alliance. Yet he'd been killed just like that. Even his family and disciples hadn't been let off. Such a ruthless power caused terror in the hearts of both light Magi and dark.

What they did not expect was that the death of Alric was merely a prologue of sorts. The fact that the higher-ups amongst the light Magi had surrounded the murderer and fought him was concealed originally, but eventually it leaked. The Magi that heard of the real situation sank into a mysterious silence.

The news was just too shocking, to the point they believed it to be fake. Three peak Crystal Phase Magi had been grievously injured and lost the Golden Staff, Aquatic Devil Seaweed and countless other treasures. Even the Blade of the Avarice had been reduced to pieces! Such a terrifying battle might dumbfounded the high-ranked Magi of the south coast.

Meanwhile, news of Leylin's achievements spread like wildfire, and many Magus historians flipped through thick tomes hoping to find all traces of him in the historical records. The most important order now was not to provoke Leylin or the Farlier Family. It wasn't just the light Magi, even the dark Magi enforced this rule.

In such a situation, a carriage that was being pulled by a flaming skeleton horse slowly entered the boundaries of the Abyssal Bone Swamp.

Caw! Caw! A few red-eyed crows flew in the sky, causing nostalgia to arise in Leylin's eyes. Having moderated his aura, he seemed like a regular human. The only thing that showed he was not normal was the aura of nobility that he inadvertently leaked.

The Abyssal Bone Swamp belonged to the Abyssal Bone Forest Academy, which was Leylin's destination. As the place that had guided him into the ranks of Magi, Leylin still felt something for his alma mater.

As the place that had guided him into the ranks of Magi, Leylin still felt something for his alma mater. Furthermore...

“Kroft, Bicky, Neela, Jayden, Dorotte, Nyssa...” Leylin announced the names slowly, “Though a lot of them have probably disappeared, I still want to take a look...”

Huge tombs appeared before him after he crossed through the dark forest. Several enormous stone statues of gorillas lined the sides of the tallest tomb in the centre came to life and screeched “INVADERS!”

Shrill alarms began to ring, and white human skulls emerged from the earth one by one. They were followed by torsos and then the rest of their skeletal bodies. The skeletons emitted a dense aura of death as they grabbed rotting metal weaponry before slowly surrounding Leylin and his party.

A few double-headed dogs growled gruffly, with pus flowing profusely from the gaps between their teeth as they circled around them

“Lunatics who dare offend the dignity of the Abyssal Bone Forest Academy, you will learn what it means to pay a price in blood!” The largest stone gorilla snarled, and the undead troops began to attack.

“Wait!” An imposing voice sounded out, accompanied by large amounts of green flames. Many human figures emerged from underground, all having energy undulations of at least rank 1.

“Director!” The magical beasts bowed towards the new arrivals, but what surprised Leylin the most was that standing in front of



the many professors was a female Magus.

‘Wasn’t the director of the Abyssal Bone Forest Academy Siley? So it’s someone else now?’ Astonishment flashed in Leylin’s eyes as he curiously watched the person in front of him.

# Chapter 680 - Abyssal Bone And People

---

The director of the Abyssal Bone Forest Academy, standing in front of their many professors, was a female Magus. This had exceeded all of Leylin's expectations. On top of that, Leylin felt like her face was familiar.

Leylin couldn't help but begin to inspect her features closely. She had long, wavy blonde hair and a doll-like face. Her starlike eyes, small stature with some baby fat remaining on her face making the woman whose skin was as pale as snow seem lovable and adorable. Materialised spiritual force at the peak of rank 2 was being emitted clearly from her body.

'Huh... These energy undulations are different from those of regular Magi, she must be from an ancient branch. Was she fortunate enough to obtain some ancient inheritance?'

"Lord Leylin!" The female Magus opposite him curtsied, her pleasant voice sounding like a black-naped oriole, "Welcome back! Abyssal Bone Forest shall forever be your home!"

She was obviously showing her good will, and her voice immediately made Leylin think back to the bonfire at the acolyte camp. He remembered her as a person, but her appearance had drastically changed that he no longer remember her original visage.

"You are... Nyssa?" Leylin spoke slowly. This female Magus was the one who had been deceived by her Mentor. The one who had

turned into a disgusting freak due to a failed experiment. Contrary to her former nickname of 'swine', the Nyssa now was the very personification of beauty.

"It's me. Thank you for all your support and encouragement in the past." Nyssa's chest bounced up and down, she evidently had many things to say. Immediately after that, she ran her eyes over the surroundings, "Lord Leylin is no enemy. You may return."

"Understood." The stone orangutans saluted respectfully and brought the skeletal troops back to their original places.

"Everyone, let me introduce you. This is Leylin Farlier, the eternal pride of our Abyssal Bone Forest Academy! Let us welcome him warmly." Nyssa spoke with the poise of a leader to the professors behind her. She was completely different from the fragile and weak girl of the past.

"He's that Leylin!" "The Toxic Sovereign King?" "No, I heard that..."

His previous actions had earned Leylin a reputation second to none in the Abyssal Bone Forest Academy. People quickly began whispering under their breaths when his name was announced; some of them who were ranked high enough had received some information that caused them to humble themselves further before him.

The chattering stopped with but a wave of Nyssa's hand. This simple action showed off her authority.

She shot a sweet smile at Leylin, and it seemed to light up the whole graveyard. “I know there’s a lot you want to know. I have a lot to say myself, so it’s best we continue this in my drawing room below.”

“Mm,” Leylin nodded. Following that, he entered the underground construction that was the Abyssal Bone Forest Academy escorted by the many Magi.

The surface of Abyssal Bone Forest Academy was a graveyard, but it had a huge underground structure that could accommodate thousands of Magi and those doing odd jobs inside. It was like a complicated but precise beehive.

In the main drawing room, Leylin put down the black tea in his hands and listened to Nyssa as she gave an account of all that had occurred after they parted ways.

“... And so I acquired that sage’s inheritance and successfully became an official Magus. Two centuries later, I reached rank 2 and was elected the director of the Abyssal Bone Forest Academy.” Nyssa tucked her long hair behind her ear.

“Mm, it’s been hard on you,” Leylin watched the girl in front of him. While what she said sounded simple, he could imagine the price she’d had to pay for all these changes. However, she wasn’t willing to share more and he wouldn’t pour salt on her wounds. It would do him no good.

However, since she wasn't willing to share more, he wouldn't pour salt on her wound. More importantly, it would do him no good.

"I'd thought I'd need to deal with some bugs and trash in the academy, but it looks like there's little for me to do!" Leylin laughed as he spoke bluntly.

Three Magus families had managed everything when he'd been studying at the academy, even electing its director. He'd fought with the Lilytell Family which was one of the three, and was left with no choice but to leave. Though he later dealt the family a huge blow, circumstances hadn't allowed him to completely uproot it from the academy.

However, the fact that Nyssa was the director and nobody from the Lilytell Family disrupted his arrival was telling.

"I've already completely uprooted the Lilytell Family, and the other two have been affected as well. They can't meddle with anything to do with the academy anymore. Come to think of it, this is all thanks to you. If you hadn't killed a peak rank 1 grand elder who had a chance of reaching rank 2, the families would never have grown imbalanced in power. And that was what sparked everything..."

Nyssa was all smiles as she watched Leylin. Although her words were light, the carnage behind them did not need to be described. Whatever be the situation, the Abyssal Bone Forest Academy was merely a small-scaled organisation with its most powerful Magus being Siley who was only a middling rank 2. However, Nyssa was

at the peak of rank 2, which made it easy for her to push him off his throne.

“Since the Lilytell Family has been completely destroyed, it saves me a lot of trouble...” Leylin chuckled, “There are a few other people I want to find the whereabouts of...”

Hearing this, Nyssa’s eyes dimmed, “I can guess who you want to ask about. Our companions, Guricha, Dodoria, and even Jayden have all died... Only the two of us remain from that batch...”

“Even Jayden, with his grade 5 aptitude...” Leylin shook his head, looking grim. However, he would never admit his knowledge of the reason for his death.

“Jayden’s Mentor, White Bone Dorotte, went missing during an expedition into some ruins. News spread that his life imprint dissipated, which means there’s little chance of his survival....” Nyssa spoke calmly. She hadn’t dealt much with either Jayden or Dorotte, and her sorrow for their deaths couldn’t compare to what she’d felt when Guricha and Dodoria died.

In reality, magic study and research was filled with dangers. For two acolytes from the south coast to survive and even achieve such dazzling results was quite rare.

“Mm... How about my mentor, Professor Kroft?” Leylin asked on.

“Potioneering Professor Kroft died peacefully of natural causes a century ago. His grave is right behind the academy, should I take you there?” Leylin immediately went silent upon hearing Nyssa’s words, and scenes of Kroft’s lectures emerged in his mind.

He wasn’t surprised that Kroft had died of old age, though he was still a little sad. The professor was merely a rank 1 magus, and even if he was adept at Potioneering there was a limit to his lifespan. Leylin had no idea how long Kroft had lived before he’d become his student. Since he hadn’t advanced to rank 2, it was natural for him to die of old age.

Such a death was actually pretty good in the Magus World, and it didn’t really cause Leylin any grief. It only made him think that time was indeed the largest foe of life. This event only strengthened his resolve to pursue immortality.

Leylin stayed silent for a while longer before his voice sounded out, “Thank you very much, Nyssa. I plan to stay here for a period of time, and there are a few other people whose whereabouts I need to trouble you for. Neela, Bicky, and Anna who’s from Extreme Night City. She’s a human who once took over my manor...” He announced a few names.

“Alright, I’ve remembered their names. I’ll give you an answer within a week,” Nyssa quickly replied.

“Many thanks. I’d like to be alone now.” Leylin reclined on the sofa, waving his arms as if in weariness.

“Then I’ll take my leave.” Although Nyssa was the host, she seemed to obey Leylin unconditionally. She bowed slightly before retreating in caution.

.....

“Kroft Leslie...” The lettering on the mottled black tombstone had dulled with the passage of time, but Leylin was still able to read the name out. He was currently among a large number of tombs; numerous black tombstones and upside down crosses covering the area. It caused the place to feel ominous and cold.

The tomb in front of him belonged to his ex-mentor, Kroft.

“Mentor... I’m back!” Leylin said, the words emerging after a long period of silence. The cold wind kept blowing, causing the black trees to rustle.

“Professor Kroft left very peacefully, and he didn’t leave behind any descendants...” Nyssa walked over, “Also, I’ve gotten an answer about what you wanted me to check out...”

“Tell me.” Leylin’s voice was calm, but that only caused a shiver to run down her spine. It was as if she had met some natural enemy.

“First is Neela. It can be confirmed that she passed away 129 years ago, and her family was extinguished 67 years ago due to a leak during an experiment... Those from Extreme Night City have also



returned to report, saying that Anna did live there for a period of time, and even developed the organisation to the perimeters of Extreme Night City. She was a very capable woman and never did marry. She later died alone of old age. Her organisation withered away after her passing. As for Bicky...”

Nyssa glanced at Leylin, “She’s... gone missing...”

“Gone missing? Clarify!” Leylin furrowed his brows.

“After you rescued her in the Tyler Family, she left and travelled the continent by herself, apparently to look for you. Nobody knows where she is...”

# Chapter 681 - Serpent Blood Modification

---

Nyssa sounded very gentle, “The person who was the head of the Tyler Family at that time has been waiting here. Would you like to meet him?”

“There’s no need for that,” Leylin waved his arms. He’d never been interested in those who were so brazen in looking for benefits. Noticing him sinking into silence immediately after, Nyssa retreated tactfully.

After a long while, he sighed deeply. “Neela was a very smart woman after all, while Anna was slightly foolish. I never thought Bicky would have the perseverance to do that...” Leylin knew Neela’s personality very well. She was adaptable and knew when to advance and retreat. It was only expected for her to meet a good end.

Anna’s organisation had only been a way out that Leylin had prepared while he was an acolyte. It was understandable that it could not hold out for long.

What Leylin found the strangest was Bicky. With her personality, she evidently wasn’t the kind of Magus who liked to work hard. It seemed like that matter had influenced her greatly, to the point that her personality had changed.

All three of them were good friends of Leylin’s, perhaps even closer than that. If he could still see them, he would naturally want to help. However, it didn’t matter if he couldn’t.

Leylin left the graveyard after indulging in nostalgia for a while, returning to the luxurious room that the Abyssal Bone Forest Academy had prepared specially for him.

“Patriarch!” Krupp bowed deferentially. Now, however, he seemed vastly different from before.

The colour of his eyes and pupils had changed, and they were turning pure black. The lines on his face were more gentle, and he had grown more handsome, emitting a unique charm.

“Mm. How’s your body? Can you get used to it?” Leylin’s eyes shot out blue light that scanned his body up and down.

There were many methods that could be used to raise one’s strength quickly, but the most suitable for Krupp was the modification of his bloodline.

Krupp had been receiving a transplant of Leylin’s bloodline all this while. It was rather like contaminating a lower-ranked being with the power of a higher-ranked one.

Though Krupp had chosen the path of a Magus, he was still only a rank 1. With the methods Leylin had currently, it was easy for him to push him onto the path of a bloodline Warlock.

Not only was the aura of a bloodline Warlock rippling out of Krupp’s body currently, his energy undulations had quietly

crossed the threshold of rank 2.

“I’m alright. It’s just uncomfortable, like even my marrow is burning...” Krupp was feeling very emotional right now. A bit of pain was a cheap price to pay for the modification to a Magus’ bloodline, something that would give them great power. Such a chance was rare, not something one would find even if they were begging for it.

Now that he’d crossed over to rank 2 by drawing on the power of Leylin’s bloodline, Krupp was completely subservient to him.

“Mm. That’s natural with bloodline transplants. Remember to meditate using Kemoyin’s Pupil a few times when you return.” Leylin said, nodding inwardly at the information the A.I. Chip had gathered.

Leylin had planned Krupp’s modifications out. After all, the south coast branch of the Farlier Family needed a powerful guardian. And once Leylin transported a Kemoyin bloodline into the boy, his ability of control as a Kemoyin Emperor have him great control over him.

‘A rank 5 emperor bloodline will have an extraordinary effect. Just this bloodline force pushed Krupp to rank 2, and might get him to rank 3 in just 50 more years. The possibility of breaking through to Morning Star is...’ Glints of intelligence flashed in Leylin’s eyes.

He’d naturally used the Kemoyin Emperor bloodline, but it

wasn't his own. Leylin's own bloodline was far too powerful, and just a single drop of it would cause Krupp to explode. Since a first generation Warlock's bloodline was too much, Leylin had instead given Krupp the umbilical blood that had been gathered from Syre's birth.

A second generation Warlock bloodline may be weaker than Leylin's, but it was still real rank 5 Kemoyin Emperor blood. It was diluted and hadn't matured, but that's what made it suitable for Krupp.

Now that he carried Syre's blood, Krupp could be considered a third generation Warlock. In other words, he was effectively Leylin's grandson.

At this time, the A.I. Chip's robotic voice sounded again. [Beep! Bloodline weakening graph completed. Estimated degeneration to Giant Kemoyin Serpent bloodline: 15th generation. Estimated further degeneration at 34th generation....]

The weakening of Warlock bloodlines was something that couldn't be avoided. In order to keep the family bloodline pure, they had to practice endogamy or use even more sinister methods with hopes that the deterioration of the bloodline could be drawn out. However, no matter how much was sacrificed the process wouldn't be pushed back more than a century.

'In other words, the chance of a rank 5 Warlock appearing in the Farlier Family is pretty high before the fifteenth generation?' Leylin pondered over this thought while stroking his chin.

It wasn't true that everyone with the Kemoyin Emperor bloodline would become a rank 5 Warlock. Even within the Ouroboros Clan there were many with Kemoyin bloodlines but only Gilbert and the other two dukes had reached Morning Star. Even Bevis with his rank 6 bloodline wasn't guaranteed to reach the Breaking Dawn realm and become a Monarch. He only had the potential to do so.

Hence, while descendants that inherited Leylin's rank 5 Kemoyin Emperor bloodline only needed to work hard and would easily reach rank 4, whether they reached rank 5 was still a question.

As someone who had gone through this process himself, Leylin understood clearly that advancing as Magi did not only require a large amount of resources and hard work. Luck was a very important factor as well.

Other Magi did not have an A.I. Chip at the side like Leylin; they couldn't run simulations and predict possibilities for advancement.

"Understood, my Lord!" Having been modified by Kemoyin Emperor blood, Krupp's respect towards Leylin had evolved into a dependance and reverence from his very soul. He had the Kemoyin bloodline, and humility before the king of one's race had been carved into his very blood and genetics. It could not be changed.

'This is truly an intoxicating feeling...' Leylin's eyes flashed as he continued to think, 'As I am right now, Krupp probably wouldn't

say no even if I were to order him to kill everyone he loves and then commit suicide. He'd even risk his life for this mission... The Snake Dowager's control over other serpents the same... I'm probably the only one of my kind.'

Leylin's finger kept brushing against his cheek. His forehead had been covered by the cold mask, and the Allsnake Curse's mark was dead silent with no visible movements.

However, Leylin could sense traces of fine bloodline force being absorbed by it from all areas of his body as it increased in strength. Though there wasn't much of an effect on him now considering the rate at which it was happening, his bloodline force would be absorbed completely in two more years, leaving him a regular human once more.

Krupp's display showed how the controlling ability of the Kemoyin Emperor was a revolt against the Snake Dowager's own authority. Were he to break through his bloodline shackles, perhaps all Kemoyins would break away from her rule. This was something she would never accept.

Hence, a conflict between them definitely could not be avoided.

"Also, Director Nyssa is waiting outside and hoping to see you!" While Leylin was deep in thought, Krupp had been standing respectfully at the side like the most loyal soldier or servant. He'd moved forward to make his report only when there was a reaction from him.

“Nyssa? Is there anything else she needs?” Leylin’s brows furrowed slightly.

“It should be about other visitors. Ever since news spread that my Lord is staying at the Abyssal Bone Forest Academy, many dark Magus organisations have dispatched emissaries to meet you. Some leaders have even come over personally, the head of the Lighthouse of the Night being one.” As he said this Krupp sighed slightly in his mind.

Tyrants among the dark Magi like the leader of the Lighthouse of the Night were absolute existences in his eyes, ones to be looked up to. However, they’d come forward so humbly and waited for a meeting with his patriarch. It made him feel honoured.

“Also, a few light Magi organisations have secretly sent emissaries as well...” Krupp saw the calm look on Leylin’s face and continued, “My Lord, do you think...”

“Set a time. I’ll see them all.” Leylin waved his hands.

.....

“I never thought my Lord would visit the Abyssal Bone Forest Academy. It truly is the honour of our professors and students!” Elsewhere, Nyssa was speaking to a Magus clad in black robes whose eyes flamed a dark green. She was accompanying him on a stroll through the interior of the Abyssal Bone Forest.



“The Abyssal Bone Forest managed to produce a genius like Lord Leylin. It surely has some redeeming qualities!” The black-robed man was evidently the leader of the Lighthouse of the Night, the strongest dark Magus organisation.

With its massive network, he'd quickly gained intel on Leylin's terrifying battle achievements, followed by other general information on him. He couldn't remain seated after he heard it all. After all, this Lord Leylin was very likely a great Magus who had entered the Morning Star realm!

Just some advice on his path of advancement would leave him very grateful.

“Lord Leylin relied on his own talents. The Abyssal Bone Forest Academy was merely lucky enough to instruct him...” Nyssa did not dare exaggerate when it came to this, and instead told the truth.

# Chapter 682 - Granting Audience And Captive

---

“Whatever the matter, Lord Leylin is Abyssal Bone Forest Academy’s greatest success and fortune!” the glance the leader of Lighthouse of the Night shot at Nyssa hinted at something, and no matter how hard she tried to conceal it a hint of glee appeared in her eyes.

The greater Leylin’s reputation was, the better it was for the academy. With his fame, the Abyssal Bone Forest Academy would definitely be able to expand enormously under her administration. She could even accomplish more than what all the previous directors had been able to. This was the petty and low reason for which Nyssa was trying so hard to invite him to join them.

‘If I could make use of their good relationship and get Leylin to become a famed professor at the academy...’ Just the idea had Nyssa trembling in her excitement; she was perhaps smiling even in her sleep.

“Also... I seem to see a lot of old friends from the light Magi here!” The green-eyed Magus stared at Nyssa with a half-smile.

“Yes, there are quite a few. Ennea Ivory Ring Tower, Four Seasons Garden... Practically all the large light Magus organisations have secretly sent people to make contact with us.” Since it was basically impossible to hide it from him, Nyssa just nodded and admitted it.

“Hu huu... looks like his reputation has terrified them...” The leader laughed in a strange manner, like an owl in the night.

The Magi of light and dark coexisted in the south coast. However, the light Magi were evidently much stronger and occupied most of the resource-rich regions, and the dark Magi could only eke out an existence hidden in the corners. The leaders of the light Magi had steadily suppressed them.

With the appearance of the Gargamel, there was now a three-way confrontation. The dark and light Magi might have temporarily stopped fighting, but the enmity between them had not been resolved, only inhibited by the existence of a powerful external enemy.

Now, with a Morning Star Magus who had started off as a dark Magus, this was more than enough for the old light Magi to be like cats on hot bricks.

At this thought, a sneer appeared about the leader’s lips.

“Director Nyssa and this lord here!”

At this moment, Krupp appeared before Nyssa, and it was as if the figure of a snake flashed in his eyes. The bloodline aura he had caused even the leader, who was a rank 3 Magus, to feel his heart palpitate.

“The Patriarch is willing to meet you. Please come with me!”

Krupp's hair and eyes almost turned completely black, darkness elemental particles extremely dense as they strived to outdo each other and wiggle into his pores. Such a scene astounded Nyssa and the leader.

Having said this, Krupp led the way while Nyssa and the leader transmitted each other messages secretly.

“So this Magus is that lord's grandson? The descendant of the Farlier Family?” The leader's eyes were filled with curiosity. After all, a powerful rank 2 Magus was very rare in the south coast. Any one of them could take over an organisation and still hold immense power.

“He's obviously only advanced very recently. While in history, it's common for that to happen to the descendants of high-ranked Magi, but...”

A hint of hesitance appeared in his voice.

“Yes! This Magus isn't Sire Leylin's descendant, but only a branch from his brother!” Nyssa knew what he wanted to ask and gave the answer.

“A lateral relative?” His eyes went wide, before he lowered his head to chuckle, “I now have even more expectations towards Sire Leylin!”

“We’re here!”

Krupp brought Nyssa and the leader into a large hall. There, many Magi were already in wait, but there were two entirely different groups.

At one side were Magi, with many wearing black Magus robes. Their auras were ice-cold and evil. After seeing the arrival of the leader of Lighthouse of the Night, many drew close and greeted him like moths to a flame.

The Magi at the other side who saw this mostly huffed, not looking very good.

They were clad in white robes, with many decorations of plants that represented life on it. Light and a holy aura began to emanate from their bodies.

“He called them all at one go? I’ve been greeting the leader of the Lighthouse of Night all this while, but this...”

Nyssa gritted her teeth, and her expression became a wry smile.

With Leylin’s absolute power, that bit of authority she had as the director was probably even lighter than a feather in the eyes of the Abyssal Bone Forest professors.

Hence, after being ordered by Leylin, they carried out what he asked without hesitation and even gave her the misconception that

they had abandoned her.

No! This wasn't a misconception. Nyssa knew very well that as long as that man were to say that he wanted to be the director of the academy, she would immediately be made to renounce her position.

Thankfully, he had never been fond of power and status. Furthermore, the academy was just much too small for him, to the point that he might turn his nose up at it.

Nyssa, who thought about this, finally relaxed, the bit of worry she had disappearing.

“Everyone!”

Krupp stood on the platform in the middle of the hall with Darlie beside him. While she had not undergone bloodline modification, she'd been observing Leylin and learning from him. Leylin's knowledge was abundant and he could give perfect answers to all her questions, which very beneficial to her without her being aware of it.

Flames flickered, and Leylin floated above the place where the master should be, black eyes scanning his surroundings.

A terrifying and vast aura that was like countless stars in the skies filled the hall. All the Magi that Leylin looked in the eye, whether the rank 2 Nyssa or rank 3 leader of Lighthouse of the

Night felt a piercing pain in their eyes, and subconsciously lowered their heads, even bending their waists.

“Greetings, Lord Leylin...”

Having personally sensed Leylin’s aura and how terrifying he was, the Magi had no disillusion about his strength.

“Rise!” Seeing the many Magi who had bowed, Leylin raised his arms slightly.

Immediately after, the Magi below the platform felt themselves being raised by a warm draft, holding within strength that they could not oppose.

The Magi could not help but stand up straight, eyes full of astonishment.

“I’m afraid it’s true that this lord has already advanced to be a Morning Star!”

The leader of Lighthouse of the Night’s pupil’s flashed. He now had no doubt at all towards Leylin, who had easily defeated a top-notch master of the light Magi and even destroyed their final trump card, the Blade of Avarice.

Leylin glanced through. Lighthouse of the Night, Ennea Ivory Ring Tower, Four Seasons Garden, Skeleton Throne... Besides the representative from the Spirit Slaying Sect, everyone in the Magus

World from the south coast had arrived.

These top-grade dark and light Magi organisations were very well-known back in the day. Now, however, they could only creep at his feet.

However, Leylin did not even twitch. The Magi under the platform could not tell Leylin's expression under the mask and merely lowered their heads humbly.

Leylin continued to speak, "I wonder what all of the Magi here have come for?"

The Magi exchanged glances. The reason they were here was mostly to verify Leylin's might and his attitude.

Based on what had happened, there was no question about his strength. Just displaying the tip of the iceberg had them gasping in admiration, and nobody dared personally test it out with a battle.

Besides that, this lord's attitude towards the two factions seemed rather mild. It wasn't good or bad, as if he had no ambitions to unify the south coast.

This discovery had many light Magi sighing in relief.

"Lord Leylin!" At this moment, the leader of the Lighthouse of the Night stood out.



“Speak.” Leylin extended his arm and made a polite gesture for him to go on. Inside, he was sighing a little. In his acolyte days, he’d once seen the leader during the bloodbath for the secret dimension.

At that time, just a gaze could cause him grievous injuries or kill him. However, the tables had turned. With just a look, he would immediately be stricken with terror and die miserably.

“Please forgive me for my boldness in saying this, but... have you... already become a rank 4 Magus?”

The leader of the Lighthouse of the Night hesitated but eventually asked.

Things like status had long since lost interest to him. The only thing that would attract him and cause him to invest his mind and body in was a thirst towards a higher realm.

Hearing this question, the hall quieted down. Everyone watched Leylin expectantly.

“This question...”

Just as he was about to answer, a smile appeared about his lips, “Please forgive me, but I will answer this later. Let us first meet a friend!”

“A friend?” The leader was stunned, and immediately noticed two translucent faint figures pressing on either side of a demonic being that suddenly emerged from the void.

“That’s... the Gargamel of the Spirit Slaying Sect!”

Between the two void assassins was a soul demonic being. It had a mask of a horned demon, and its body was as concentrated as a black crystal. Vast soul undulations was transmitted from its body, causing the expressions on these Magi to change.

This was a level that surpassed all of them who were advancing towards the path of Morning Star.

“Is that really the Gargamel?”

“Definitely! This strength that’s mixed with resentment and lunacy is something all Magi who’ve seen it even once can’t misidentify...”

Many Magi whispered incessantly amongst each other, and then watched Leylin with reverence in their eyes.

# Chapter 683 - Confirmation And Travelling Together

---

With the appearance of the Gargamel, the Magi present sank into a mysterious silence.

They knew very well how terrifying and troublesome the Gargamel was. Not only was it powerful at magic, it could support its body with vengeful dead spirits, allowing it to maintain peak condition at all times. Even when struck by the light Magi's final trump card, the Blade of Avarice, it had only been injured and not killed. It only went low-profile for a while before making waves again.

If not for the Magi being unable to deal with it, the Spirit Slaying Sect wouldn't be able to rise in the south coast to be regarded equal to the dark and light Magi.

Now, however, the sect chief, the Gargamel that the disciples fiercely believed in had been seized so easily. The demon that had caused so much terror was suppressed under the platform.

The huge contrast left the Magi questioning whether they were in an illusion.

However, they had no choice but to admit that this was reality after a few tests. Even Leylin's subordinates had the ability to take down a peak rank 3 Magus!

Capturing someone at the same rank alive was more difficult than killing them. This was something known to all Magi. They would perhaps only have a slight increase in respect if Leylin had captured the Gargamel himself. However, this was his subordinates' work, the effect on them was so great that it couldn't possibly be better from Leylin's perspective.

The two void assassins bowed slightly and disappeared into the void. Such strange methods caused many Magi to have changes of expressions. Now, they understood very well that with just a command, he didn't have to do anything at all. Just his two subordinates could eliminate all the Magi here!

Recognising that, they no longer dared to have any thoughts about Leylin, fearing he would notice.

“Gaga... gege... you are... Leylin!”

A hoarse voice sounded from behind the Gargamel's horned white bone mask. It sounded intermittent, but was evidently much more quick-witted than when he'd first seen it.

“Yes. How's' that pitiful Magi mother and daughter doing?”

Leylin asked indifferently. He was obviously talking about Old Devil and her daughter in Teljose City then. The old witch had made a deal with the Gargamel to revive her daughter, and even tried to offer Leylin up as a sacrifice.

Of course, after Leylin's counterattack, they had suffered consequences and fused to form a strange being.

"Them? I ate those two useless pieces of trash long ago!"

The Gargamel's speech became more fluent.

"Is that so..." Leylin seemed to be in a daze for a moment, as if recalling some distant memories.

"Ga ga!"

At this moment, two bundles of crimson flames emerged from under the Gargamel's bone mask. Numerous runes burst on its body, and a layer of thick black fog spread.

"Crap! It's gotten out of its bindings!" The Magi shouted in their fear and anger, bodies flickering with colourful innate defensive spells.

"The home of all living things can only be the tomb of the soul for eternity... the Gargamel!"

The Gargamel yelled as if chanting runes of sacrifice that constantly echoed.

Boom! Amidst the curse, the Gargamel's body exploded and countless figures emerged from its body. There were the old,

young, male, female, and the one common point they had were their vicious faces as well as eyes that were dripping blood.

“Keke, let’s destroy everything together. Soul Disaster!”

The bone mask exploded with a rumble and turned into powder that flew through the air. Bits of light fused with the figures from before, the terrifying aura they emitted causing even the leader of the Lighthouse of the Night’s expression to change.

The peak rank 3 Gargamel had now was treading on the threshold of Morning Star. The dreadful attack formed by ruining its own body meant he had no thoughts that he could survive as a rank 3 Magus himself.

He knew very well that once such a spell completely broke out and spread, the Magi in the hall would die, and even the Abyssal Bone Forest Academy would not be spared.

“I’m going all out! Though using secret techniques will consume much of our measly life force, it’s still better than dying here!”

The leader called out in a low voice, a layer of fine black runes appearing around his body. They were like tadpoles cruising through the air, as if about to collide with that soul body of nothingness.

Weng! Weng! Weng!

At this moment, blue starlight descended, and the leader's body quivered. He found that his spiritual force had gone stagnant, and even the secret technique he was risking his life force for was forcefully being suppressed. He felt no weakness, and the backlash had evidently been pushed down and not consuming his life force at all.

“This– This...”

His eyes went wide as he watched the stars that spread from Leylin's back.

The light blue starlight brought with it a cold brightness that penetrated through the layers of defence and ground of the Abyssal Bone Forest, arriving in the hall. This made it seem as if the top of the hall was a dome showing the night sky with bits of starlight projecting and showing inverted images of gorgeous lights.

Accompanying the lights was a terrifying pressure that caused elemental particles to be rejected. The night domain that the leader had always been proud of exploded with a rumble in front of the pressure like bubbles.

“Ahh...” “Ga ga...” “Zhi zhi...”

The numerous spirit bodies in the sky were like bugs frozen in amber, unable to move at all. No Magi were injured.

“This– This is...” The leader trembled, crouching down almost

involuntarily, “The Morning Star Domain of a Morning Star Magus!”

Compared to the fake domain of a rank 3 Magus, the exhibition of a real Morning Star domain with prowess that was terrifying to the extreme made him seem to be a joke.

“Gargamel, did you think I really didn’t notice what you’d been doing?”

Leylin looked calm as he watched the many faint figures in the air. He grabbed forward casually, and a soul that looked dazed automatically flew over.

Immediately after, the look on the soul’s face became sinister, body covered with black and two horns growing on the tips of his head as it growled at Leylin unceasingly.

“You look like you’re going to implode yourself, but you actually hid your soul in one of the figures. As long one of these figures and vengeful spirits escape, you can use that body and revive yourself?”

Leylin coldly scanned the numerous vengeful spirits in the air.

“Very impressive. Perhaps regular Morning Star Magi might not notice and let you escape, but it’s a pity... you met me!”

Leylin clenched his right fist.



Boom! Large numbers of vengeful spirits were like popcorn as they popped, a silver vortex forming and pulling the many figures and their remains within.

“No~~~!” A very unwilling roar was heard in the air before it finally became softer and disappeared.

The many spirits formed from the Gargamel’s self implosion, as well as the one that Leylin had specifically picked out, all disappeared as they entered the silver vortex.

Pak! The Morning Star domain dissipated, and all that had just happened was like a dream, yet had happened in real life.

“Anye, greeting Morning Star Magus, lord Leylin Farlier!”

At this moment, the leader of the Lighthouse of the Night sounded. He knelt on the floor respectfully, looking as if he were a pilgrim.

“Greetings to Lord Leylin...” Now, the other Magi knelt like they had just woken from a dream, faces filled with excitement.

All that had happened just now and the appearance of the Morning Star domain made it clear that the Magus sitting at the main seat, Leylin Farlier, had truly entered the rank 4 realm.

In the south coast, after thousands of year, a Morning Star had finally appeared once more!

In that moment, some elderly Magi felt their eyes go blurry, filled with heat.

.....

In front of the metal door where many light Magi were guarding, many peak rank 1 elite troops were with rapt attention as they did their job.

Not far away, there were many rank 2 Magi undulations transmitting from a few buildings.

Sou! Sou! Sou!

Three human figures appeared in the air, flying towards the metal door.

“Stop right there! This is the entrance to the pocket dimension of the Eternal Plains, and it’s protected by the Lighthouse of the Night. What do you think you’re doing?”

A spiritual force undulation was transmitted. Immediately after, the Magus standing leftmost hummed coldly, eyes emitting dark green light, “It’s me!”

“Revered leader!” The rank 3 Magus’ undulations dispersed, and

the Magi who had been on their guard had their right hands on their chest as they greeted him.

Three human figures touched down, revealing two figures on top of that of the leader.

At the rightmost was a beautiful female Magus who had an exquisite face like a doll. Now, however, she and Anye automatically took a step back and allowed a space, as if not daring to stand shoulder to shoulder with the Magi between them.

The Magus in the middle wore dark golden, black scholarly robes with a cutting that was very proper. He had a very noble aura and had a black mask on his face with mysterious patterns on it.

Such dressing and to be accompanied by their own leader immediately rang the warning bells in this guard Magi.

Before, there had been no Magi that could stand on equal ground with their leader in the south coast. However, this situation had changed tens of days ago.

The guard Magus knelt respectfully and shouted the arrival's name, "We welcome, great Morning Star Magus, Sire Leylin Farlier..."

"We want to enter the Eternal Plains pocket dimension. Make preparations immediately!" Anye ordered.

Leylin nodded casually and stood by the metal door with Nyssa.

“The Eternal Plains pocket dimension... it’s been so long!”

Leylin watched the large metal door before him, eyes full of nostalgia.

Scenes of the danger when he had advanced to rank 2 seemed to appear in his mind in that instant, every person extremely lively.

# Chapter 684 - Benefits And Entrance

---

The Eternal River pocket dimension had been discovered when Leylin was just a rank 1 Magus. The fact that it still hadn't been divided into respectful affiliations was something that surprised Leylin.

Looking at the detailed patterns on the large metal gate that towered into the clouds, Leylin couldn't help but recall the scene when he'd advanced.

That year, he'd used a large amount of this metal gate's spiritual force as well as the souls of numerous Magi, to push himself forward and advance to rank 2 in one move.

Memories of all that had happened were still fresh in his mind, yet all of the people in them had disappeared. Leylin felt slightly regretful.

"Yes, Sir. Please wait a moment." That guard immediately placed his hands on the surface of the large gate. The metal gate immediately rumbled, emitting a dazzling radiance.

"Eh." Looking at the guard captain, Leylin let out a soft gasp.

"Did you discover something, Lord Leylin?" The head of the Lighthouse of the Night laughed from the side.

"Mm," Leylin nodded, "This Magus is the reincarnation of the

original core of the metal gate's consciousness?" When he heard these words, the guard captain's body suddenly trembled.

"Indeed. We put a lot of effort in then and managed to subdue the gate's core of consciousness. We then nurtured it and had it reincarnate, finding it a suitable corporeal body required great effort..." Anye chuckled at the side.

"However, with this person, manipulating the gate of the pocket dimension has become much more convenient. Now, it is our Dark Night Lighthouse's honoured professor— Jeans!"

"Jeans? Good name!" Leylin analysed him.

Until the other party was a little creeped out, he then chuckled and a spot of light flew into Jeans' forehead.

The surface of his body made a futile attempt to emit a layer of metal defence but to no avail. He could only helplessly watch as the radiance entered his forehead.

"Sir Leylin, this is..." Anye grew anxious, but he did not step out and stop him.

One reason was that he knew Leylin's strength, that he would only invite humiliation upon himself by doing so. Another was that recent interactions caused him to realise that Leylin was not a Magus that was easy to kill. His personality was also good, so he was doing this with some unique intention.

“Lad, just treat this thing as my gift...” Leylin chuckled, stepped into the large gate while Nyssa followed closely behind.

“You guys be careful!” Anye was confused, but still followed him in, only leaving behind Jeans who stood there in a trance.

He didn’t feel pain after the light invaded him. Instead, it transformed into a message that entered his sea of consciousness, instantly causing him to fall into a trance.

Many alphabets formed the beginning, “High-grade meditation technique: Dark Gold World — Suitable for metal innate skill!”

“My Lord?” Anye asked after he followed Leylin into the Eternal Plains pocket dimension, unable to endure it any more.

“Relax, I’m just giving him some benefits!” Leylin smiled. He owed his rank 2 advancement to the core consciousness of the metal gate to the Eternal River Plains pocket dimension. Now that he’d found a body with the same core origin, he naturally wanted to make up for what he’d done.

All of this followed his personality, but Leylin wouldn’t shackle himself: if he hadn’t seen Jeans today he probably wouldn’t have thought of this at all.

“Central continent, south coast, Twilight Zone, and Chernobyl Islands...”

Leylin's gaze flickered continuously, "Once I've broken free from the threads of destiny, it'll be time for me to let go of everything and break through my bloodline shackles!"

Although he didn't know why he wanted to do this, Leylin had a feeling that this would bring him only benefits.

"Huff..." After listening to Leylin's explanation, although Anye was still slightly curious as to why Leylin favoured Jeans, he still finally heaved a sigh.

Three rays of glaring light streaked across the sky, suddenly pushing their way through the Eternal Plains pocket dimension.

Light flickered continuously in Leylin's eyes. Ever since he'd displayed strength at Morning Star to subdue the light and dark Magi, he'd essentially become the uncrowned king of the south coast. The Magi vied with each other to complete the tasks he wanted done. Whether they were a light Magus or dark, just a single command from him would make them work desperately for him.

Such an inconceivable thing had happened due to Leylin's power. It caused many uninformed people from the lower classes to cry out in incredulity. There were even some busybodies who proclaimed that the south coast would soon welcome an era of peace. But in fact, they were all thinking too much.

With the power of the masses at his beck of call, Leylin quickly



made progress on finding people and dealing with past grudges. Krupp and Darlie were also married in the meantime, Leylin having hosted the ceremony. With that done, they returned to the Chernobyl islands to establish a kingdom in the original lands of the Farlier Family.

After everything was resolved, Leylin wanted to leave everything behind. But, the dark and light Magi made a request of him. Although he wanted to leave, the Farlier Family would remain behind here, and furthermore Leylin was quite interested in what the dark and light Magi had mentioned. Hence, he still came to this place.

Leylin and the other two weren't ordinary Magi. They moved at extremely high speeds, and it was but a short while before they arrived at the centre of the pocket dimension. A continuous building complex was present here, with the symbols of various Magus organisations in the surroundings. These were clearly large-scale ruins.

There was a momentary uproar in many of the camps present at their arrival, but soon after a white light transformed into an old white-browed Magus who welcomed them.

The moment he saw Leylin, he immediately bowed down in respect, "Nonov pays his respects to Your Highness Leylin Farlier, the great Morning Star Magus! I hope Your Highness will forgive our rude actions before, we are willing to pay any price..." This Magus was one of the impressive higher-ups of the light Magi that had originally attacked Leylin.

Ever since they'd been rebuffed by Leylin and had the Blade of Avarice destroyed, the three highest executives of the light Magi fell into silence.

Only, once news about Leylin advancing to Morning Star spread, Ennea Ivory Ring Tower which was Nonov's organisation carried out Leylin's orders the most thoroughly. They were at his beck and call, handling many issues with the obvious intent of atonement and to curry favour.

Hence, as Leylin looked at this old scoundrel, he only rolled his eyes, "Rise!"

"Thank you Lord Leylin! Your benevolence is like the torrential ocean, vast and boundless, as if it can contain the entire universe..." Nonov stood up smiling to please him and consciously stood behind Leylin, causing Nyssa and Anye who were at the side to be utterly speechless.

"I'm not here for that matter today, let's go!" Leylin arrived in the sky above a patch of the ruins and looked over everything. The buildings were simple and unsophisticated yet solemn, carrying a unique appeal. They were arranged in a surprisingly logical manner, and seemed to surround a mysterious spell formation.

"This is..." Leylin's pupils narrowed, and his face turned gloomy.

"My Lord?" Anye and Nonov closed up and surrounded him.

Leylin waved his hands at their inquiring gazes, “I can’t confirm anything for now, let’s talk after we enter the core hall.”

“Of course. Please come with us, My Lord,” Anye and Nonov hurried to the front to lead the way. With those two leading, Leylin would of course be unobstructed in the remains.

“This place is a base that emerged after the destruction of a large gate pocket dimension. At one time, we thought that the secret of the person who made the Eternal Plains pocket dimension was here, and fought many battles for it. In the end, we still wound up concluding on a joint expedition...” Nonov seemed to be a little regretful.

“We initially found many good things in these ruins, even remains of the ancient Wisdom Tree. We finished our exploration of the place 55 years ago, but who’d know we’d discovered even more incredible items than that...” Anye added from the other side. It wasn’t convincing.

As the two spoke, Leylin explored the buildings one after the other to arrive at the centre-most ground.

This was an unnamed temple. There were large white stone pillars on all sides, and with no door and no walls, it could be entered from any direction. The roof exposed a large circular gap where the sky could be seen through the dome.

The hall was absolutely empty, it was only the ground that retained even more complicated and detailed patterns.

“Lord Leylin, look...” Anye and Norov glanced at each, with looks of agony on their faces.

Leylin though wasn't paying attention, mesmerised by the large patterns on the ground, “This is...”

‘A.I. Chip, conduct scan!’ he immediately commanded.

[Beep! Mission established, beginning scan!]

The A.I. Chip's mechanical voice echoed, and there was a response soon after.

[Ancient combined sealing spell formation! Already discovered technique: Annihilating runes, dimensional seal, powerful isolation...]

“Indeed, the building complex here is a part of the large sealing spell formation, and the core is right here!” Leylin looked at the ground. The complicated patterns began to move around, as if they had a life of their own.

“The special nature of the ruins' core caused both parties to keep fighting around it. It wasn't until the appearances of Gargamel and

the Primordial Spirit Slaying Sect that both of us united together to explore the ruins. It caused a rapid increase in progress, then we found... we found..."

Leylin lifted his head, "You found that this place was an entrance to the subterranean world's first layer, but it's been sealed?"

Nonov and Anye both looked at Leylin with shocked expressions. Even with their age they'd had to flip through many antique books before they could know, but Leylin could actually recognise it at first glance. This ability...

Could it be that because he was a Morning Star Magus, he was really omnipotent?

# Chapter 685 - Strengthening And Way Of Escape

---

“Lord Leylin is extremely erudite,” Nonov said in praise, “Ever since the ruins appeared the seal has slowly been lifting. No matter what methods we think of, we haven’t been able to stop this process...”

“And you’ve come to me as a last resort.” Leylin’s snort had Nonov and Anye break out in cold sweat but he didn’t concern himself with them, instead stroking his chin as he fell into deep thought.

Although the subterranean world was rich in resources, with the violent invasion of the ancient Magi many of the tribes there didn’t have a favourable impression of humans. Although humans remained there, after so many years would they side with the humans or the subterranean world? The latter possibility was more likely.

The subterranean world was vast and boundless, and wasn’t lacking in powerful Morning Stars even in the first layer. There should even be rank 5 existences there.

Twilight Zone was only a very small part of this first layer, just like how the south coast was just a part of the surface world. Furthermore, even in spite of its long isolation, there were many terrifying tribes there.

Thus, it wasn’t hard to understand why Nonov and Anye grew

extremely panicky seeing the seal wither away.

“A.I. Chip, based on the current rate, how much longer will the seal last?” A blue light shone from Leylin’s eyes before he had the answer.

With a series of calculations, the A.I. Chip gave an extremely precise answer. [Beep! Calculating with current rate of decay, estimated time to total disintegration is 28572h 34min and 12s.]

To the A.I. Chip which had already been renewed several times, this level of operation was only the simplest.

“You invited me here, what exactly is it for? If it is to strengthen the seal, I’m afraid I can only delay it for at most a hundred years’ time...”

After he finished calculating, Leylin stroked his chin and said to Nonov and Anye.

“How... How can this be? Sir is a Morning Star ranked Magus!”

Such an outcome caused Nonov and Anye to be a little in disbelief.

“Hmph! If it’s just to strengthen the seal. although it’s relatively harder, it’s not that I’m unable to do it, but now, the entire Eternal River pocket dimension has been completely developed for several hundred years, most the remains here have also been destroyed by

you...”

Leylin snorted, watching Nonov and Anye, his tone was very hostile, “In fact, the entire Eternal River pocket dimension is a part of this seal. The Magus who set up this pocket dimension had long before installed the time when the pocket dimension would appear, he even used your greed and sped up this process artificially...”

“Until now, the breaking of the entire seal is already something that’s unavoidable!”

“We’re done for! We south coast, are we really going to be completely destroyed?” Nonov’s both eyes were slightly despondent. If it really linked to the underground, apart from his Ennea Ivory Ring Tower moving to a distant place and collectively migrating, there was no other better way.

On the other side, Anye’s expression was also very dark. Towards the viciousness of the underground tribes and their hatred towards humans, he who had the reference of historical books knew even more clearly.

Once they were attacked and occupied, probably not just Magi, even ordinary humans would face extinction.

Watching these two Magi who had sunk into a struggle, Leylin’s pupils were very calm.



In fact, with the Radiant Moon strength and the assistance of the A.I. Chip, if he made an all-out effort, not stinting on cultivating more precious materials, it was not impossible to entirely seal this pocket dimension. However, the crucial thing was, how would that benefit him?

Nonov and Anye were both rank 3 Magi, they were small and weak like ants before the underground tribes. Naturally, they would not wish to see them infiltrate the surface and threaten their positions.

But Leylin was different! He was already a rank 5 warlock! His military strength was outstanding and the underground world's first layer was also the weakest underground world, he totally had the premise of associating equally with the underground powerhouses!

With the underground world's rich mineral resources, their legacy that had been passed down from the ancient times and the entirely different spell system, they could definitely bring Leylin great benefits.

He believed, not just himself, even if it were other Morning Star existence in the central continent, once they knew about this passageway, they probably would not choose to seal it too.

“How? Have you thought about it? If you are willing, I can step out and strengthen the seal, gaining you a hundred years' time...”

After a few minutes, Leylin spoke indifferently.

“Then... please, Sir!” Nonov and Anye took a glance at each other and in the end still gritted their teeth and requested.

No matter what, if there was another hundred years' time, be it discussing a countermeasure or directly retreating, there was more allowance for them.

“Okay! Pass down my command, seal this area, I want to set up a strengthening spell...”

After hearing them say that, Leylin nodded but instead sent away the two Magi who wanted to stay and help.

A Morning Star light screen enveloped the entire central hall with a buzz. Blue radiance was emitted in all directions, isolating it from the outside world.

“Ancient combined sealing spell...” The blue radiance in Leylin's pupils flickered, many materials were casually taken out from the space equipment.

According to his original intentions, it was naturally to open the seal as soon as possible and gain the benefits. However, his current condition was not good, the Allsnake Curse was like a sharp sword hanging above his head, causing him to have to end things here as quickly as he could and head towards the Purgatory World to resolve the bloodline's shackles.

Hence, postponing the disintegration of the seal for a period of time was also something that was in accordance to Leylin's interests.

“Perhaps, there might be a need to move the Ouroboros Clan here in the future, grasping trade with the underground world...”

Leylin had already drawn out a blueprint regarding the development of the Ouroboros Clan in his mind. The expansion of the entire Ouroboros Clan in the central continent had already reached its limits. Even without the appearance of the Flame Monarch, it would meet the resistance of other Magi sooner or later.

Although the elemental particles environment in the south coast was not much, towards warlocks that relied mainly on bloodline force, the influence in this aspect was much smaller than Magi.

Moreover, the entire central continent had not yet connected to the underground world's passageway, what was discovered occasionally, were just a few totally sealed miniature underground space like that of the Twilight Zone.

Once a passageway that connects to the entire underground world was developed, even simply controlling trade between the two places would bring about huge benefits, enough to allow the Ouroboros Clan to make a rapid development.

“The top priority now, is still to confirm if this connects to that ancient completed underground layer of the underground world or

the miniature sealed area like that of the Twilight Zone...”

Leylin stroked his chin, there was even a radiance constantly flickering in his pupils, “If the place this links to is really that ancient underground layer, as long as we occupy here, the profits gained by the Ouroboros Clan would definitely not a little bit less than the Monarch of the Skies that has control over the entire central continent’s airship network...”

“A.I. Chip! Export spell formation layout!”

[Beep! Mission established, beginning coordination with supplementary assignment...]

The A.I. Chip’s sound was as mechanical as usual, without the slightest emotions in it.

A complicated yet detailed formation diagram was rapidly exported from the A.I. Chip’s database and was being projected by fluorescent light onto the hall’s floor.

The spell formation diagram illustrated by the fluorescent light combined with the original patterns on the floor harmoniously, forming a brand new formation.

[Beep! Separating black hole spell formation deduction setup completed, estimated rate of success 98.99%!]

The A.I. Chip sounded again.

“Very good!” A piece of mithril with black spots was melted into juice before Leylin, spreading out evenly onto the ground at the position where the fluorescent light had originally shone.

With Leylin’s current alchemy grand master’s academic achievements and the A.I. Chip’s fine and detailed assistance, the entire setting up of the spell formation proceeded very smoothly and was thoroughly completed in almost half an hour.

Only, when setting up, Leylin would certainly not do it according to Nonov and Anye’s requests, he included many of his own smuggled goods in it instead.

The entire spell formation continuously rumbled with a buzz, streaks of silver radiance rippled on the ground.

[Beep! Spell formation energy operating normally!  
Compatibility of connection 91.673%!]

Large amounts of data floated across Leylin’s eyes, he could not help but nod secretly, “It is a linking technique that is acquired after all, to have 90% compatibility is already not bad!”

“Then...” Leylin took in a deep breath. “A.I. Chip!”

[Open up the connection assignment, attempting to establish a spatial link, searching coordinates!]

Accompanying the A.I. Chip’s sound, the patterns on the ground suddenly changed, its circulating speed was continuously increasing. Faint silver light emerged, undulating in mid-air, even slowly forming into a state of a semicircular arched door.

Opposite the arched door, was a patch of thick darkness and a mirror-like radiance was constantly emitted.

This was the smuggled goods Leylin had added. At the same time while strengthening the seal, Leylin also left a way of escape for himself, and could even reach the other side of the space with the prerequisite of not damaging the original seal by directly going through the crack in the spell formation.

“You guys guard here, no matter who comes, kill them all!”

Leylin flicked his hands and four translucent void assassins emerged. He faintly ordered a few sentences and these four assassins immediately vanished into the void.

Possessing rank 3 limit strength and with the addition of this kind of ability to go through the void, void assassins were almost

invincible existences in the south coast.

Four void assassins along with the spell formation outside that Leylin had set up, even if the dark and light Magi joined forces, they would definitely not be able to fight their way in.

Although Leylin was more reassured towards Nonov and Anye and he also knew that they did not have the guts, he would not entrust his hopes on their reverence towards him just like that.

Countless historical examples have all proven that this was something very foolish, Leylin would certainly not do that.

# Chapter 686 - Underground And Rescue

---

After preparing his backup plan, Leylin swished his robes and entered the arched door in mid-air. An icy membrane rippled as he passed through it. The moment he materialised, Leylin realised he'd stepped into another place.

A dark, frigid aura permeated the air, one that was specific to the subterranean world. The density of darkness and earth energy particles was even greater than in Twilight Zone.

“This is the other end of the spatial tunnel, huh?” Leylin swept his gaze across the surroundings. He was currently in a palace hall of sorts, where bizarrely styled sculptures were scattered around the vicinity.

Once the light in the spell formation subsided, a thick layer of dust could be observed in the area.

“Inextinguishable Flame!” Leylin pointed ahead and a bright and beautiful flame floated in front of him.

‘This place seems to have been deserted for a very long while. Is it the depths of an ancient ruin?’ Leylin scanned the surroundings with his soul force, before realising that the whole area seemed to be protected by a layer of mysterious energy. This mysterious energy even suppressed the soul force of a Magus.

However, given that his truesoul was at Half Moon, he could still cover a sizeable portion of the area. It wasn't long before he



discovered several passageways leading out.

‘I hope there aren’t any complex spell formations outside, this will become very troublesome.’ Leylin walked towards a large door, the unadorned yet aw-inspiring stone standing over ten metres tall. On the left of the doors was the sculpture of a devil, on the right that of a beautiful angel.

Ka-cha! Ka-cha!

Leylin stretched his hand forward as he pushed the door. Suddenly, two powerful streaks of lightning flashed and struck Leylin, but was repelled by Kemoyin Scales.

A pitch-black tunnel appeared in front of Leylin and without any hesitation, he stepped forward.

“I never expected that I would chance across some Magi on an expedition. This will save me loads of time!”

The corners of Leylin’s lips curled upwards as he blended in with the darkness, before moving at a speed that defied the logics of physics.

.....

On the other side, a group of adventurers were running for their lives, escaping from something in the tunnel.

“Quick! It’s catching up!”

This group of adventurers had a warrior adorning armour, an archer carrying a wooden bow, and the one that made up the most numbers were a group of Magi garbed in robes and carrying strange tools. This party composition was still rather decent. However, this small party now were scurrying away in fear from something behind them, their clothes torn and tattered. Traces of blood tainted their body, revealing profuse injuries.

Dum dum! Dum dum! Behind them, in the darkness, thuds of heavy footsteps were heard.

Upon hearing these noises, the people in the small party had their colour drained from their faces as they continued to flee at a faster speed.

Crash! A dark streak of light flashed, carrying a black long spear. It immediately penetrated the innate spell defense of one of the Magi, pinning him to the floor.

“Xander! Damn it!” The leader, a brown haired youth, turned back and saw his companion pinned to the ground with blood streaming out of his mouth. However, he gritted his teeth and continued fleeing.

“Run! Hurry and run!” His eyes turned bloodshot as he screamed at the top of his lungs.

At the same time, a blazing flame of unwillingness and regret gnawed at his soul bit by bit. “We were too careless! With our combined strength of three stars ranking, this vestige is way out of our league! Damn it! The danger level here is at least five stars! As long as I manage to make it out, I will definitely slay that damned asshole!”

“No! Xander! The female archer slinging the bow on her back halted immediately as she knelt beside the Magus pinned to the ground. She then took out a green vial of potion and poured it on his wounds.

“It’s no use!” The leader roared, but he never stopped running.

Tens of seconds later, that blood curdling scream of his female party member sounded. The leader’s face turned even more pale as he sped up.

Dum dum! Dum dum!

The footsteps sounded behind him, like that of a death god who had come to reap their souls. Although the footsteps were slow, the speed was extremely fast. Not long later, the youth heard several more wretched cries behind him.

It was only until now that he realised, to his astonishment, that not one of his companions had remained.

“No! I can’t die here! I have to be a five stars adventure and even the crowned King Adventurer! I have goals yet to be fulfilled, and to return the glory of my family, the revenge, and also my...”

Another beam of black light shot towards him and stopped his train of thoughts. Although the youth had attempted to maneuver out of the way, he was still grazed by that black light, causing him fall to the ground and cough out a pool of blood.

Dum dum! Dum dum! Along with the footsteps, a giant figure emerged from the darkness.

It was a giant that stood tall at over three metres, with two long shafts of spears slung on its back. Complex runes covered his body, giving off a metallic lustre.

There was a grim expression on its face, as if it belonged to a dead creature. Only two scarlet rays of light were projected from its pupils.

“It’s... It’s here....” The youth teeth clattered. This undead creature that stood in front of him was a defense mechanism of the vestige. Previously, when the group had broken through a tomb like room, it had started to chase them.

The undead giant had a powerful physical attack, with a high resistance to magic spells. It led the youth to despair; he could only watch on as his party members perished one by one under the hands of this giant. Ultimately, he was the only one left standing.

Dum dum! Dum dum! The giant walked over as he unsheathed one of the spears on his back.

“No! I don’t want to.... Please...” Tears poured from the youth’s eyes as he start to turn deranged.

\*Whoosh!” The spear thrust forward, but funnily enough, it remained hoisted in midair. The anticipated pain did not come, which caused the youth to reopen his eyes.

He saw a black shield protecting him at the front, engaging in a deadlock with the spear.

“I’m...I’m saved!” The youth collapsed weakly and laid on the ground, with tears of joy flowing from his eyes.

“Ahoooo!” The giant withdrew his spear and turned his body to the back, howling towards the darkness. Very soon, he staggered half a step backwards, as if some sort of ferocious predator was in front of it.

“Interesting!” ‘Although it seems to be a body made of flesh and blood, there seemed to be some modifications added to it. It’s rather akin to a metallic bodied demon right now huh? Even it consciousness was wiped out, with the only defense mechanism within it remaining...”

Leylin stepped forward from the shadows, blue light shining from his eyes as he scanned the giant in front of it.

“Moreover... These runes on the body, it seemed really similar to that of Branded Swordsmen...”

Leylin always held onto part of the Branded Swordsman’s inheritance, but it was extremely lacking of information. Even after the simulation and conjecture from the A.I. Chip, it could only reached the strength of a rank 1 Magus, which was not of much use.

Right now, after the A.I. Chip had upgraded several times and even added troves of information from the Great Library, it could raise the power of Branded Swordsman from rank 1 to 3. However, for Leylin who had the backing of the Ouroboros Clan and the Warlock Alliance, these Branded Swordsman were relatively useless to him. Hence, Leylin did not mass produce these Branded Swordsman cannon fodder.

However, at this moment, Leylin could clearly see the runes of Branded Swordsman on this giant.

Although the the style is slightly different, with modifications made on top of the original school of thought, this is no doubt the runes of Branded Swordsmen.

Just from looking at the runes and the energy that it radiated had gave Leylin many fresh ideas and inspiration about the Branded Swordsman.

Perhaps, after combining the knowledge found on the continent

and in the subterranean world, the A.I. Chip might be able to produce runes which can create Morning Star Branded Swordsman.

“Arghhhhh!” Although the giant has discovered how powerful Leylin was, the defense mechanism inside its consciousness still made it reach out his hands.

Two black spears soared towards Leylin like two dragons.

\*Peng!\* Pa! A layer of black scales emerged from Leylin’s palms. As astonishing scene was created accompanied by sparks and screeching sounds.

The two black spears that the giant hurled had been caught firmly in Leylin’s palms.

“Hmm! The explosive power isn’t bad, with the strength at 50 degrees of so. It is rather similar to a rank 3 Magus attack!” Leylin nodded his head, but the youth at the side had his eyes bulging out.

During the escape earlier, he had seen many of his companions perish under the mighty black spear. Even magic defense spells proved to be no defense against it.

However, Leylin had managed to catch it in his hands.

“This Magus, is he a monster too?” The youth looked at Leylin’s appearance, garbed in luxurious black robes with a mask. Leylin

gave off a regal yet mysterious aura, yet he did not seem to be a savage or tyrant.

“Groarrrr!” The giant was stupefied momentarily before giving off a huge roar.

The sound waves involuntarily forced the youth to cover his ears. At the same time, black energy particles which could be seen by the naked eye surged towards the giant like water to a sponge, as the runes on the giant’s body began to flicker.

“Groarrrrrr!” With the howling noises made, a spell began to surface. The image of a dark creature’s head appeared, baring its razor sharp fangs as it was sent flying towards Leylin.

“Rank 3 spell — Darkness Crunch?” This spell seemed to be missing on the continent for thousands of years. Only the Great Library in Sky City had mentioned of this before.

Leylin rubbed his chin. A lost and forgotten spell need not necessarily meant that it was powerful. It could be due to not keeping up with the times and entered natural selection. He would definitely not make the assumption that anything ancient is powerful.

The blue light in Leylin’s eyes flashed and the A.I. Chip made its calculations.

Seconds later, the principle of this rank 3 spellcasting and even



the spell model had been conjectured by the A.I. Chip.

“So this is how it works! Although this spell isn’t too bad, but it requires a huge amount of darkness elemental energy particles. No wonder the central continent had phased this spell out!”

# Chapter 687 - Arthur Empire

---

With the A.I. Chip's deductions, Leylin instantly obtained the spell's model, and learnt all of its weaknesses.

‘The darkness elemental particles just aren't concentrated enough in the central continent. Perhaps it can only be used in a paradise for dark Magi like the subterranean world.’

“Fight darkness with light!” A holy white radiance was formed at Leylin's fingertip. While he was a dark Magus himself, it wasn't like he couldn't use any life or light element spells.

In reality, with enough spiritual force and access to spell models, Magi could employ spells of any type. However, there was a difference due to vitality and elemental affinity. Leylin might be extremely proficient with darkness spells, even having an added bonus to their power, but he would find it difficult to use light and life element spells, and the power could even be diminished.

Now, for instance, the light-type spell that Leylin was casting consumed a lot of energy to produce a spell half as strong as one by a regular Magus. He'd long since solidified darkness elemental particles, something that only made it harder for him to use light spells.

However, with Leylin's current strength, even a small portion of his power would cause the spell to be a bane to all darkness.

Leylin seemed to move exceedingly slowly, but somehow arrived

above the monster before it could do anything. The light-tipped finger tapped the centre of the monster's skull.

“Awoo!” A bit of light shone above the monster's head, before it began to flicker and become more dazzling.

Ka-cha! Ka-cha! Like the sound of glass breaking, many cracks appeared on its head and it then exploded, melting into nothingness amidst the white light.

“Mm! Light-type spells can still restrain darkness-type spells, but that also depends on the strength of both parties.”

Leylin had his own understanding of the relationship between elements. If darkness elemental particles were to be likened to fire, then light-type energy particles would be like water.

While a ladle of water could extinguish sparks, it could do nothing against a sea of fire.

On the other hand, if the fire was intense enough, a few droplets of rainwater would be evaporated.

“Awoo...” After the monster head was easily smashed by Leylin, the black giant took several steps back. In its dull, mechanical eyes, traces of terror could be seen.

He let out a few meaningless howls and made to escape.

But how could Leylin let go of such a great guinea pig?

“Stay here!” Along with Leylin’s slight smile, a few black shackles appeared in mid-air and bound him tightly. No matter how the giant kept snarling, there was nothing he could do against these chains.

Soon after, his figure shrunk in size till it entered a crystal ball in Leylin’s hands, like a bug that was frozen in amber.

“Mm! The hoarding spell works, which means he isn’t some living being but a magic being without a soul!”

While it was just a short period of time exchanging blows with him, Leylin now had an understanding of the composition of the giant.

He had evidently gone through the refining of a Branded Swordsman and had even reached a very high level. His body had already gone through elemental modification and become crystallised and somewhat translucent.

This material was the best to make magic beings. After elemental modification, flesh not only retained its original defensive and offensive abilities, it could use spells without obstructions.

In just a short period of time, this was all Leylin could tell. For things on a deeper level, he would need to do more experiments

and dissection.

“This... lord, thank you for... your help!”

At this moment, Leylin noticed the young adventurer collapsed on the ground at the side. He was evidently a Magus, though he had a very low rank. This was all the strength he had, and yet had come to explore. He was rather lucky not to die from the mechanisms or curses.

“Hm? This language?” His thanks meant nothing to Leylin, but the language he spoke in delighted Leylin.

“It’s very similar to the Twilight Language, though there are minute differences in pronunciation. There’s no need to learn a new language!”

Leylin was surprised, but then found this reasonable. Twilight Zone was a part of the subterranean world, and was only isolated because of the battle between two Morning Stars. Before that happened, they must have been using the same language and writing as the subterranean world.

“Mm. What’s your name?” Since the issue with language was solved, Leylin had no desire to search his soul.

The information he needed was too high-levelled, and someone with such a tiny role would not know much.

With Leylin's Dreamscape force field, he was confident he could make this person reveal basic information on the culture and geography unwittingly.

"My- My name is Jo- Jorgian!" The young Magus was silent for a while and then stated his name.

"Your name is very unique!" Leylin commented. It wasn't unexpected for the social customs of the underground world to be different from Magi on the surface.

"By the way, where is this... What's the world outside like?"

Leylin asked without holding back. A hazy force field was produced from his body. This was the ability he had gained after undergoing dreamscape modification, and he possessed powerful illusory strength.

Ever since he had gotten this, Leylin would not search souls or any similar methods unless it was truly necessary.

A Magus who played around with souls would not have a good name in the Magus World. When unnecessary, Leylin still wished to maintain his reputation.

A good reputation was still a benefit. If used well, he might even obtain unexpected rewards.

"This is the Thunderbird region, and rumoured to be the

holyland of the Lyas family...” After Leylin’s words, Jorgian first looked daze, eyes losing focus, before he began to disclose everything unwittingly.

The more he heard, the more Leylin looked solemn.

“Poor little guy! He’s been enticed into adventuring into someone else’s restricted area...” After he’d listened to everything, Leylin watched Jorgian, eyes full of pity.

‘This little guy has definitely fallen into some huge conspiracy...’

However, this was none of his business. He’d found out that this was the territory of the Arthur Empire underground, and this was a massive empire. There were large numbers of other races outside, and had a surface area countless times larger than Twilight Zone.

In the Arthur Empire, there had never been a lack of Morning Star ranks. There were even rumours of Radiant Moon Magi.

Such good news allowed Leylin to confirm that there was a huge possibility of this place being the complete first layer of the underground.

“Hm?” After Leylin got all the intel he wanted, Jorgian immediately looked alert, and then turned sorrowful, “My apologies... at the thought of my companions, I became absent-minded...”

In his memories, Leylin had only asked why he had come to these ruins. He, who thought back to his comrades, was lost in thought.

A sad feeling rose in his heart, and he did not suspect any changes to his memories.

When it came to manipulating memories, Leylin was at the level of a grandmaster. This little Magus had had his memories altered and yet not discovered it at all.

As long as Leylin wanted to, he could work out a brand new set of memories from childhood to adulthood for any Magus below Morning Star without the other party noticing.

This was obviously something normal Radiant Moons or even Breaking Dawn Monarchs could do, but with the A.I. Chip's abilities to simulate reality, it just took more time and effort on Leylin's end.

"Alright, Mister Jorgian! I understand all you've gone through. Forgive me for my bluntness, but this is a place you really shouldn't be in. It's better for you to leave with me!"

Leylin took several steps forward. In exchange for the intel he had been given, he didn't mind saving the boy on the way and send him out of the ruins.

"Mm, thank you so much, my lord!" Jorgian's eyes were full of



gratitude as he followed closely behind Leylin, as if afraid he would be left behind.

After all the dangers today, he knew very well that if Leylin did not bring him along, he would be trapped in the ruins sooner or later and die by the hands of the mechanisms.

.....

Hualala! Numerous pitch-black lightning formed a cage with all types of beasts roaring.

A black dot the size of sesame constantly grew in size amidst the lightning and eventually turned into two figures, dashing out while braving the lightning.

“Alright, we’re out!”

Leylin shook his robes and put Jorgian, who was in his arms, down.

“We’re... out?” He still looked dazed. He had never known how dangerous the ruins were. Things had been smooth-sailing when he had entered, but while exiting, they had met with many dangers, especially the lightning jail at the exit. He’d remembered that when he had first arrived, there was no such spell pattern sealed here.

Seeing this, he was extremely relieved. If not for Leylin, he would probably die in the ruins even if he had nine lives.

Jorgian couldn't help but look at the black structures behind him. The ruins were now like a monster with its mouth wide open, swallowing the lives of all adventurers.

“My lord, do you think... we should... leave now?”

Jorgian asked carefully. He'd grown to understand Leylin's terrifying abilities after following him around.

“That's not possible now.”

Leylin shook his head.

“Why?” Jorgian could not understand, and his expression quickly changed.

A few streaks of blue figures appeared around them at some point, surrounding them.

# Chapter 688 - Thorned Thunderbird

---

“How brazen of you, intruding into the restricted area of the Lyers Family!” The Magi surrounding Leylin and Jorgian wore robes and had long, ocean blue hair. To his surprise, these silver-pupiled, fair-skinned people had an obvious aura from a bloodline on them. They were a group of Warlocks!

‘Bloodline Warlocks! I never thought there’d be Warlock inheritances in the subterranean world!’ Light flashed in Leylin’s eyes.

‘No, this is only to be expected. After all, the subterranean world is much more vast than the surface world, and it’s normal for there to be ancient Warlock inheritances. I just never expected that there would be Warlocks protecting the other side of the tunnel in the Eternal Plains pocket dimension...’

Leylin surveyed his surroundings. The Warlocks surrounding them looked very young, but this was a side-effect of their bloodlines. They were in face much older, and the aged aura created a huge contrast with their handsome faces.

‘They’re at least rank 2... Also, this bloodline?’ A light blue tint covered Leylin’s eyes. The surrounding Warlocks were just as shocked seeing that two people had been able to exit the restricted area.

;A.I. Chip, scan their bloodlines and match it with the database!; Leylin commanded inside his mind.

These Warlocks were under Morning Star, and did not notice any of Leylin's actions. The A.I. Chip quickly obtained what he wanted.

[Collection of bloodline data complete. Comparing with database... Determined to be ancient Thorned Thunderbird.]

Immediately after, the A.I. Chip showed all information on the ancient Thorned Thunderbird.

[Beep! Ancient Thorned Thunderbird, rank 6 being! Rumoured to be descendant of the primordial Thunderbird. Possesses powerful thunder and lightning abilities and soundwave attacks. Likes to dwell in areas with plentiful metal elementals. Evaluation: Incomparably dangerous. The nemesis of ancient metal race!]

"Bloodline Warlocks from rank 6 beings! No wonder I felt the bloodline giving me some slight pressure!"

Leylin watched the surrounding Warlocks with some pity in his eyes, "It's a pity that the Warlocks' bloodlines have weakened quite a bit and can't be purified to its original rank 6!"

The Warlocks surrounding Leylin might have bloodline from a

rank 6 ancient Thorned Thunderbird, but their status was similar to the Black Horrall Snake Warlocks of the Ouroboros Clan. The bloodline had weakened and lost all the power from their ancestors.

“However, since they exist, there must be powerful people within this Warlock family. I should be able to purify their bloodline...”

Leylin shot a glance at these Warlocks with malicious intent, giving them a feeling as if calamity loomed.

“However, this is the Lyers family’s restricted area, and you intentionally got these adventurers to enter. Seems like there’s some unspeakable secret inside...”

Leylin thought about it for a while and did not eliminate the possibility of the Lyers family giving out this news in order to get blood sacrifices, attracting adventurers to come and explore.

If that was the case, it would explain why Jorgian and his crew were obviously low-ranked, but could enter the ruins without obstructions.

“Why are you still talking to them? All Magi who sully our Lyers Family have only the ending of death!”

The Warlocks of the Lyers family were urged on by someone like a leader and immediately chose to attack without hesitation. Fine, minute static electricity force field were produced from their

bodies, forming a powerful domain that kept Leylin and Jorgian within. Leylin could practically feel their bloodlust, and they evidently wanted to keep them here no matter the cost.

“This spell?” Seeing these Warlocks all having blue electricity shooting everywhere that formed a large-scaled static electricity field that merged and amplified each other, Leylin looked slightly interested.

[Rank 1 spell: Static electricity field! Determined to be opponent's rank 1 innate spell that can produce static electricity force field on a large scale. Energy consumption at the minimum, and has effects of amplifying each other.]

The A.I. Chip transmitted the functions of the spell at this moment.

“Kill him!” The leader donned a layer of lightning armour, and two gigantic blue bright wings stretched behind his back, causing his speed to suddenly increase. He almost turned into a streak of blue lightning.

[Rank 2 Thorned Thunderbird Warlock Bloodline Spell determined to be: Lightning Armour, rank 3 bloodline spell: Wings of Lightning.]

Through the opponent's bloodline activities and spells, the A.I. Chip managed to gather much information, and large amounts of data was showed in front of Leylin.

“As expected of an ancient rank 6 bloodline. These innate abilities are very practical!”

Leylin sighed slightly. It was a pity that there were no Morning Star Warlocks in their midst. No matter how useful a spell, they were pointless if they did not reach a certain level.

“Break!” Leylin spat out a syllable and terrifying darkness-type elemental particles spread like a rising tide.

Surging energy particles thundered as they turned into a giant beast with a weapon, attacking the opponents' joint static electricity forcefield.

Tss tss! Blue sparks flashed and mixed with streams of black gas. Immediately after, there was a dull sound of thunder, and even the ground shook.

Miserable cries rose and fell in succession, and the Thunderbird Warlocks who were only rank 1 and 2 crumpled to the ground.

Chiu chiu! The leader in the air who saw this emitted a piercing cry, turning and then transforming into lightning and leaving.

“Get down here!”

Leylin's eyes were never on him, but a faint image of a double-headed black snake had already appeared on him, four blood-red eyes giving him a dead stare.

"Hss hss!" The snake kept flicking its tongue and quickly drew this leader into its mouth. Blue lightning flashed everywhere and then disappeared.

The double-headed black snake meandered to the ground and spat out the leader. However, he had already fainted, and the lightning around his body had disappeared without a trace.

"Too weak. Much too weak! This extent..."

Leylin narrowed his eyes. A bloodline like this wasn't enough to even arouse his interest to extract it.

"My-my lord! We..." At the other side, Jorgian, who had seen Leylin and Lyers fighting had been so afraid that he'd fainted before.

The Lyers family's reputation was like a sun in the sky within the Arthur Empire. It was said they had a Morning Star in charge. Wasn't this Magus seeking death by provoking him?

However, the crux of the issue was that whether Leylin or the Lyers family, Jorgian could not afford to offend either side and almost burst into tears.



“I’ll wait for a while more here. Leave first!” Leylin shooed him away.

“How– How can I leave my lord behind to confront the Lyers family?” He hesitated, but Leylin obviously could tell.

“Once their reinforcements come, it wouldn’t be just these sort of low-ranked characters. What, you mean you’re thinking of going against the Lyers family with me?”

Leylin had a half-smile on his face as he watched Jorgian.

“No, no, my lord! I shall take my leave first!” He immediately turned pale and fled at lightning-speed after bowing, as if there was some ferocious beast chasing him.

Watching his back, Leylin shook his head. He was just a tiny character after all, and if he really did stay, unafraid of death, he’d definitely be affected . Choosing to leave was a rather sensible decision.

Now, Leylin could not be bothered with this boy. He watched a trace of lightning shooting over from the distance, a smile lighting up his face slightly.

“Chiu chiu!” It was as if tens of thousands of birds were calling at the same time. When the lightning disappeared, there was another figure in the sky.

“You attacked them?” The newcomer was very young, and his brows were furrowed in his anger. He’d evidently been angered by the miserable state of the many Lyers family Warlocks on the ground.

“They offended me. I’ve been benevolent enough not to kill them. If I did things like I usually do, they can only descend to the underworld and repent for their sins!” Leylin shrugged.

Huala! White electric current streaked past, as if tearing through the sky. In mid air, the Warlock’s overbearing and furious words could be heard, “Good, very good! Then I’ll let you see a bit of my ‘benevolence’!”

Terrifying energy from someone who had reached the realm of a rank 4 Warlock and attaining Morning Star burst from his body. Countless dark clouds converged, enveloping the whole region.

Rumble! Eight blue pillars of light instantly descended. Boundless lightning shot out from the pillars, forming a large purgatory.

Lightning and fire gathered in purgatory and trapped Leylin within.

[Rank 4 Thorned Thunderbird Warlock Bloodline Spell determined to be: Berserk Lightning Prison.]

The A.I. Chip projected the opponent's spell before Leylin at this moment.

“A rank 4 spell. Looks like I have to get a little serious!”

Leylin's expression became grimmer. He, who now was struck by the Curse Mark of Ten Thousand Snakes, could only display Morning Star strength and was on par with the opponent.

Chi chi! Huala! Numerous electricity snakes surrounded by flames opened their mouths full of blood and devoured Leylin.

Dazzling lightning was very harsh on the eyes, but a hint of black rays leaked from the electricity.

The black radiance grew until it cut through the lightning, turning into an illusory, terrifying giant serpent and appeared behind Leylin.

“Hss...” The serpent had shackles with metallic stings, but it still paid that no mind as it snarled at the lightning clouds in the sky.

“Warlock? Such a terrifying an evil bloodline force?”

From within the thunderclouds, the Warlocks' bewildered voice could be heard. Following which, the voice silenced and turned into the piercing sounds of rumbling.

Chiu chiu!

A streak of dazzling blue radiance abruptly burst forth from the clouds, landing on Leylin's shoulder.

“Booming Thunderclap!” The opponent's voice only reached Leylin after the electricity struck Leylin.

# Chapter 689 - Meeting And Sneak Attack

---

Since he was struck by an attack that was faster than the speed of sound, Leylin could only hear it after the fact. His expression showed his confusion as he glanced at his shoulder.

His black scholar robes had already been torn up, revealing fine snake scales. However, they were now charred, and a few pieces had even fallen off. Traces of dark red could be seen where he was wounded.

“Not bad, you could break through my defences!” Leylin looked slightly stunned. Following that, terrifying black streams of gas converged on the serpentine figure behind him. It swelled up, flicking its tail forth.

Boom! A pillar of lightning broke down, and as if some chain reaction had been triggered the seven other pillars of lightning fell in succession, causing the Berserk Lightning Prison to crumble.

The giant serpent bellowed with rage, the sound waves engulfing the entire area and causing the thunderclouds in the air to be torn apart to reveal a tremendous bird.

The giant bird was dark blue, with each spike of a feather lustrous like steel. Streaks of blue lightning twirled around the bird, and it seemed magnificent, its eyes glinting with wisdom.

“The ancient Thorned Thunderbird? No, it’s just an immature one that still isn’t at its final stage.” Warlocks with high-ranked

bloodlines might have Morning Star Arcane Arts that allowed atavism, but they could only transform into a young version of their source creature. Bevis was the same. The Misty Fog Giant he'd transformed into was only an adolescent. Only after reaching the peak of their bloodline could a Warlock have the full might of the ancient creature.

The Thorned Thunderbird was a rank 6 being in ancient times, while the Warlock here was only at rank 4. The Thorned Thunderbird that he'd transformed into was naturally still young and immature.

However, it was a rank 6 being after all, and even if it was at its immature phase, it still surpassed many rank 4 beings.

Chiu chiu! The tremendous thunderbird called out as it soared in the air. Boundless lightning fell with each flap of its wings.

The electric arcs on his body grew increasingly dazzling till they enveloped his whole body and turned him into a large lightning bird. With ear-piercing rumbling, the lightning bird swooped down. Lightning flashed in the surrounding area constantly, creating a terrifying region of lightning.

"Interesting!" A smile adorned Leylin's lips and the Kemoyin Emperor's figure grew even more distinct, as if the ancient creature had truly come to this world.

"Hss..." The giant serpent snarled and collided with the lightning bird, giving rise to countless ripples.

Rumble! The earth tremored and energy undulations swept through the region. The smoke in the air formed a huge mushroom cloud, frightening power extending into the sky. The bedrock cracked, and large amounts of boulders that were tens of thousands of tonnes tumbled down to form giant pits upon collision.

Once all the smoke and dust settled, the area where Leylin had been now only had a large depression and pit. Much of the rock had just melted to form a unique crystal.

“Hah, hah...” One figure walked out from within the pit holding a black one.

“Damn it! If it weren’t for the Allsnake Curse, this mere Morning Star Warlock wouldn’t be able to harm me at all!” Fury was evident in Leylin’s expression. Most of his clothes had been damaged, revealing the muscles below. He cut a sorry figure.

The opposing Morning Star Warlock, on the other hand, had completely fainted and was now held in Leylin’s hands.

“Based on the intel from before, this Morning Star Warlock is only an elder in the Lyers family. There’s still a Warlock who’s surpassed Morning Star...” Leylin turned grim, “Kid, you’re in luck! You might not have to die here today, but...”

Pak! Leylin tossed him to the ground casually, and a large syringe appeared in his hands.

“Though your body is only at rank 4, the blood concentration isn’t half bad. It’s enough to be used for samples and as a guinea pig.”

.....

A short distance away from these black ruins were dark hills. Lights were reflected from atop the hills, making it as dazzling as crystal. These hills had peaks made out of metal, and had at their heart a metallic castle that stood tall.

This was the Lyers Warlock Family’s main base and where their headquarters was.

“It’s rumoured that the Thorned Thunderbird likes places where high-grade metallic ores are in the surroundings. Looks like it’s true!” Leylin floated in the air, observing the large castle. The Warlock from before looked dispirited while being held in Leylin’s hand, eyes full of terror.

“Your humble servant, Leylin Farlier, is here to greet the Lyers family!” Leylin transmitted with a thick and low voice, not bothering with the Warlock in his hands. His voice resounded in the castle, making contact with endless spiritual force and soul force.

“Who is it?” “What a terrifying and sinister bloodline aura!” “Hm? Look who he has in his hands!” “He dares take an elder of our Lyers family captive. How bold!”



Various roars mixed with spiritual force charged out, but Leylin easily evaded them.

These people who were a dime a dozen obviously could not draw his interest. What Leylin focused on was the aura hidden deep inside the castle. This person had obviously passed through the threshold of Morning Star and entered rank 5.

Leylin floated in the air and waited for a long while. There were quite a few Warlocks with varying abilities that came out, but the owner of that aura wasn't even alarmed.

Leylin thought about it for a while, and his rank 5 Kemoyin Emperor figure appeared behind him. A trace of his Half Moon soul force surged out like a huge dragon.

The power of someone at the same rank immediately got the other party's attention. Violent lightning caused the earth to rumble and mountains to break as a powerful conscient came over.

"Who dares disturb my sleep?" Terrifying rank 5 aura was transmitted, wreaking havoc like a storm. Those Warlocks knelt down respectfully, "Grand Elder!"

A streak of lightning was like a godly sword that broke through the first floor and appeared in the air, revealing the figure of a middle-aged man.

His features were characteristic of the Lyers family— Dark blue long hair, silver pupils and slightly pale skin. However, his expression was ripe with arrogance, as if nothing in the world was worth troubling himself over.

After seeing Leylin, his expression grew less intense, “A rank 5 Warlock?! Why have you come to create trouble in our Lyers family? Hm, no, that aura...”

“My friend, how about we go to a remote area to discuss this further?” Leylin chuckled and flung the Warlock in his hands into the group of people, creating chaos amongst their ranks.

“Come with me!” The Warlock took a look at Leylin and disappeared like lightning, moving like a meteor.

Leylin followed behind him, large amounts of black gas surrounding his body. He did not move urgently, but while he didn't seem fast he kept up with the Warlock with no signs of falling behind.

The Warlock ahead brought Leylin along to a large oceanic lake before stopping.

“Good day, Sir. I am Leylin Farlier, and I hope...” Leylin began to speak, but his expression suddenly changed.

Dark blue lightning crashed down once more, and an attack that surpassed the Morning Star realm struck down. Booming

Thunderclap appeared once more.

However, this time the spell's destructive ability was far more powerful than before. There were now five rays that attacked from different angles, sealing off Leylin's path of retreat. Afterwards, a gigantic Thorned Thunderbird phantom appeared behind Eam, widening its sharp beak in Leylin's direction.

Terrifying sound waves brought with them the power of thunder and lightning, "Rank 5 spell— Thorned Thundercry!"

The opponent had cast the spells quickly, and each one was hidden quite well. He practically didn't have to think at all. If this was a regular rank 5 Warlock, not having enough time to defend would be a very dangerous problem. However, Leylin was different, and his thoughts moved faster than electricity.

Just at the moment the lightning was about to reach his body, the tremendous phantom of a Kemoyin Emperor burst forth and wound itself around Leylin. A gigantic black hole began to form in the snake's mouth.

"Rank 5 Kemoin Emperor innate skill— Devour!" The five streaks of lightning were instantly sucked into the black hole, turning into an unending stream of life force.

Following that, piercing sound waves that were mixed with lightning and fire rushed forth and smashed into the large Kemoyin Emperor. Scales flew everywhere, but then regenerated at a rapid pace.

After these two waves of attacks passed, the Kemoyin Emperor figure dissipated to reveal Leylin who was not the least bit injured.

“Sir... What is the meaning of this?” Leylin asked in a cold voice, the iciness extending to his gaze.

‘A.I. Chip, if I completely undo the seal, how long can I fight?’ Leylin asked inside his head. His bloodline was still sealed, and dealing with a Morning Star Warlock was already quite tough on him. With a rank 5 bloodline Warlock with the bloodline of the ancient Thorned Thunderbird against him, things were even worse.

However, if the opponent wasn’t tactful, Leylin had no choice but to completely unseal himself and teach him an unforgettable lesson, perhaps by ensuring his fall.

[Beep! Allsnake Curse will increase absorption rate if Host undoes seal. Maximum resistance time: 7min 34s]

the A.I. Chip loyally intoned.

‘In other words, after I undo my seal, I’ll need to eliminate the opponent in seven minutes and then reseal my bloodline? Even if I manage that, there should be terrible consequences. A.I. Chip!’

[Beep! Each unsealing will reduce the time left to the curse flaring up by 7 months, even if successfully resealed.]

the A.I. Chip intoned.

# Chapter 690 - Enhancing Lightning Runes

---

Leylin had previously sealed off his bloodline force to stop the curse from flaring up. Naturally, he could undo the seal in times of danger and restore his strength to the peak of rank 5. However, the curse would absorb even more energy from him every time he did so.

Even if he successfully sealed himself up again, the time he had left would be brought down by about seven months. Leylin had only two years left. Unless it was absolutely necessary, he definitely would not do this.

However, he would have no choice but to use this method in times of crisis, even if the temporary help resulted in long-term danger. Leylin's cold pupils were fixed on the rank 5 Warlock in front of him.

“Good, very good! Since you were able to take on my attack, you have the right to speak to me on equal grounds!”

Unexpectedly, the great elder revealed a rigid smile, “Let me introduce myself. My name is Eam, Eam Lyers. Rank 5 Warlock and the grand elder of the Lyers family!”

Seeing the opponent withdrawing all the electricity around his body, Leylin was rendered speechless. He could tell that this Eam was definitely a very arrogant Warlock. Unless he showed enough power to threaten him, it would be impossible to speak to him on equal terms.

Now, after attacking and finding out Leylin's abilities, he suddenly was more approachable.

Though still on his guard, Leylin was more than willing to avoid needless conflicts, "I've already introduced myself before. My name is Leylin! Lord Eam's way of greeting others is really quite unique."

"Hehe..." Eam merely smiled in answer to Leylin's words and did not address them. Instead, he observed Leylin with interest, "You aren't a Magus of the subterranean world, are you?"

"Indeed." There was no way for Leylin to hide this. Were he a rank 2 or 3 Magus, he could conceal himself from Eam since it would make sense for there to be no mention of him anywhere. But a rank 5 Warlock of unknown origins was rather suspicious.

Given that this was an inherited bloodline, how could there be no information on it? Would the Lyers family not know beforehand about a Warlock family with a rank 5 serpent bloodline?

Leylin had burst out of nowhere, and this rank 5 Warlock had no information about him. That led Eam to his conclusion.

"As expected, my Lord is a Magus from the world above ground!" Seeing Leylin admitting this, Eam nodded and looked confident.

"Yes, I do come from the surface, and I'm the head of the Magi

organisations in control of the passage to the surface. Lord Eam shouldn't be any ordinary Warlock, right? The passage in the Thunderbird Holy Land..." Leylin shot Eam a glance.

To expand the passage between the surface and underground, he needed to find something like a spokesperson here. It seemed that Eam and the Lyers Family suited this role well.

Not only was he very powerful, there was nothing he didn't know about the passage. More importantly, they had long since gained control of the exit.

"We obviously know about it. In actuality, it's a secret that my ancestor found out. Ever since then, our Lyers family has settled here, and we've been trying to make contact with the surface that's been sealed from us..." Though Eam was speaking in very vague terms, Leylin could imagine the carnage involved. Things like vying for this territory, trying to damage the seal and attracting adventurers to become blood sacrifices here were perhaps merely the tip of the iceberg.

There was still much that was unknown regarding what they had attempted on the sly. What was most crucial was the fact that they had persevered for so long.

"Since you were able to come over, the seal at the surface world should be about to crumble right?" Eam looked at Leylin, frowning slightly, "Based on my estimations, the seal should still hold for a period of time..."



“Actually, I secretly came over through a crack in the seal. On the surface, the seal can still hold for about a century...”

“A century? That seems rather long. Did anything go wrong with the sacrifices? Or was the construction of coordinates on both ends not done well, resulting in a huge energy consumption?” Eam’s expression went dark while Leylin maintained his silence, not admitting that he’d tampered with it.

“But for Sir Leylin to pass through the cracks in the seal must mean that your attainments in spell formations must be at the level of grandmasters...” Eam’s gaze towards Leylin had now turned more gentle. People who were grandmasters in fields of magic were highly regarded.

“This tiny ability really isn’t worth mentioning. Well then... Since we own one end of the passage each and both have great influence in our respective regions...” Leylin mentioned what he had been preparing to say for a long time.

“Forming an alliance is beneficial to both of us!” Eam spoke straightforwardly, the smile on his arrogant face widening. He stepped forward while beaming and extended his right arm towards Leylin. “Welcome, partner!”

“It’s my honour,” Leylin grinned and extended his right arm as well.

The two hands grasped each other, and golden light flowed out. Fine golden letters were like ants as they crawled everywhere.

An alliance between Magi was even more important and solemn than an agreement. Most of the time, a very serious ceremony would be conducted, and even a third party would be invited to be the witness.

Leylin and Eam were both rank 5 Warlocks. While they didn't need to go to the trouble and do all that, a basic oath was required. However, what they were agreeing to now was a general purpose oath, and the details would be determined through discussions afterwards by their subordinates.

After the oath was done with, the two of them had gained a tacit understanding. They laughed, feeling like their relationship had gotten better.

Though this sort of oath could be violated, they each had control of their sides of the passage, which signified a great amount of benefits. Leylin would not want to destroy this unless he'd gone mad.

As for how things would progress after this... That probably wouldn't have much to do with him anymore.

By that time, he would either have broken through his bloodline shackles and soared into the sky leaving Eam in the dust, or be sealed to death by the curse mark. He, whose bloodline force had been completely severed from him, would die.

Whatever happened, there would not be any issues here.

“Sir Eam...” Leylin laughed as he spoke.

“Just call me Eam, Leylin, you’re qualified to do so!” Eam chuckled, though his facial muscles were obviously a little stiff. However, that just made this moment all the more rare.

“Alright, Eam! I’m quite interested in the spell you used just now and that instantaneous effect...” Leylin smiled and asked.

The instantaneous lightning spell was very frightening, and Eam had been able to produce five streaks. Leylin was very interested in this technique.

“Oh, this?” Eam nodded, “We of the Lyers family inherited the bloodline of the Thorned Thunderbird, which means we’re proficient in lightning-type spells. Booming Thunderclap is one of the Arcane Arts we created from experiments where Warlocks at Morning Star and above combine different innate spells. While the might isn’t as powerful as a real Morning Star Arcane Art, it’s quite effective.”

Leylin couldn’t help but nod. Experiments of combining bloodline spells and creating a correct Arcane Art might sound easy, but was definitely far from it.

A Morning Star Arcane Art was the fusion of rank 1 to 4 innate spells. The opponent’s Booming Lightning Thunder only used one or two bloodline spells and, matched with specific energy undulations and other spell models, formed a unique Arcane Art.

“Though I don’t mind telling you the principle behind the Arcane Art, it’s a pity that you aren’t of the bloodline of the Thorned Thunderbird. You can’t use it...” Arcane Arts like these usually needed specific bloodline spells, and some needed the usage of bloodline force. That was why Eam wasn’t afraid of revealing this information.

“Actually, I don’t want to know about that. Rather, I’m interested in the technique where you amplified a streak of lightning five times...” Leylin said as he hastily shook his head. He could not express interest in bloodline spells, or else he’d be thought to be coveting Eam’s bloodline. No matter how good their relationship might be, this would entail burying a thorn in Eam’s heart.

What Leylin truly wanted to know was how he had amplified the lightning force.

With the A.I. Chip, he could clearly see that Eam had only produced one Booming Thunderclap, and it was only slightly more powerful than that of the Morning Star Warlock. However, it had transformed after passing through some carved inscription that was like a spell formation, and been amplified till it was almost terrifying.

“Oh, that!” Eam patted his Magus robes in pride, a ring of dazzling light floating around his body and creating a gigantic ring of lightning. Unbelievably large lightning runes that exceeded Leylin’s expectations undulated out with a complicated radiance.

“This is one of the works that I’m most proud of!” Eam watched the complicated lightning runes and seemed to be intoxicated.

“These are runes that I obtained from a primordial lightning tree. It seemed to have been created naturally, yet held some mysterious strength. I couldn’t copy the strength, so all I could do was embroider it onto my robes...”

The silver lightning ring spell formation returned and shrank to become a dazzling silver rune, emitting a splendid luster on Eam’s Magus robes.

“With this Primordial Magic Robe, other lightning type spells are amplified a little as well, but it can increase the might of Booming Thunderclap fivefold!” Eam lovingly touched the robes he was wearing, completely engrossed.

“If being in bliss is an ability, then Eam, you must be the darling of the heavens!” Leylin smiled slightly and spoke flatteringly, a trace of blue flashing in his eyes.

# Chapter 691 - Alliance And The Return

---

A magic robe made from an antique oddity was extremely fear-inducing, even though the effect of amplifying the spell fivefold was only unique to a certain type of spell.

Leylin, of course, wouldn't be so silly as to ask Eam for the Primordial Magic Robe so that he could study it for a while. He would definitely be met with rejection. He didn't even entertain such a thought, instead using a better method to study the spell formation.

‘A.I. Chip, how's it going?’ Leylin asked secretly.

[Beep! Magic robe spell formation has been recorded. Determined to be an antique lightning rune, 89.7% of it usable!]

The A.I. Chip sent its feedback faithfully. At the same time, a humongous collection of lightning ring spell formation images was projected in front of Leylin's eyes. Over a hundred thousand lightning runes were clustered together, densely packed and appearing incomparably exquisite.

‘Such a spell formation... It shouldn't be limited to just Booming Thunderclap or even lightning spells; it should be able to be used at other levels as well...’ Leylin's pupils shone brightly. ‘Eam can't do it himself. Even though he has the spell formation he can't perform a systematic break-down or derivations. After all, the brain of a Magus cannot be compared to a technologically-

advanced brain. The operational load involved is sufficient to make him crumble in despair, but all of this isn't a problem for me!'

At this thought, a smear of excitement spread across his face.

"Great! Let's return, Leylin. In order to celebrate our alliance, I intend to hold a majestic banquet at my residence!"

Eam's pupils contained a joyous look, and he seemed to think that Leylin was also in high-spirits because of their strong alliance.

"I would be honored!" Leylin smiled modestly, as his body floated up and he returned alongside Eam to the Lyers family's headquarters, which was a castle in the Metal Mountains.

.....

Night fell. Although the subterranean world didn't have a concept of night and day, Leylin continued to artificially use spells or sun stones to adjust his biological clock to work and rest.

The lights went out in order, or rather became more dim. The castle, where the grand feast was just held, started to quiet down as though it had entered a deep sleep.

Leylin, who was cordially received by the Lyers family, was now in a luxurious bedroom. The bedroom was decorated exquisitely. All the objects in it showed indications of being maintained by

spells, and they appeared to be very precious.

After sending away a beautiful maid, Leylin laid on the sofa by himself, his pupils twinkling with the radiance of the A.I. Chip.

[Beep! Antique amplification lightning rune has been recorded. Beginning analysis...]

With the A.I. Chip's horrifyingly fast operational capacity, the lightning spell formation that Leylin had scanned previously was now being broken down continuously at lightning speed. The many lightning runes distorted themselves and looked just like tadpoles. They were firmly recorded by the A.I. Chip, which analyzed their specific functions.

Although this spell formation contained over a hundred thousand runes, and could be said to be extremely complicated and refined, it was an easy task for Leylin, who had the A.I. Chip. It was only a matter of time.

Leylin, who was temporarily idle, recalled the scene during the banquet, and a smile couldn't help but creep onto the corners of his lips.

The Lyers family was certainly not very well-adjusted to this unfamiliar Magus. Previously, he'd fought so hard with them, but after a trip out he had turned into a distinguished guest.



This was especially so for the Warlock that Leylin had held captive previously. Seeing Leylin was practically like meeting a ghost, and he almost made a run for it, which was a great blunder.

Regardless, Magi and Warlocks were all humans who turned superior and skillful with age. After Eam announced the news of his alliance with Leylin and the other affiliated powers, they had lost themselves initially but managed to adjust themselves to it soon after.

Even the Morning Star Warlocks who had committed a mistake earlier specially came over to apologize later on, and regained the graceful bearing unique to Morning Star Warlocks. This left Leylin secretly impressed.

Furthermore, although Eam had kept the information about Leylin hailing from the surface confidential, he didn't cover up Leylin's identity as a rank 5 Warlock. After all, not any random Magus was able to form an alliance with the Lyers family.

When Leylin's status as a rank 5 Warlock was declared, the other elders from the Lyers family immediately cleared their doubts about Eam's decision, who was their Grand Elder.

This was a rank 5 Warlock! Such a big shot was not a common sight in the Arthur Empire. For example, the only rank 5 in their entire family was their Grand Elder, Eam.

On average, the strength of a Warlock far exceeded that of a Magus of the same rank. There was simply no doubt about that.

Therefore, Leylin alone was qualified enough to be an ally of the Lyers family. Even without elder Eam's subtle revelations to back him up, Leylin the Warlock possessed a great amount of influence.

“However... They're really being overly enthusiastic...” Leylin stroked his chin. Recalling the unmasked anticipation in the maids' eyes, he sighed rather helplessly.

He was now busy analyzing the ancient lightning runes. Where would he find the time and effort to do such things?

Besides, although bloodline Warlocks could bear successors with bloodline energy when coupling with Magi or even some humans, for some unknown reason Warlocks with differing bloodlines could never produce descendants of mixed-blood.

According to Leylin's conjectures, this was because the bloodline energies of both parties would fight too much, and thus mixed-blood descendants were not possible.

But if their bloodlines were from identical sources, such as if they were both Kemoyin Warlocks, for example, this wouldn't pose a problem, and the purity and saturation of their descendants' bloodline was guaranteed.

Leylin thought about something else. ‘If Eam doesn't mind, I could probably intermarry an average Magus in the future, and obtain the bloodline of the Thorned Thunderbird. After all, this is the ancient bloodline of a rank 6 creature. Even if they want our Giant Kemoyin Serpent bloodline in exchange, it would be worth

it...'

Although the Ouroboros Clan was made up of descendants of Kemoyin Warlocks and other bloodlines, there were no Warlocks within a few external organizations.

Leylin had only transformed Krupp's bloodline in the south coast. There were others who had gathered by his side over these few days, people who were initially descendants of the Farlier Family. Most of them were average humans, but it was still feasible if they were to intermarry with this bloodline.

'But why does it not seem very possible? Even if it's a concubine's child, it's not very possible that they would allow them to marry out of their family. Many Warlocks are incomparably prejudiced when it comes to the orthodox practice of protecting their family's bloodline and preventing it from leaking out...' Leylin felt rather glad after tossing this thought out of his head in an instant.

Fortunately, he hadn't been discovered when he was extracting bloodlines today. Even that Morning Star Warlock was in a disoriented state and had been confused by Leylin's Dreamscape forcefield, leading him to believe that he was weak because of his grave injuries. If Eam knew about this, perhaps there would be more trouble.

'No! He might already know about this, just that he's restraining his emotions. If that's the case, I'll have to adopt some measures in preparation...' Leylin stroked his chin, his pupils showing that he was in deep thought.

Even though they had already established an alliance, he didn't trust Eam very much, and it was probably the same for Eam as well.

In actuality, if not for the fact that both of them happened to be situated at both ends of the passage, each controlling the other's weak point, this alliance wouldn't have been established so easily.

Both parties would put up the necessary preventive measures.

.....

“Leylin, are you serious about not staying here longer?”

“No, it's really fine!”

Leylin and Eam were now standing where the Thunderbird Holy Land used to be, outside the palace where the passage was.

After briefly inspecting the area, Leylin had gained some knowledge about this region. He wanted to return above ground on the pretext of the energy needed to sustain passage crack being on the verge of exhaustion, and was bidding Eam goodbye.

“The trade between the underground and the surface poses tremendous profits. I believe that both of us will have endless benefits from this exchange. With cooperation from both sides, we

can maintain this mode of transport for our benefits!”

Before he departed, Leylin looked at Eam with a sincere expression in his eyes. “Of course, perhaps you might want to come with me and see what it’s like above ground. Although the Magus World above ground has declined for a long time, it has gradually begun to regain its glory from the ancient times, and there are beings who are not in the least inferior to King Arthur...”

King Arthur was the legendary founder of the Arthur Empire, and was also a Magus of at least rank 6, an equivalent of a Monarch in the central continent.

There was movement in Eam’s pupils. Upon hearing that there were Magi above ground who were not inferior to King Arthur, it seemed as though a different kind of radiance flashed in his shining eyes, a complex emotion that was an amalgamation of restraining fear, anticipation and traces of dread all mixed together.

Eam thought for a while, before shaking his head and refused. “Alright, but that will require a bit of time. There’s a lot of family affairs that I need to tend to due to my long sleep, as well as some preparations before we begin trade. It’s all complicated...”

“Actually, I hope that the people above ground can cooperate with us to break through the seal together. In this manner, things will be a lot more effortless on my end, and we’ll be able to bring forward the time of the passage opening, bringing us much more profits...”

“Of course! I will start on the tasks in this aspect once I return.”

Leylin nodded and gave a slight salute. His actions were incomparably smooth, and his etiquette was so perfect that there was nothing to be picked on, just like an ancient nobleman who had put in hard work and numerous revisions. “Farewell then, Mister Eam!” As he spoke, a ray of light that formed an arched door had already formed behind Leylin.

“I look forward to meeting you again!” Eam nodded, his face expressionless as he resumed his previously proud and aloof image.

Leylin smiled and stepped into the arched door. The radiance vanished with a puff as the place reverted to its dark and tranquil state. Eam stood there, stupefied, his pupils occasionally flashing with all kinds of light. His thoughts were a mystery...

# Chapter 692 - Secretly Sneaking Back

---

Light flashed as Leylin's figure appeared in the central hall of the Eternal River pocket dimension.

Enormous white stone pillars stood erect across the hall, and through the circular open space at the top one could see the light from a Morning Star spell formation.

'This expedition underground was really successful!' Leylin looked around his surroundings. The four void assassins were still strictly adhering to his previous order. He couldn't help but laugh before putting the void assassins and defensive spell formations away.

"Lord Leylin!"

"How's the situation, my Lord?" Once the mechanisms outside were removed, two silhouettes rushed in. They were the highest ranks of the light and dark Magi, Nonov and Anye respectively. The impatience was clear on their faces, yet there was nothing they could do except wait outside.

"This won't do. The seal has been badly damaged. Although I tried my best to mend it, it's still hard to predict whether it can be delayed by a century like I said before. We might only have a few decades left, or even less time..." Leylin said with a straight face, making both Nonov and Anye turn grim.

"Is there no other way, my Lord?" Nonov asked, one last glimmer

of hope in his voice, But the only reply he got was a slow shake of Leylin's head.

.....

Time flew by in the blink of an eye, and more than ten days had passed. Leylin had also concluded his investigation into the Eternal Plains pocket dimension, and returned to his hometown in the Chernobyl Islands.

Krupp had led a few of the remaining Farlier descendants there, successfully regaining control of the territory that originally belonged to the Farlier Family. Under the assistance of numerous external forces, not only had he acquired their old territory back but he'd also expanded it, preparing to build an empire that would belong entirely to the Farlier Family.

Leylin had waited outside the castle that initially belonged to the Farlier Family for days, receiving all of the descendants of the Farlier family. It was only after he put a good deal of arrangements in place that he vanished mysteriously.

What the Farlier family proclaimed to the outside world was that their ancestor had already left the south coast, and had gone to a vaster part of the Magus World.

Although they didn't know if Leylin's departure was true or false, and couldn't confirm whether he would return in the future, both the dark and light Magi heaved a unanimous sigh of relief.



To them, Leylin was a representation of the realisation of a higher realm, but he was also a pair of shackles that bound them.

There was simply no room for a being of Morning Star status in the tiny south coast.

Even the historical Great Magus Serholm mysteriously disappeared after his glory days. According to speculations by Magi later on, he had gone away in search of more vast worlds.

Leylin did not leave behind any methods to break through to Morning Star, which made a few rank 3 Magi feel that it was a great pity. However, having one less contender suppressing them was like taking a burden off their shoulders.

The influential groups within the dark and light Magi cast their sights on the empty land left behind by the Spirit Slaying Sect after they were eliminated. After so many years of unrest, as well as the sudden collapse of the Spirit Slaying Sect after the Gargamel's extermination, an exceedingly plentiful amount of space was left for the dark and light Magi.

Open rivalry and veiled strife centered around the inheritance of the Spirit Slaying Sect, which caused numerous ripples within the dark and light Magi.

The real influential powers such as the Ennea Ivory Ring Tower and the Lighthouse of the Night watched on with a detached point of view, and were even secretly pulling back their powers, preparing to move at any moment.

For these deep-rooted Magus powers, the few decades that Leylin had given them previously was not particularly sufficient for them to move. Just the search for an environment suitable for Magi to survive in outside of the south coast was enough to give them a headache.

Of course, no matter how unpredictable the changes in the south coast would be, the dark and light Magi—and even other wandering Magi—did not dare to evoke the wrath of the Farlier Family.

It was a family that was sheltered by a Morning Star Magus! Krupp, who had been promoted to a rank 2 Warlock, was not someone to be belittled, much less Leylin who might return at any moment. Besides, who knew if Sir Leylin had left some kind of trump card for his own family?

Theoretically, as long as that Magus had bestowed a few of those transparent servants to the Farlier family, they could suppress the entire south coast.

Hence, the powers within the dark and light Magi had unanimously placed the Farlier Family at the top of their lists of people they could not provoke. The entire Chernobyl Islands was even seen as out of bounds to all Magi. The Farlier Family, along with the empire that they had established, grew stronger and more prosperous with the passing of time...

A bright flame lit up in a pitch-black environment, bringing

white light to its surroundings. Numerous more flames started to burn more and more vigorously, until they eventually formed an arched door.

A masked figure stepped out from the arched door, his body immediately shrouded by a layer of dense black fog.

“Disperse!” Following the voice coming from the figure, the rays of light and undulations immediately faded until they disappeared completely.

“Secret technique: Shadow Stealth!” The figure seemed to be at unease. A rune representing concealment and hiding suddenly flashed within the fog.

Soon after, the entire cloud of fog shook and became completely transparent, blending in with the surroundings.

Under the cover of the fog, the entire silhouette seemed to have penetrated into the shadows in the cracks, making its way through the ruins at lightning speed and avoiding a large number of Warlocks from the Lyers family.

Even a few of the Morning Star elders did not discover the silhouette’s aura, allowing him to escape successfully.

After he was far away from the Thunderbird Holy Land, the dense fog transformed into a black ray of light, and streaked across the horizon like a meteor. It was only after fleeing for a few hours

that the silhouette finally revealed himself.

The man wore golden robes and had a black mask over his face. There was an air of elegance about him, giving him a sense of mystery.

“It doesn’t seem like I’ll be tracked down here,” Leylin exhaled gently. The preparations that the Lyers family had put in place to guard against him were not what he had expected. They weren’t too strict, instead too relaxed.

‘It makes sense anyway. With Eam’s haughty temperament, he must have been certain that even if I could access the passage, I would still have to go through him to interact with the subterranean world, or even dump my goods and establish commercial trade here. Thus, he must have felt secure with the knowledge that he has the upper hand. What a pity that he had the wrong idea from the start...’

Leylin stroked his chin. Entering the subterranean world was a decision that he had made after careful deliberation.

He needed the Purgatory World’s coordinates to travel to it. There were far too many highly-ranked Magi in the central continent, and Leylin could not be at ease at all. Furthermore, not only were the Twilight Zone and the south coast both small in size, the density of elemental particles was too low.

Initially, Leylin was prepared to find a random spot in the endless ocean to build the astral gate and attempt to search for the

Purgatory World. But after seeing the Eternal Plains pocket dimension, he instantly saw a better alternative.

What was different from the worlds above ground was that the first subterranean level was very covert. Even if Magi came chasing after Leylin specifically and followed his footsteps, they might not be able to discover this place.

Besides, the rest of the subterranean world wasn't like the Twilight Zone from before. Even though it was the first level, the area of all the land added together was about the same as the entire central continent. If those Magi wanted to find Leylin here, it would be no different from finding a needle in a haystack.

“Everything has been settled. What's left is the Allsnake Curse...” Leylin inhaled deeply, and his entire being transformed into a ray of light that disappeared into the horizon.

More than ten days later, in a mountain range. This was a desolate mountain commonly seen underground. As it lacked plants and the radiance from a sunstone, the entire mountain was bare. Only a few fungi and vines that didn't require sunlight continued to grow sporadically.

Vast quantities of black rocks and bare soil lay exposed outside the place. There weren't any large organisms on the entire mountain, and even the smaller darkness creatures were basically extinct.

A few rooms had been opened up temporarily in the belly of this

place. Remnants of clay made from mud and the radiance from everlasting spell effects were left on the walls. It was obvious that it hadn't been long since the work here was finished.

Some of the rooms here had been remodelled into bedrooms and study rooms, while the one in the center had been transformed into a gigantic laboratory. A starry blue radiance illuminated the place, but was obstructed by the energy absorption rune on the wall.

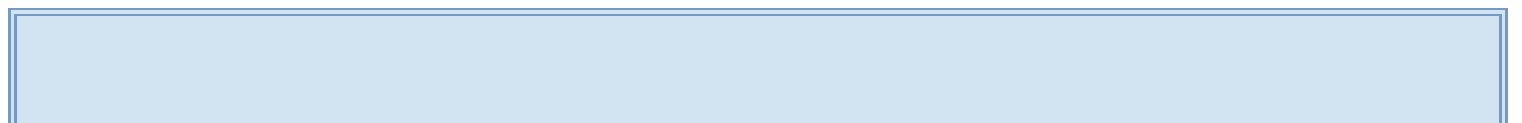
In the heart of the laboratory was a simple and unadorned door made of stone. Blue gems studded the door, just like stars.

Leylin looked at the A.I. Chip's report and the energy composition chart, and couldn't help but exhale a deep breath, "Phew... Finally done. I was running out of materials..."

In front of him was an astral gate which had undergone several transformations by the A.I. Chip, one which Leylin had invested a great amount of his life and family possessions in. It was his hope of breaking through his bloodline shackles!

Upon the thought of his bloodline shackles, Leylin's expression became somewhat gloomy.

"How much time do I have left?" Leylin's voice seemed rather hoarse.



[Beep! According to the current condition of the host body, the countdown to the activation of the Allsnake Curse is 2 years, 4 months, 13 days, 8h 55min 43s.]

The A.I. Chip projected a series of numbers. From the years to the seconds, the numbers were all arranged clearly, and the ‘second’ counter was constantly adjusting itself, making Leylin’s eyelids palpitate.

“I still have two years...” Leylin stroked his chin and started to mutter irresolutely to himself.

The Allsnake Curse was a curse belonging to the Snake Dowager, and was also the nightmare of all Serpent Warlocks. Apart from the Snake Dowager herself personally freeing the person, one could only rely on the help of a rank 9 being or break through the bloodline shackles oneself to escape it.

But to Leylin, the Snake Dowager and rank 9 beings both represented a dead end. It was only through actually breaking the chains on his own bloodline that he could free himself from the Allsnake Curse and completely regain freedom.

And the hope to smashing his bloodline shackles lay in the Purgatory World!

Hence, no matter how much danger the Purgatory World contained, he had to go there...

# Chapter 693 - Remodelling The Mask

---

“Ah, the Purgatory World.....”

Light seemed to flash in Leylin’s eyes, “In the ancient times, it was an extremely famous and formidable world. Not only does it have the Snake Dowager, but there are also numerous existences of the same rank keeping watch there. Moreover, the Purgatory World has not completely declined like the Magus World, as it still possesses the strength of ancient times...”

‘Forget the dangers of the place itself, even finding the Purgatory World’s coordinates is already a considerably huge problem!’ Leylin rubbed his chin in thought, ‘According to the information from the legacy left behind by the Ouroboros clan’s ancestors, it is fundamentally possible to confirm that the Purgatory World is located in the Calm Jade constellation. However, the specific positioning is still a problem!’

The Snake Dowager’s bloodline shackles were still present, and the Ouroboros Clan’s ancestors had never given up on exploring the astral plane.

From the information and experience that they accumulated from generation to generation, and adding the A.I. Chip’s analysis and deduction, it was already possible to lock down the coordinates of the Purgatory World to within one region.

It was a pity that the Calm Jade constellation was just too big. Finding the Purgatory World in it was like finding Leylin’s old



## Earth in the Milky Way.

And what Leylin now wanted to do, was to ascertain the position of that 'earth' within the galaxy's myriad of stars, planets and other celestial bodies.

Without having to be said, this was an extraordinarily tremendous undertaking. Even though Leylin had the A.I. Chip's assistance, he also needed to wait for a very long time. But now, the Snake Dowager's curse evidently did not afford him that luxury.

'And even if the coordinates of the Purgatory World have been found... This curse!' Leylin couldn't help but reach up to his cheeks, feeling the icy sensation emitted by the Mask of the Dreamless.

Although this mask had prevented him from being drawn into Dreamscape, he constantly felt the ill intent from the dream world. This intention possessed tremendous cruelty, and there were constant attacks on the mask's defenses. It appeared like they were waiting for Leylin to relax, or the Mask of the Dreamless to shatter one day.

'The Snake Dowager is the master of the bloodline, I'm afraid her response towards my descendants will be incomparably cruel. Not to mention the Allsnake Curse... Once I appear in the Purgatory World, what if she realises it? Won't I be delivering myself to her door?'

Leylin's face darkened. Despite how much her power had been suppressed in reaching out to the Magus World, she'd still managed to leave him with a fate worse than death as she'd pleased. If he entered the Purgatory World...

Consequently, before going to the Purgatory World, it was absolutely necessary to have an effective method to conceal himself.

“A. I Chip! Establish mission, conceal my aura. Find a way to prevent discovery by the Snake Dowager!” Leylin commanded.

[Beep! Mission established, beginning to collect data, establishing simulation.....]

The A.I. Chip's feedback was very prompt.

‘The preparation needed to leave for the Purgatory World is really too much...’ Leylin knitted his brows in vexation, ‘I need to look for the world's coordinates, develop a concealment technique, and also find time for space concealment technology. I then need to hide myself, and find a method to avoid piquing the interest of the World Will, and then try to escape the guardians...’

If it was a normal small scale world, these inconveniences could be reduced a little, but the Purgatory World that Leylin wanted to go to was a gigantic world. In the ancient era it was second only to the Magus World and the Astral World, and there existed many at

or above rank 7 there. One misstep would mean death... Actually even death would be a luxury, so Leylin absolutely couldn't afford to be careless.

[Simulation complete! Possibility of hiding from the Snake Dowager: 89.7%!]

the A.I. Chip rapidly projected the results, putting a smile on Leylin's face.

“The probability is quite good, what do I need to do?”

[Exporting program... the host needs to commence modification of spiritual force and soul force, and the Mask of the Dreamless must correspondingly be remodelled.....]

The A.I. Chip specifically laid out the steps one by one, forming a checklist that appeared in Leylin's consciousness.

‘Mm... The A.I. Chip has stored materials and the required techniques. All I need is time...’ Leylin stroked his chin: “I don't have much time left, it is necessary to act as quickly as possible...”

.....

Several months had passed in a flash. Leylin had remained inside the belly of the mountain in this period, sequestered from the outside world.

With regards to Leylin, although the subterranean world's resources and enormous knowledge attracted him greatly, under the effect of the Allsnake Curse his priorities had been made clear.

If he couldn't resolve the Allsnake Curse and break through the bloodline shackles then his path forwards would be completely cut off. This was a situation that Leylin absolutely could not endure! Thus, he put his utmost enthusiasm into his work, throwing himself into the preparations...

'I've worked hard for several months, but there's still two things left to do...' Leylin looked at the black petri dish in front of him, within which a lump of dark brown liquid was spreading continuously.

"The mix of corrosive water from the Pool of Lamentation, and ground ancient bones..." White powder was thrown into the petri dish, making the dark brown liquid swell up at once.

"Weeping spirits who creep in the Abyss, in the name of the Nefarious Filthbird, I summon the power of chaos..." The ancient curse was cast, and amidst the bleak and mysterious words the dark brown liquid suddenly transformed into a formless blue mass.

"Finished!" A hint of joy emerged from Leylin's eyes, and he gritted his teeth with resolution in his face.

Bang! He took off the Mask of the Dreamless, throwing it into the dark blue mass.

Very quickly, an evil intent arrived from a distant world. It was as if he was falling, and by the time Leylin understood what was happening he was already in a world of ice. White trees were everywhere, and the ceiling was dotted with shards of barb-like ice.

A white python flicked its scarlet tongue at Leylin.

“Alabaster Devilsnake, we meet again! I thought you would be replaced by a three-headed python this time!” Leylin laughed in the ugly face of the Alabaster Devilsnake, waves of dark red dreamforce appearing in his hands, “I do not have much time, I am afraid I cannot play with you for too long. I need to dispose of you quickly!

“Dreamforce spell—” Leylin’s eyes flashed with a trace of blood red, and piercing rays of light were continuously released from his body.

Misty light wrapped Leylin up along with the Alabaster Devilsnake in a flash. Faint trembles spread to every corner of this dream world.

Schlick! The enormous serpent roared with that sound, and the misty light withdrew to reveal the silhouette of the Alabaster Devilsnake. Only, there were many pure white scales scattered on

the floor, and there was a fresh wound in the serpent's skull. Scarlet blood continuously flowed out, dyeing the white snow red. It was a terrible scene,

“How could I waste the blood of a rank 5 creature?” Leylin lightly chuckled, and the blood floated up into the sky. It turned into crimson pearls that gathered in his palm, forming a ball of dark red.

Hsss— At this moment, the body of an enormous snake faintly emerged outside this icy world. It only exuded a tiny breath, but even that filled Leylin with a sense of heavy oppression.

‘That should be an existence at rank 6 at the least. With these endless reinforcements, I’m afraid even the strongest enemies will be dragged down completely. What a pity...’

Leylin bowed his body a little, as if he was leaving the field. He then called out to the Alabaster Devilsnake and the existence outside, “Farewell, gentlemen!”

Boom! A gentle and pleasant light emerged, and Leylin's shadow disappeared into the light, leaving behind the useless roars of the two pythons.

[Beep! Set time has passed, beginning forceful awakening!]

When Leylin heard the cold, mechanical sound of the A.I. Chip, it was more touching than any music.

“Phew... On the whole, there weren’t any errors in my calculations.” Leylin wiped his cold sweat, in reality, his actions today were certainly risky. Fortunately the end result was not bad, and it seemed as if fate was on his side.

A ball of dark red blood was floating in his hand, undulating with a frightening strength that was faintly mixed with dreamforce.

This was the Alabaster Devilsnake blood that Leylin had collected. Dreamscape was both illusory and real, and if this power of confusion could be used properly it was more frightening than any spell.

Rumble! Rumble! White bubbles frothed around the Mask of the Dreamless in the petri dish, and Leylin threw the ball of blood into it.

Bang! A layer of demonic blood-red flames burnt up the surface of the Mask of the Dreamless. Accompanied by special undulations, traces of golden-red patterns began to slowly appear on the mask.

‘Once dreamforce is intercepted, it’ll take a while for it to dissipate. I need to take advantage of this moment’ Leylin’s eyes reddened as he used many complex alchemy techniques on the mask. The entire laboratory was lit up with brilliant lights and colours.

At the last moment, the Mask of the Dreamless changed its appearance: It could still only cover half the face, but there were many fine lines on it now. On the surface of the mask were even strange patterns of red and gold.

[Beep! Mask of the Dreamless remodelling has been completed!]

The A.I. Chip's voice rang out, and it even displayed the data of the redone mask.

[Magic Item— Mask of the Dreamless (Improved Model)  
Weight: 210g Materials: Loke Alloy, One-Eyed Snake fangs, Alabaster Devilsnake blood. Effects: 1. Can protect from the surveillance of Dreamscape, protect the truesoul from suffering invasion from Dreamscape. 2. Can release Alabaster Devilsnake bloodline and soul force undulations, and conceal the host's information...]

“Success!”

Leylin placed the ice-cold mask on his face, and with a single thought he emitted the aura of the Alabaster Devilsnake.



# Chapter 694 - The Call Of Another World

---

‘I can still get past the common origin of our bloodline force to hide myself from the Snake Dowager like this...’ Leylin stroked his chin in thought.

This was the solution the A.I. Chip had suggested previously. Using the original bloodline’s power, he could interfere with the Snake Dowager’s probes. The rank 5 bloodline of the Alabaster Devilsnake was clearly Leylin’s best choice at present.

‘The method to conceal myself has been resolved, next is the issue of the coordinates!’ Leylin asked the A.I. Chip, ‘How is the analysis of the ancient lightning runes going?’

These were the runes that he had secretly scanned from the Primordial Magic Robe worn by Eam, which had the frightening ability of amplification. Leylin was keenly aware that this kind of amplification ability could be applied to other things, and as a result had ordered the A.I. Chip to continue analysing it.

[Beep! Primordial Magic Robe analysis progress: 100%. 127651 lightning runes have been recorded, 112319 runes fully analyzed. Lightning Amplification spell formation has been completed. Possible to effectively increase the power of Lightning magic by 80-230%!]

The A.I. Chip faithfully gave its analysis.

‘So this is the result of the amplifying magic? After completely analysing it?’ A tinge of regret coloured Leylin’s eyes, ‘Such a pity... I’m not a Magus who specialised in lightning. Even if I demand such Magi to give everything they own in exchange for this, they’ll be willing...’

After analysing and reconstructing it, the A.I. Chip concluded that this Lightning Amplification spell formation wasn’t just limited to Eam Lyers’ Booming Thunderclap. Rather, it could be used to amplify all lightning magic!

Having adapted it for that purpose, the value of these runes increased a millionfold.

As for attracting those Magi who specialised in lightning, it was a given. Even Leylin, who wasn’t attuned to the lightning element, could exceed many lightning Magi with the use of this formation.

”The result weren’t bad... Allocate this information to the primary database,” Leylin commanded. “Also. how’s the progress on improving it?”

[Beep! Data has been recorded at the highest grade of confidentiality. New spell formation setup is at 87.99%, has been constructed using data from Ancient Amplification Runes, Aufker Techniques, High-grade Spell Formation Theory...]

The A.I. Chip projected the progress report directly into Leylin's consciousness.

Already half done, the A.I. Chip had used a multitude of resources, the information on ancient runes occupying first place.

This was the task that Leylin had laid down from the beginning, even though the ancient runes could only be used to amplify the strength of lightning-type Magi, but with further understanding by comparison, and adding the A.I. Chip's huge database and deduction abilities, creating another type of special amplification rune was a very achievable matter.

Leylin's brows relaxed somewhat, and he shortly asked, "Name the new model of spell formation the Destiny Spell Formation'. A.I. Chip, simulate the extent of the Destiny Spell Formation's amplification ability."

[Beep! Mission established, Investigating data... Not enough information on Destiny Spell Formation. Beginning simulation, experiment has started.....]

A strange spell formation immediately appeared in front of Leylin, the upper part of the runes looking like delicate and twisting tadpoles full of the characteristics of ancient runes. It looked completely different from normal formations.

[Beep! Simulation test complete! Estimate: Destiny Spell Formation can amplify normal spells by around 50%, and for the effects of unique magical items, the amplification can increase to above 80%.]

“Very good! Discarding the other amplifications, if it is focused only on unique magic items, is it possible for its power to increase further?”

[If discarding all other amplification runes, the power of unique magical items will be amplified by over 100%.]

The complex operation was completed in a flash, and the A.I. Chip immediately gave a reply.

“Very good, do it! As for unique magic items, just use this as a template!” A great amount of soul force was sent out from Leylin’s body, entering all the data from a magic item into the A.I. Chip.

Before the Destiny Spell Formation was thoroughly completed, such a modification was still very feasible.

The reason why Leylin did not hesitate to face certain danger from stealing the ancient runes from Eam was largely for this purpose. It could be said that, after obtaining this amplification spell formation, the final weak point in Leylin’s plans had been mended.

[Beep! Data has been imported, starting to modify the structure. Estimated completion time: 58 hours 32 minutes 41 seconds.]

The A.I. Chip immediately reported.

“Very good! Two of the most important preparations are almost done. Next will be some other experiments and planning...”

Leylin touched the substantially modified Mask of the Dreamless on his face, caught in the middle of a more intense experiment....

.....

Time unwittingly passed by. In the middle of the experiment room, the radiance of the gate to the astral plane became increasingly dazzling. The rays of light above the star gems seemed connected by invisible threads, emitting even more dazzling brilliant rays.

Bang! A doll-like puppet was caught by Leylin’s hand, letting out a human like giggle.

“The puppet clone has been completed!”

After the puppets had been put away, Leylin let out a relieved sigh, to make the trip to the Purgatory World, he had done an extraordinary amount of preparations. However there was not a lot of certainty.

According to A.I. Chip's most optimistic calculations, even if there was this much preparation, his probability of succeeding of around 5% was already not bad.

However, if he did not try and struggle, then it would absolutely fail, and as a result of this great probability, it was worth Leylin gambling on it.

However, in light of Leylin's cautious personality, it was certain that before taking risks, all of the preparatory work would be done to the highest standard.

“Lucky spell formation and Mask of the Dreamless are both completed, as well as my clone puppet and so on. As for the remainder, finally there is only this!”

From within another instantaneously opened summoning chamber, the surrounding walls were covered with a huge amount of binding runes, it was a technique with the power to isolate dimensions, every single rune was incomparably complex and precise, to the point where it could make a rank 1 Magus or rank 2 Magus immediately faint.

In the very center of the summoning room, was a black pentagram breathing out the terrifying power of evil which was

continuously lingering, and from time to time it generated a flow of black air above the matrix.

Crash! After a flash of light, Leylin received two white eggs of light.

Ka-cha! Ka-cha! Numerous cracks appeared on the eggs of light, and they finally broke open, exposing two stony imprints.

One by one, the evil runes above twisted, full of strange feelings, so much that even the center of the pentagram was attracted, the black stream of air above intensified, and even let out a terrible whining sound.

“Gluttony imprint!”

Leylin’s eyes flashed a glimmer of light, these two runes were impressively from when he first gathered the leftover fragments of the Gluttony Monarch Beelzebub’s doppelganger.

From his senior Robin and from the Quicksand tomb, Leylin had in total obtained two pieces of these imprints, every piece contained a mysterious will and evil power, although it could help a Magus breakthrough the Morning Star boundary, yet it could cause the Magus himself to be contaminated by the Gluttony King, and finally become Beelzebub’s doppelganger.

[Beep! Binding the entire open matrix, starting isolation of

The A.I. Chip's voice sounded at this moment, and even though it was a matchless machine, it made Leylin feel nervous.

“Go! Two pieces of the stony imprints suddenly flew, without entering the pentagram array.

Bang! Dark black light suddenly skyrocketed, finally taking shape as an enormous portal.

The keen soul power of the Half Moon made Leylin tense up, he could clearly feel a deeply terrifying will. Attracted by the array and runes, it descended!

Lord Beelzebub! You are the ruler of Gluttony! And the god of all demons! The original power of gluttony will forever linger on in your domain, becoming the most shining star on your crown.....”

Like a ballad, and like the sound of a funeral march, suddenly the entire summoning room was full of sound. Although it was in an unknown language, Leylin could still completely understand the meaning.

“This is some sort of language of ancient laws, and similar to the ancient Byron language, it is the language of laws! As long as the soul power reaches a certain level, it is possible to naturally understand!”



Leylin's expression was solemn and respectful, commanding the A.I. Chip to record this unknown language of laws.

“Mortal! We meet again! Thou dare to take the initiative to call me! It makes me respect your boldness!”

Illusory black flames suddenly formed into a tall shadow, it was naturally a growing twelve pairs of wings, with horns on its head and multiple pairs of eyes demon, otherwise known as– the devil!

The power of evil dispelled continuously from Beelzebub's every pore, and from somewhere suddenly came the power of a law.

“Gluttony..... the law of gluttony?” Leylin's eyes radiated light.

Beelzebub was clearly an existence from an unknown dimension or world's rank 7 laws, and had already completely understood one type of law, even though it was only a doppelganger arriving, this type of level was able to be clearly expressed.

Yes! You are the sovereign king of Gluttony! The ruler of existence, but what of it? This is the Magus World! The most powerful world, so how much have you been suppressed? And besides, in this summoning room I have arranged binding runes, at the very least it can block 50% of your power from passing through... This is only your doppelganger, how much strength do you have left?”

“In fact, I admire you as well. Fully aware that this was a trap, you still dared to come.” Following Leylin’s words, blood-red light burst forth from the summoning room’s four walls.

# Chapter 695 - Ready To Go

---

The demonic wings on the back of Beelzebub spread out, and wings of bone wrapped by a black membranous film collided with the wall. It let out a piercing light of thunderous lightning followed by an immense amount of blood-red and white smoke. Leylin's facial expression turned completely gloomy.

Soon after, Beelzebub's many compound eyes let out a strange light: "How can a mortal know the thoughts of a God?"

"The Gods?!" Leylin was surprised, but assumed a sneering expression: "In my view, you are just prey! Just this and nothing more! And so, Sovereign King of Gluttony Beelzebub, until we meet again!"

Leylin placed his hand on his chest and executed a graceful aristocratic bow with irreproachable form. However with this motion, the entire room was quickly swallowed up by bloody lightning.

"Rank 5 Emperor Serpent Innate Skill-Devour!" His body shrunk by several times, but the shadow of a Kemoyin Serpent Emperor appeared solidly behind Leylin's back. Although it was still constrained by thorny chains, it did not reveal any trace of fatigue and instead, a frightening black hole materialised in front of Leylin.

Ka-cha! Ka-cha! Piercing lightning struck without pause, tearing apart the flesh on Beelzebub's body.

Gigantic chunks of flesh entered the black hole without stopping, and finally became a terrifying blood-red life energy.

Leylin's face flushed a little, but he did not completely absorb the energy, instead using his innate skill Devour to continuously purify Beelzebub's energy essence, until it finally became a small bottle's worth of red liquid.

“Mortal! Vile magus! I will not let you go! I vow this in my name, in the name of Beelzebub!”

In the prison of bloody lightning, Beelzebub's voice and struggling became smaller and smaller, and finally faded away.

When Beelzebub had completely disappeared, the entire pentagram star array and powerful runes on the surrounding walls had collapsed in an instant. There were even a lot of bite marks left, as if some terrifying creature had devastated the area.

The existence of this type of law, even though it was only a doppelganger, it was still not easy to handle.

However. Leylin resided in the Magus World and could borrow the entire word's strength to suppress Beelzebub, so he firmly held the advantage. Through the array and binding runes, Beelzebub's strength was continuously suppressed, and finally it had become an excessively weak clone.

In the original history of the central continent, Beelzebub had several clones wreaking havoc. Finally he was suppressed but his body had been splintered into fragments, leaving behind these Gluttony imprints.

And so Leylin's current power was still on the strong side even in the ancient times. Consequently, handling a weakened clone was not an issue at all.

When Beelzebub's voice had entirely disappeared from the secret cell, and even the laws of gluttony had completely vanished, only then did Leylin stroke his chin, with a trace of a smile on his lips, "A god?! This statement is quite interesting..."

Having vaguely guessed Beelzebub's origin, Leylin did not take his warning and curses to heart, but instead looked at the dark red liquid in his hand.

The extremely dense dark red pus seemed to have the tendency to crystallize, and its evil aura continuously lingered around the area of the test tube, which seemed very terrifying.

[Beep! Unknown body of energy! High purity! Contains the intense power of laws. Rich in corrosive energy, not recommended for use by the host!]

The A.I. Chip scanned the substance and immediately gave its feedback.

“As expected, even after purification and being stripped by the innate skill Devour, this type of energy from the clone contained the original Beelzebub’s genes and energy particles information?” Leylin stroked his chin in thought.

With the existence of the laws above, it was already possible to brand his own imprint on his soul, flesh and even his energy, as well as anything else.

Even this projected clone contained Beelzebub’s imprint, just like with the Icy World’s female bronze giant, even if there was only one drop of blood, after traversing worlds it was still possible to open the spirit, and rebirth into a new life.

If Leylin were to use this type of energy essence, although he would gain huge advantages in a short space of time, and even understand the laws of Gluttony, in the end he was certain that he would resemble history’s many Magi, such as Robin.

Leylin was fully aware of this corrupt practice, and of course would not be that reckless.

Layer upon layer of sealing techniques appeared, revolving around the sides of the test tube. It sealed the power of the original dark red energy and only after completing this was Leylin able to put the test tube away with relief.

“The final step of the preparations has been completed!”

After finishing everything, Leylin did not immediately attempt his last-ditch effort, but on the contrary, he returned to his bedroom and slept very well.

A sleep without meditation, without calculations and without any burdens, relaxed Leylin's body and mind greatly.

Soon after, he found a quiet room and slowly began to recall his memories.

From the beginning of his birth in his previous world, growth and after his final anti-matter experiment failed and his passing, and from the Chernobyl Islands to his apprenticeship at the Abyssal Bone Forest Academy, Teljose City, Extreme Night City, and the Central Continent.

One by one, the fresh memories continuously emerged, along with the many people, friends and enemies. Through slowly combing through these memories, Leylin felt that the Half Moon ranked True Soul within his point mass had become even more pure and thorough, tending towards the change into the Full Moon rank.

This type of calm reflection continued for five or six days, Leylin's aura became weaker and weaker, and finally he resembled an ordinary person, with only the radiance in his eyes becoming more bright like the stars, and finally slowly and softly lessened, becoming like an ancient well without a single ripple— his innermost heart was peaceful and quiet, impervious to desires.

Until the last moment, Leylin's heart no longer had any nervousness or confusion, only the determination to dauntlessly move forwards.

He stood up suddenly, and went into the Star Realm laboratory.

The simple astral gate radiated a piercing light with a glittering blue flame forming a round arched door. Just like a silver-coloured spatial mirror, at its core was a complicated black vortex and opposite was a brilliant galaxy, leading to unknown places.

Beside the Astral Gate, there was a huge and complicated spell formation, and above it every rune was incomparably precise, minute and full of a sense of beauty. Over ten thousand of the runes seemed to swim like tadpoles, continuously sending out mysterious undulations.

At the core of this formation, there was a round groove, and what it was used for was unknown.

[Beep! The Lucky Spell Formation arrangement has been completed! Estimated amplification power: 107.6%! ]

The A.I. Chip's feedback was promptly transmitted.

Leylin had created this amplification spell formation, according



to the amplification techniques from ancient runes and with the A.I. Chip's terrifying deduction and simulation ability.

Due to discarding its universality and specially targeting a magical item's effect, it was amplified to over 100%! As for as Leylin was concerned, this could be considered an unexpected joy.

“Let's begin!” Leylin's eyes had a resolute appearance. Once you fly, you soar. Success involved completely breaking free of his bloodline shackles, an unexpected and frightening result!

[Beep! Astral Gate has been opened, searching coordinate database!]

Along with the A.I. Chip's voice, the brilliant river of light within the silver mirror drew constantly closer, until a star resembling a vortex appeared, and the screen's depiction ended there.

This was the Calm Jade constellation, the location of the Purgatory World. With the predecessor's data and adding the A.I. Chip's continuous deduction, it could only progress to this step.

Within the Calm Jade constellation were tens of thousands of worlds, along with many half-planets, different dimensions and broken spaces, their numbers were as vast as the numbers of stars in the sky. To find the location of the Purgatory World from so many possible coordinates was tantamount to fishing a needle from the sea.

Although Leylin had the A.I. Chip, he still needed a lot of time to do this.

And what he lacked now, unfortunately, was time!

“At this step! The role of the A.I. Chip and information has already been exhausted, I can only slowly search and rely on luck!”

Leylin seemingly sighed, and with a flash of golden light, a simple gold coin appeared in his hand.

This shape of the gold coin was very simple, and it was surrounded by a circle of dark golden light. One side of the coin had a skull on it, the other side the pattern of a lucky bird. The gold coin currently had several cracks, and it almost split the coin apart.

This was the unique magic item– Lucky Coin! It was Leylin’s greatest gain from Extreme Night City, holding it was just like grasping a thread of the power of destiny!

Even in the field of Star Realm experimentation, the power of destiny could exert a terrifying might. Leylin was initially able to find the Black Rain World, obtaining Multilimb Strength, thanks to the power of destiny.

From that time onwards, Leylin had completely sealed the Lucky Coin and had not even used it despite several crises, preparing to

get the most use out of it.

And now! It was time to use the coin!

“Go!” A golden arc flashed from Leylin’s hands, the Lucky Coin streaked across space in a shining trajectory, into the groove in the center of the Lucky Spell Formation seamlessly, as if they were originally one.

Bzz! A great deal of light twinkled, threads of golden power were released from the spell formation, following the ritual into the Lucky Coin, making the coin’s dark golden light become even more dazzling.

“Due to the material constraints of the Lucky Coin, it is only possible to make predictions up to the Morning Star level, but once it touches upon powers beyond Morning Stars, it will meet with a horrible backlash!

Leylin watched the dark golden light of the Lucky Coin intensify, a peculiar expression flashing in his eyes.

# Chapter 696 - Breakthrough And Success

---

“I will first use the Destiny Spell Formation to amplify the power of Destiny’s Coin, and then draw out the power of fate from the coin all at once. I had previously narrowed down the location of the Purgatory World in the vast astral realm to the Calm Jade constellation already.....”

“Staking everything on the destruction of Destiny’s Coin, the attempt this time– It has a 70% chance of success!”

A blazing light shone from Leylin’s eyes, and he held up his hands: “The power of destiny! Please guide my way and lead me to the Purgatory World!”

Bang!

At the moment of Leylin’s chant, the radiance of Destiny’s Coin was at its highest point. The entire laboratory was wrapped up in the dazzling dark golden light.

The power of destiny reached its peak at this moment. At this moment, all of the astrologers in the entire Magus World raised their heads in amazement, sensing that the undulations of the river of destiny was shifting.

Threads of dark golden light continuously touched the door to the Star Realm, the image of the Calm Jade constellation grew ever smaller on the surface of the silver mirror, moving slowly towards the location of the Purgatory World.

Ka-cha! Ka-cha!

The Purgatory World, however, was the world where the laws of the Snake Dowager existed. Even though it had merely calculated the coordinates, fine cracks constantly appeared on the surface of Destiny's Coin.

[Warning! Warning! Destiny's Coin is rapidly destroying itself! Countdown: 1.1s! 1.0s! 0.9!]

The A.I Chip quickly produced a blood red countdown frame.

At this time, although he was continuously drawing closer to his goal, the Purgatory World had not yet appeared.

“Ah..... It's not enough! It's still not enough!” Leylin's face flushed red and he suddenly commanded: “A.I. Chip! Commence the overload of the Destiny Spell Formation!”

[Beep! Further amplifying the Destiny Spell Formation, currently overloading at 200%! 300! 400!]

Along with the A.I. Chip's voice, the energy stack around the Destiny Spell Formation immediately let out an ear-piercing

explosion. The terrifying power of amplification emerged once again.

Crackle! A vast amount of energy unceasingly flowed about in all directions. Many runes even exploded, and the entire Destiny Spell Formation collapsed in a flash.

Just before the spell formation collapsed, the frightening power of amplification had appeared on the surface of Destiny's Coin.

Bang! First, the skull which represented misfortune on one side of the coin exploded. Shortly after, the destiny bird seemed to come alive, unfolding its wings and letting out a resounding cry.

Destiny's Coin suddenly exploded into fragments.

At this time, a ray of dark golden light slashed open the display of the Calm Jade constellation as if it was a sharp sword. This caused the Astral Gate to show the edge of a dull-colored star on its surface.

[Beep! The Destiny Spell Formation and Destiny's Coin have been destroyed! Discovered the Purgatory World's coordinates!]

The A.I. Chip's voice sounded out and made a cheerful expression appear on Leylin's face.

“Success! The wish of all Kemoyin Warlocks! There is even a method to resolve the bloodline shackles!” Leylin resolutely clenched his fist.

[Beep! The Purgatory World’s coordinates have been targeted. Initiating the opening of the space portal!]

Accompanying the sound of the A.I. Chip, a blue gate of light opened up before Leylin with a loud rumble.

A frightening feeling was transmitted from the gate, giving Leylin a sense of formidable oppression.

The Purgatory World! It was a very formidable world in ancient times. Until now, it had never declined, and it even contained the violent existence of the Snake Dowager and other powerful laws.

“Taking this step, there is no possibility of turning back!” Leylin smiled softly, and stepped entirely into the radiant light.

Bang! The blue rays of light exploded with a flash, wrapping up the entire laboratory and bringing it along.

.....

A blue ray of light, like a meteor, streaked across the vast Star Realm.

In this blue light was Leylin, looking at the dull star which was growing larger and larger in his field of view. It finally transformed into an enormous world.

This world was shrouded entirely in a dense grey fog, and he couldn't see clearly. He could only see pieces of the continents and the ocean with great difficulty.

Any of these continents could be comparable to the size of the central continent of the Magus World. The faint atmosphere of great power was emanated, making Leylin shiver a little.

Rapidly, the power of the Astral Gate brought him to the border of the Purgatory World, which was outside of the world boundary.

However, when Leylin wanted to enter the Purgatory World, there was a sudden change!

“Who is it? Where has this outsider come from, who dares to offend my majesty!” A frightening amount of energy undulated outside the Purgatory World and took shape. An enormous shadow appeared, and even the storms and turbulences of space all avoided it.

There was a strong and overbearing atmosphere. The power of laws constantly undulated from the shadow's body.

This shadow possessed very large and deformed wings, its entire



body was as huge as a mountain. A giant skeletal hand reached out towards Leylin and grabbed him, as if it was a giant snatching a fly.

“There are Rank 7 and above laws here! Damn it! There are obviously many strong people, but they are unexpectedly vigilant against outsiders?”

Leylin’s expression changed, and soon after the golden-red patterns on the Dreamless Mask continuously flashed with light. The bloodline of the Alabaster Devilsnake from earlier was released.

“En! This is the bloodline of the Alabaster Devilsnake! Although it was once the master of the Shadow World, now it is part of our Purgatory World!”

Accompanied by the voice of another woman, an enormous eye with vertically slit pupils appeared.

A profound intent was issued from the giant eye above. Soon after, a great amount of black lightning engulfed the giant eye, and struck the enormous hand which had grabbed Leylin.

“Apologies! Complying with the contract is the foundation of order! In accordance with the contract we had previously signed together! The bloodline of the Snake Dowager has the right to enter the Purgatory World!”

Within the mass of black lightning, the enormous skeletal hand

shattered to pieces, which made the shadow let out an infuriated roar in response, “Damn you, Trial’s Eye! I won’t let you off, one day..... One day.....”

“Chirp chirp.....”

Just when Leylin had let out a sigh of relief, accompanied by a cheerful chirp, an enormous grey bird flew emerged from the Purgatory World.

“All who belong to the Trial of the Contract, are the enemies of this bird!”

The giant wings of the bird seemed the shield the whole world from Leylin’s view.

“Sss.....” At this moment, an even more violent thought was projected over, making Leylin feel that he was surrounded by a pack of wolves.

The phantom of a ball of snakes as large as a star was forced out from the void.

Many giant snakes roared directly towards Leylin. An indistinct figure appeared from within the coiled snakes. With one look, Leylin’s bloodline nearly rose in rebellion.

‘Snake Dowager! Although it is only a phantom...’ Leylin’s pupils constricted.

“Oh? It looks like this descendent appears to be quite interesting. Even the Snake Dowager is in a hurry to get her hands on him?” The bird bantered ridiculously, as if it was a person.

“In that case.....” It fanned its huge grey wings and the obstacles in front of Leylin disappeared. A terrifyingly powerful space storm followed this, which rapidly increased its speed. In a moment, it had crashed through the world boundary.

“Bird! You dare! ! !” A rather angry voice came from behind Leylin’s back, along with the monstrous hissing of the gigantic snake.

It seemed as if many stars behind him had all exploded, and all of the terrifying energy contained within made the whole space begin to faintly tremble. The gigantic Purgatory World silently endured the aftermath, showing off the foundation of a truly powerful world.

“The beings that appeared earlier should only be merely conscients and clones, and unexpectedly they were this terrifying!”

There was a trace of bitterness in the corner of Leylin’s mouth, and also the sense of being very fortunate.

The process of crossing the world boundary was viewed by the unusually sensitive Rank 7 existences in the Purgatory World as if bandits had conspicuously trespassed into their own home. It was impossible to not be discovered.

Fortunately, although the Rank 7 laws overseeing the Purgatory World were not little, they seemed to be full of contradictions with each other, which finally gave Leylin a precious chance to take advantage of them.

“Descendent of my blood! Return to my embrace!”

At this moment an enormous will swept across Leylin, and made his mind tremble.

“Entering the Purgatory World and smoothly blending in, was instead easy to handle. The stone outside is very dazzling, but if I fell into the river above, to resolve it again, it would not be such an easy matter! And.....”

Forcibly suppressing the rebellion of his bloodline, a puppet suddenly appeared from Leylin’s hands.

“Haha.....” The puppet laughed sweetly, and it continuously undulated a Soul Force and bloodline power which was extremely similar to Leylin’s.

“Go!” With Leylin’s voice the puppet clone floated in midair, and moving to and fro like a meteor, took a different direction from Leylin.

“I hope that the puppet will win me enough time! And also!”

[Beep! The Dreamless Mask is activating, concealing the bloodline for the second time!]

Accompanying the A.I. Chip's voice, was a layer of fine white snake scales, suddenly appearing from the surface of the Dreamless Mask. Mixing with the bloodline aura from earlier, the undulations exclusive to the Alabaster Devilsnake concealed Leylin's Soul Force and bloodline power in a flash.

“In the Purgatory World, the clan of snakes that the Snake Dowager is in is also an enormous species. Even the other side surely cannot thoroughly distinguish between every Alabaster Devilsnake?”

[Beep! Collecting the laws of the Purgatory World! Initiating adjustment of host undulations!]

With the A.I. Chip's voice, many laws of the Purgatory World were collected to be analyzed, and slowly altered the undulations coming from Leylin.

Very quickly, Leylin's entire self resembled the natives of the Purgatory World, and no longer had the incompatible feeling of an outsider from another world.

“Everything has been completed!”

Leylin breathed a sigh of relief, his face shortly flushing red.

The confrontation of the different laws just a moment ago had left him with a not inconsiderable injury.

“All that could be done has been done, and next, it depends on luck!”

Leylin was just like a fallen meteorite, and now, the enormous wills following on his heels had completely lost his presence.

# Chapter 697 - Drifting And Analysis

---

A flaming star shot down from the skies, smashing into the waters with a huge splash.

“Ugh!” The icy cold water immediately left Leylin clear-minded, and a salty taste attacked his senses.

‘This is... an ocean...’ His mind was quickly reinvigorated, ‘Those existences above rank 6 saw me, but I was lucky enough to get through the barrier into the world. I even had to let my substitute clone leave... In that case...’

“This is the Purgatory World!” Seeing the dark lustre in the horizon as well as the chaotic will unique to Purgatory, Leylin’s lips quirked up in a broadening smile. “Haha... I’ve succeeded!”

Leylin had finally taken the first step on his path to breaking the bloodline shackles. The elation in his expression grew more and more pronounced.

As a foreign entity, Leylin would obviously affect the world barrier while traversing into the Purgatory World. Those existences above rank 6 had sensed this, hence Leylin wasn’t surprised that so many conscients were present there, even making some preparations.

However, the events had far exceeded his expectations. Not only were there more beings in the Purgatory World than he’d expected that comprehended laws, they weren’t all in the same camp. He’d

even noticed a few familiar faces.

“It’s not just the Snake Dowager, but the Trial’s Eye and the Nefarious Filthbird are here too? I wonder if it’s their main body here, or just a clone...”

Leylin floated on the surface of the sea and was pushed along with the waves. With the checks by the A.I. Chip, his injuries were slowly recovering and he would soon regain his ability to move.

Floating on the ocean was very dangerous and could attract bloodthirsty sharks or other high-energy beings. However, Leylin had no aura undulations at all and was like a block of wood. He wasn’t bothered by anything at all.

While recovering, his thoughts were still moving quickly.

“Trial’s Eye and the Nefarious Filthbird. They’re a group of old mortal enemies, and I never thought I’d see their true bodies... Even if they’re clones, they probably possess about half the strength of their main bodies!”

The ancient Trial’s Eye was commonly used by Magi to make contracts. As an arbitrator and protector, it spread its might across multiple worlds.

This extended to even Breaking Dawn Monarchs and all the way down to acolytes. While making contracts, Trial’s Eye could be summoned to bear witness. Of course, the Trial’s Eye that different



Magi summoned were fundamentally different.

However, in Leylin's point of view, Trial's Eye was not doing all of this for nothing. Through safeguarding these contracts and judging those who violated them, it did gain immense benefits too.

The laws it comprehended could very possibly be 'Contract' and 'Trial' or something to that effect. Hence, through these activities, it not only amassed more comprehension towards the rules but could even obtain the attention of the world origin force to increase its strength.

On the contrary, the Nefarious Filthbird likely comprehended something like 'Betrayal' and 'Chaos'. Hence, the two of them became arch enemies and engaged in battles that spanned across several worlds.

Now, Leylin had found the projections of their conscients in Purgatory World!

This meant that a very capable clone or even real body of these two beings were now in Purgatory World!

“What kind of secrets were being kept in the ancient Purgatory World? It's not just the Snake Dowager but also Trial's Eye and the Nefarious Filthbird, amongst other beings, that have set their sights on this place...”

Leylin pondered silently over the effects the appearance of the

Trial's Eye and Nefarious Filthbird would bring to his plans, and whether they would be able to help him.

“Based on what I saw, the Trial's Eye seems to be a protector of laws, which was why it helped me out and let me off leniently after seeing I was a descendant of the Snake Dowager. The Nefarious Filthbird was clearly opposed to the eye and, after seeing that the Snake Dowager had not protected me and even wanted to kill me quickly, changed its initial plans and sent me into Purgatory World...”

Leylin's eyes flickered with wit as he analysed the scene multiple times.

“If I really had to divide them, Trial's Eye is probably on the Snake Dowager's side. Of course, I can't rule out the fact that it was just following the contract. The Nefarious Filthbird obviously thinks nothing of the Snake Dowager. There's hatred on both ends... As for that strange beast with destroyed wings that appeared at the beginning, it's probably sitting on the fence...”

“Of course, this could be misleading. However, these beings are very arrogant. It's too unlikely that they'd team up to cheat a mere rank 5 Warlock like me, and the possibility is almost negligible... but it's not bad to be on my guard against it...”

Leylin felt himself getting a headache. Having to deduce so many secrets regarding these beings as a mortal human himself made him feel like his brain just wasn't doing enough.

“A.I. Chip, how’s the analysis of the surroundings and world law?”

Leylin shut his eyes and let his body drift along the waves and communicated with the A.I. Chip inwardly.

[Beep! Scanning of surroundings completed. Constructing elemental diagram!]

The A.I. Chip quickly projected the image of an elemental composition diagram.

“Mm! The water elemental particles are very dense, which is understandable since this is like an ocean. On top of that, there’s darkness and fire-type elemental particles. As expected of Purgatory!”

Leylin read through the analysis of the surroundings and couldn’t help but nod. The concentration of elements around was slightly lacking compared to the central continent, but they were almost on the same level. That really made it worthy of being called an ancient powerful world.

[Beep! Deduction of host’s location complete!]

The A.I. Chip projected a map in front of Leylin. This was a scene

of Purgatory World that he had seen from outside the barrier. Within was a hazy continent and gigantic ocean, and on the image, Leylin was situated near to a continent in the ocean. He was represented as a dazzling red dot!

“Though I know my approximate location in Purgatory World, I don’t know which continent to go to...”

Leylin laughed wryly. The map the A.I. Chip had used was everything he had seen before, and it was much too simple. Considering the startling area of Purgatory World, any mistakes here would reach a terrifying extent.

“A.I. Chip, check my stats!” Not bothering with these longer, Leylin commanded again.

[Beep! Mission established, beginning scan. Collecting host’s stats.]

The A.I. Chip quickly intoned the results.

[Leylin Farlier. Rank 5 Warlock. Bloodline: Giant Kemoyin Serpent (Complete form). Strength: 32 (76), Agility: 35 (62), Vitality: 59 (176.9), Spiritual force: 875 (2003.5), Magic power: 875 (Magic power is in synchronisation with spiritual force). Soul force: 88 (200), Half Moon.]

Though it was just a confrontation between a few tremendous conscients, Leylin had been caught in the cross fire and almost died.

The terror of rank 7s and above were something he couldn't stand up to as he was now.

“Due to the Curse Mark of Ten Thousand Snakes, my stats keep dropping! On top of that, I'm grievously injured. If I still had my vitality from before, I'd probably be able to recover in a few hours. It looks like I'll need around two days...”

Leylin observed the beautiful starry sky and sighed slowly.

Meanwhile, he could feel that his body was like a sponge, with the darkness-type elemental particles in the air and even moonlight being absorbed into his cells, restoring his life force.

“This... Kemoyin Serpent's devouring ability, or a natural occurrence in the Purgatory World?” Whatever it was, Leylin was rather stunned at this discovery. Purgatory World truly was most suitable for the Snake Dowager and her clansmen. If not for that damned Purgatory chaotic intent that resulted in a bloodline illness, it could even be comparable to the Shadow World before.

[Beep! World law analysis at 2.16%. Determined to be not letting foreign creatures and souls have too drastic reactions.]

At this moment, the A.I. Chip's newly investigated conclusion was placed in front of him.

“In other words, the Purgatory World has nothing against the entrance of the powerful? It's no wonder the Snake Dowager, Trial's Eye and the rest chose to come here!”

Leylin suddenly understood.

Most worlds' latent wills were very opposed to foreigners. All those who entered would feel a terrifying malicious intent. Even their bodies would be suppressed by the World Force and cause them to drop in rank.

A situation like that would be very obvious in the Magus World or World of Gods.

However, Purgatory World seemed rather exotic as well. It accepted all foreigners and its degree of openness was second only to the Dreamscape. When he had just entered, Leylin had not felt any pressure whatsoever from the World Will.

After he completely adjusted the frequency of his aura and soul undulations to the Purgatory World, he was more like a native. There was no longer the feeling of being pressured and spied on by some malicious intent.

“What a mystical world! However, the will of Purgatory World

was initially already very chaotic. That's normal!"

Leylin nodded. For World Wills, all from outside were locusts that would even take over their precious origin source. Hence, they were very against this. Some Worlds even had their natives in chains, and then expelled them after their strength went past a certain level.

Only Purgatory World with chaotic intent like this could tolerate the existence of foreigners like the Snake Dowager.

"Even then, perhaps the Snake Dowager wouldn't brazenly absorb the world origin. If not, no matter how chaotic the will of the Purgatory World is, there would be a powerful opposing force. That might be my chance..."

# Chapter 698 - Gigantic Ship And Merfolk

---

Leylin never forgot his primary goal— he had to break through his bloodline shackles and rid himself of the Allsnake Curse!

Sneaking into Purgatory World and lying low was the first step to success. While he still didn't have a concrete plan for what happened later, he needed to keep adjusting and then adapting it anyway.

“Now that I've gotten into Purgatory World and have the help of the A.I. Chip, my aura and undulations are now adjusting so that it's more similar to natives. With the bloodline concealing by the Mask of the Dreamless as well as my wooden puppet used as a target amidst the chaos, the Snake Dowager shouldn't be able to find signs of me in a short period of time no matter how powerful she is. Unless she's reached rank 9, where there's nothing she doesn't know or cannot do...”

Rank 9 was the highest realm for all Magi. It was said to be where one grasped truth and there was nothing they could not do or did not know.

In Leylin's eyes, this surpassed the power of gods. However, that was what had been described in ancient volumes. Who knew whether this narration was real or fake.

Even during the most splendid ancient era in the Magus World, the records of the most powerful Magus had only reached rank 8. Real great rank 9 Magi had never appeared before.



Perhaps rank 9 was just a fantasy for a highest rank.

Leylin was certain that the Snake Dowager was at most comparable to a rank 8 Magus. It was impossible for her to have reached rank 9.

Purgatory World was vast and boundless, and also had many rank 7s and above in charge. It was possible that even the Snake Dowager would have to search for him continent by continent.

Hence, based on Leylin's deductions, she would probably trace back to him on the sly using his bloodline or order his capture.

The most stable and possible method she would use would be waiting patiently, because Leylin could not break through the bloodline shackles without any contact with her. In this short period of time, it was impossible for Leylin to rank up several times such that he could be on the same level as the Snake Dowager.

“The priority right now is to blend into Purgatory World, find the natives and understand how the organisations are divided...”

Leylin pondered over this silently and then closed his eyes.

Under the moonlight, there seemed to be a layer of vague luster passing over his body and emitting sparkling rays within the ocean.

.....

Night passed and orange rays rose from sea level, the reflection gleaming atop the waves. At the end of the reddish-orange rays of light was a dark red sun.

Dim golden lights spilled down and the surrounding white fog gradually dissipated.

“Hm?” Leylin, who was lying on the surface of the water while recuperating, flexed his fingers. In this situation where he could only rely on the natural ability of his body to heal, he was bored out of his mind and shifted his attention to other things.

“The outline of the sun in Purgatory World seems much smaller than in the Magus World. Based on my deductions last night, the nights here are at least 20 hours long, and based on the speed at which this star is rising...”

Leylin watched the first glimmer of dawn that had now entirely left sea level, and his mind began to calculate things quickly.

Though incomparable to the A.I. Chip, through advancements and nourishments through his spiritual and soul force, the ability and speed of his brain when it came to calculating things did not lose out to the top minds in his previous world.

“Four hours and fifteen minutes! It might be even shorter than

that, but that's the time for this sun to complete a whole cycle of ascending and descending."

Leylin was very confident in his calculation skills, "Purgatory World isn't like a planet. This only has a boundless land and sea that are of almost the same volume. That's why whether it's sunrise or sundown, it's uniform no matter where I am..."

"The day is so short, which makes sense why darkness elemental particles are so ample. Beings lacking in sunlight and energy have no choice but to focus on other sources. That's probably why the fire elements are used extensively..."

Leylin was able to see through how Purgatory World had generally changed over time. This ability to see things long-term was the result of his scientific research in his previous world and abilities in magic in this life. This perhaps even exceeded the abilities of many rank 7s.

"The amount of daylight in Purgatory World is rather low compared to many Worlds. Only Shadow World that has never had sunlight can probably top it. It's no wonder that after the Snake Dowager failed to get control over the Shadow World, she led her people and migrated here, which is quite suitable, if one were to disregard the chaotic intent here..."

Leylin's lips quirked in a slight smile, "The chaotic intent of Purgatory World has its pros and cons. It's precisely because of its chaotic nature that the Snake Dowager could take advantage of a loophole. However, her descendants aren't at rank 7 and can't resist the invasion of chaotic intent. That's what resulted in the

bloodline hysteria in them. That can only be completely healed with the world origin force of the Icy World...”

“Perhaps I’ll be able to find powerful natives of Purgatory World to help me in my plans...”

Leylin’s eyes flashed with intelligence.

Yo yo! At this moment, a few snow-white seagull-like creatures that were ten times larger than their counterparts flew in the air. The giant birds soaring caught Leylin’s attention.

“This is...” Leylin’s pupils shrank slightly.

[Beep! Found traces of a large ship. Based on course, possibility of encountering host is 99.999%! Discovered abnormal heat energy and radiation undulations, determined to be existence of Exemplary Strength.]

The A.I. Chip loyally intoned.

“It’s been about only two days and I managed to bump into a native already. I’m in such a vast ocean, which means I have pretty good luck!”

Leylin turned slightly, “Is it because the place where I landed is close to some continent?”

In the direction in which Leylin had turned where the water met the sky, a tiny black speck appeared and then increased in size, sailing over like a little mountain.

Yo yo! The gigantic birds flying overhead in circles chirped intensely, so excited as if they had found their relatives.

“Someone’s pets? Seems like I was discovered long ago!” Leylin’s injuries had yet to completely heal, and he could only do very slight movements. For this reason, he was still lying here.

A tremendous black figure that covered the skies finally revealed itself. This was a huge group of ships, and there were three with large white sails like canopies and a hull tens of metres high. At the moment that the ships arrived, the skies above Leylin were completely hidden and created great shadows.

[Beep! Detected life force undulations from large creatures.  
Position: 1200m below host’s location.]

The A.I. Chip’s voice sounded at this moment.

Two large eyes that were like searchlights in the deep sea suddenly brightened from the black depths of the water underneath him.

“It must be some creature like the giant dragon-whale in the

south coast. Looks like the main driving force of these ships is obtained by subduing creatures!”

Leylin decided. When they were much closer to Leylin, a cry of alarm sounded from atop the deck.

Great eyesight allowed Leylin to see a few heads that seemed to belong to humans from above the deck, yelling at him.

The ship parted the water into waves, and Leylin’s body began to move again.

Finding that shouting was pointless, the sound of a bugle horn could be heard from above the deck. The sound that was low and held a hint of fragility was made from maybe a cow horn or conch.

Along with the sounds of the bugle horn, Leylin could sense even more life undulations appearing from deep in the sea and arriving around him.

“Merman? The Marine Tribe?”

Leylin watched the beings surrounding him, shock evident in his eyes.

Those who had been attracted by the sounds were a group of merfolk with the upper body being a human and lower, a large tail. There were shells, corals, algae and all type of decorations on their bodies. They looked very similar to a branch of the Marine Tribe in

the south coast, but there were still some differences.

“skngaklng.....”

“skngaklng.....”

There were scales on their faces and the parotid gland unique to fishes at their cheeks. In their hands were harpoons and other weapons. One of them with the best physique and that was situated closest to Leylin made a sound.

“It’s similar to the Byron language, but it’s still different!” Leylin had already gotten used to the inability to communicate from the usage of different languages.

“Thankfully, with the recuperation in this period of time, I can use part of my soul force!”

Clear and cool soul force spread from within his eyes and then quickly flitted across all the merfolk, and especially the leader. Leylin’s half-moon rank soul force invaded his sea of consciousness without his knowledge, and he obtained large amounts of spiritual force undulations.

The A.I. Chip worked quickly and tidied up a new language, inputting it into Leylin’s memories.

“Looks like I’ll need to invent a spell that allows me to be proficient in all languages! If not, it’s going to be very troublesome

every time.”

Meanwhile, seeing that Leylin had not replied after a long while, the leading merman asked, “Who are you? Why are you here?”

Though they’d seen many people caught in danger from the ocean, there were truly very few who were like Leylin, floating on the surface of the water.

The atmosphere was stifling, and a few surrounding merfolk grasped the forks in their hands tightly.

“Oh, my apologies. I was just too emotional just now.”

Leylin finally spoke, using the same language as them.

His gentle voice seemed to hold some strange ability that caused all the merfolk to relax.

“I am a traveler who got into trouble at sea, which resulted in me sustaining grievous injuries. I had to be in this state temporarily in order to heal up...”

As he spoke, he got up from his previous position, where he’d been lying down.

Watching him get up and stand on the surface of the water, the leader of the merfolk’s pupils shrank.



# Chapter 699 - Beholders

---

“An Exemplary!” The leader of the merfolk cried out involuntarily, his eyes now holding a trace of reverence towards Leylin. However, he wasn’t all that surprised either. From what Leylin had done, it was evident that he was no ordinary person.

“We are people from the Eden trading company. If you don’t mind, you could come up our ship and get some rest. I believe the rest will be delighted to chat with an Exemplary...” The leader of the merfolk spoke reverently.

This was the reason Leylin showed his strength. In a primitive world in an era during the age of discovery, there must be sins everywhere behind the scenes. The law of the jungle was utilised to the utmost.

If this was just Leylin alone without any power, he would be robbed and then thrown to the bottom of the sea.

Just the luxurious material of his clothing could be the cause of his death.

The moment he showed his mysterious strength, the treatment he got immediately changed.

Without making certain Leylin’s strength and his background, the Eden trading company would not dare lay a hand on him.

“Many thanks!” Leylin expressed his gratitude aloofly, refusing the drawbridge that they let down for him and instead flying onto the deck.

Standing on deck, Leylin was slightly surprised by these crew members’ strange appearances.

The few sailors beside him all looked very strange. There were some similar to the merfolk that Leylin had seen, but their tails had turned into two legs. They wore what labourers did and clearly did not have a high status here.

Besides the merfolk sailors, Leylin saw another type of creature.

This was a person escorted by the merfolk that evidently had a higher status. However, their appearance was totally different from a regular human being and they only had a large pupil. The pupil alone had a diameter of 1 decimeter, and around its socket, large amounts of tendrils hung down, forming something like limbs.

Appearance-wise, it was very similar to the Beholder Leylin saw in games in his previous world.

“Alright! Though I’d long since guessed that this world wouldn’t be made up of humans, this appearance is really quite rare...”

Leylin ridiculed it in his mind. Perhaps due to adapting to the environment or some other reason, there were multiple different

tribes but they all had bodies similar to humans. A head, four limbs, a torso became the most common structure of all beings, and there were at least one or two races similar to humans.

Like the merfolk he'd seen, while they maintained having a tail on their lower bodies when in water, that instantly turned into humans' legs once they got on shore.

Creatures that were completely different from humans like the Beholder did exist, but were never that common.

Leylin had already named this being the 'Beholder tribe'. In Purgatory World, it was unexpectedly this sort of race that was in charge and enslaving those similar to the human race.

"Revered Exemplary, please accept the sublime respect of I, Geiger Guguno Axde."

One of the Beholder's tendrils went upwards, and Leylin suddenly received spiritual undulations. The greetings within seemed to be rather flattering.

"Greetings!" Leylin obviously had a more profound understanding of the usage of spiritual force, which was why his usage of it was effortless.

However, what he found strange was that this Beholder tribe used spiritual force, which was similar to brainwaves, to communicate.

“Perhaps this form is because they’re highly intelligent creatures!” Leylin nodded inside.

“You must be someone of the Ceraph Continent, yes? It is only at that area that there are humans!”

The gigantic Beholder pupil stared hard at Leylin, and he could even see an inverted image of himself in the eye. After a short moment the Beholder sent spiritual force that held information.

“My apologies, but I must keep my origins a secret. I promised my Mentor that before I gained any fame, I would not reveal my history!” Leylin answered righteously, but that only made the other party more grim and respectful.

“Your mentor must be an amazing Exemplary!” To become famous far and wide was extremely difficult even if on just one continent. To be able to do that meant he must be an extraordinarily powerful Exemplary.

“Mm! He is indeed an elder worthy of respect, full of wisdom and resolution...”

A hint of nostalgia rose in Leylin’s eyes, and he then asked Beholder, “I met with some troubles at sea and had to float on the surface for a long time. May I know where this is?”

“Oh, this is the end of the shipping route of the Hail Continent,

which makes it very close to the Hail Continent. You came so close but still got into troubles, and I can only say that you and your boat have very bad luck...”

The Beholder seemed to say without malicious intent. Noticing the slip of its tongue, many tendrils waved around, flustered, “Oh, my apologies! I didn’t say that on purpose. It’s just that there are far too many storms and ferocious beasts in the ocean, and because there’s no law or regulations, even the Golden Deity Fleet can’t say they’re safe until they reach the port and stand on land.”

“I understand,” Leylin waved his arms, but a hint of of sadness and lingering fear showed on his expression. “I’m quite tired. Would it be possible for me to have a room and get some rest? Also, please send me to the nearest port. I’m willing to pay for it with something of equal value...”

While speaking, Leylin astutely realised there was someone spying on him from the shadows. This should be the Exemplary that he had discovered previously.

Their strength was not half bad and seemed to be at peak rank 3. They also had a few powerful magic artifacts and unique magic items.

“Seems like this is the protector or owner of this fleet who’s at rank 3?”

With the A.I. Chip’s adjustments, his aura was also at around rank 3. With his Mask of the Dreamless, he was rather charming.

“This...” Beholder seemed to hesitate, but immediately after, a streak of concealed spiritual force undulations was transmitted that caused it to change its words.

“No problem! We were planning to make a stop at the nearby Elias Port, and you can get off there. On our ship you are our most esteemed guest, so please don’t mention anything about paying...”

Beholder’s eye squinted which seemed to be a way of expressing its respect...?

“Alright!” Leylin nodded, and under the guidance of a merperson that the Beholder called out, entered the hold of the ship.

“My lord, here is your room. If there’s anything you need, please tell us!”

The merperson humbly lowered his head, and once Leylin got familiar with his room, retreated.

“It’s not bad!” Leylin looked around his surroundings. This was the higher levels of the ship, and besides important personnel, perhaps even the leader of the merfolk did not have the authority to stay here.

Light blue shells and red coral decorations adorned the room, making it look beautiful.

Inside, there was something like a bed that was covered with the fur of some unknown being. Just by looking at it, it was obvious that it was soft and smooth.

What attracted Leylin's attention more, however, was the large blue pearl at the heart of the room.

In the A.I. Chip's scan, the pearl seemed to be breathing, sucking in the turbid air in the room and, after going through some unknown transformation, released pure oxygen and was even able to clean the air. This eliminated the fishy smell of the ocean.

"A.I. Chip, scan!" Leylin commanded.

[Beep! Mission established. Beginning scan.]

The A.I. Chip intoned loyally, and immediately after, probing undulations scanned through and did not miss any corners.

[Scan completed! Yet to find any suspicious items or spying spell formations.]

The A.I. Chip intoned.

"Alright, looks like they aren't playing any tricks. I just need

another layer of protections so I can be at ease though.” With a tap of his finger, a blue rune appeared and rapidly disappeared into the wall.

In the blink of an eye, a resplendent blue layer of light appeared within the hold of the ship and quickly disappeared.

[Defence and warning spell patterns completed. Activation of comprehensive control. Simultaneous detections ongoing.]

Once the A.I. Chip sent information over, Leylin could finally completely relax.

“Hah...” He lay on the soft bed and huffed out a sigh, “At least I managed to regain a portion of my mobility before they found me, or things would have gotten complicated!”

“However, after recovering up to this point, the rest of the injuries aren’t that bad. I can even use external items...”

At this thought, Leylin’s palm touched at his waist. Silver spatial rays flashed and a dark red healing potion appeared in his palm.

With Leylin’s attainments as a grandmaster at Potioneering, as well as the vast amount of resources provided by the Bloodline Union and Doze Imperial City of the Blazing Flame Monarch, he’d long since made a huge quantity of potions at the grandmaster



level that he constantly kept at his side to deal with any unexpected situations.

The expedition into Purgatory World was of utmost importance, and he obviously brought everything along.

“With my vitality and rank as a Warlock, high-ranked potions probably won’t do much for me unless they’re primordial potions...”

The dark red potion didn’t taste all that good and even had a spicy taste that seemed to sting his nose. However, without even a flinch, Leylin drank it.

The potion worked quickly. A flush first appeared on Leylin’s face, before the sound of cracking was heard everywhere in his body, as if his bones were breaking. At the same time, it was flourishing with life like a plant.

After treatment using potions was used a few times, Leylin no longer had the feebleness of before.

# Chapter 700 - Continent And Dignitary

---

“What’s most important now is to figure out the general geography of Purgatory World!”

Leylin’s face was extremely solemn, hidden beneath the Mask of the Dreamless. He only had about two years left, and the Purgatory World had quite a few continents. He had to determine where the Snake Dowager was. If she’d gone to another continent, it would take years of journeying to find her, which was something he just would not accept.

“It’s a pity that those merfolk sailors aren’t that intelligent, and even the Beholder didn’t seem to be very knowledgeable. In order to gain more precise information, I’d have to rely on the concealed rank 3 Magus...”

Knock knock! At this moment, the door was lightly rapped.

“Come in!”

“My Lord!” The merperson from before reservedly bowed towards Leylin, “Esteemed guest, Lord Geiger Dole has invited you to dinner with him!”

‘Dinner?’ Leylin grew slightly confused by that. It seemed like the healing process he’d gone through had taken quite a bit of time.

“Of course, let us be off!” However, he reacted in time. This Geiger Dole should be the powerful being he’d sensed on the ship before. With his identity as one who gave the orders, he should have great understanding of the Purgatory World.

Leylin had now recovered about half of his original strength, which was enough for him to take control of the fleet of ships and even search the soul of the rank 3 Magus.

However, this was the Purgatory World. Leylin needed to keep a low profile, and the bloodline force he had as a Warlock was best not exhibited.

If not, the chances of the Snake Dowager finding him would be increased by a great extent, which would be very disadvantageous for him.

Besides, now that his safety was guaranteed, Leylin was willing to provide something of equal value to these people who had helped him, in exchange for what he wanted.

Whatever it was, using violence to solve problems might be simple at the beginning, but it was easy to get addicted to this method, resulting in the firm mindset of using violence for all situations. Leylin felt that he hadn’t gotten to that point yet, but it was necessary that he change.

“My lord, please come with me!” The merperson led the way respectfully, while Leylin followed behind at an average pace while speaking once in while.

Most of the time, Leylin was the one asking questions while the other party answered. It didn't seem abrupt at all, as if he trusted Leylin and even bared his soul without reservations.

Occasionally using dreamforce and all sort of confusion techniques didn't make Leylin feel the least bit ashamed.

It was a pity that the merfolk weren't that intelligent and information about their world was less important than filling their stomachs.

Hence, Leylin heard things like "the meals of the basic sailor aren't that tasty. That kelp should be fed to Beagle Beasts!", "The caviar of the Liszt Fish is the best!" "The large Tamaha Spur Octopus during the flood season have the most tender flesh!" and similar information, which rendered Leylin speechless.

"These merfolk probably have gotten off their ship once or twice. They move about only on the ship!" Leylin clutched his forehead, giving up on conversing with him further to gain intel.

"Looks like if I want to do anything, I'll need to deal with that Beholder..."

With this thought, Leylin followed the merperson to the top-most floor in the hold of the ship.

A scarlet carpet, white tablecloth, silver tableware and a candle

holder had Leylin feeling like he'd returned to Earth and its aristocracy.

The four walls with decorations used by different races as well as this person of another race at the main seat reminded Leylin that this was Purgatory World.

“Hehe... welcome, Exemplary from afar! I am Geiger's father, and my name is rather long, so just call me Geiger Dole...”

Sitting at the head of the table was a large Beholder. Compared to Geiger, the body of this Beholder was even larger. Some of the tendrils on the ground were snow-white, and seemed to be ageing.

However, the dense spiritual force undulations that it emitted showed that it had reached peak rank 3 if using the rating of the Magus World.

“Greetings, Geiger Dole. I am ‘Ley’. Thank you so much for your help!” Leylin introduced himself, and then sat at the other side of the table.

“A spiritual energy that isn't half bad. Such purity means there's a possibility of developing into soul force, which seems quite similar to the Spirit-Sucking Creature in the legends...”

Leylin sized it up, realising that the spiritual energy it emitted was different than that in the Magus World.

“The owner of our Eden trading company is a very benevolent and just sage. I imagine they would not mind us saving you. On the contrary, if they were to find out that we had met someone in need and ignored them, they would probably get mad!”

Geiger Dole, who was in the middle, chuckled and then transmitted a spiritual force undulation, “Serve the dishes!”

A few female merfolk from the kitchen carefully walked out holding earthen jars that emitted heat. One of them stood beside Leylin and placed the head of the jar towards Leylin’s silver bowl, beginning to pour.

“This...”

Leylin was slightly disconcerted. Seeing this dish that he had no clue was soup or the main course, he began to hesitate slightly.

In front of him was clearly soup. Amidst the dense and creamy light green soup were reddish and white eyeballs floating.

These eyeballs’ shape and size were similar to humans, and Leylin frowned slightly.

“A.I. Chip, scan!”

A flicker of blue appeared in Leylin’s eyes and quickly scanned the soup in front of him.

[Beep! Scan completed. Derived composition: Protein, glutamic acid, high-energy albumin. Unknown trace element determined to be from the eyes of a physically large tribe. Great effects in regaining energy and can restore some spiritual force.]

“What? Dear guest of mine, do you not like it?” The Beholder Geiger Dole opposite him ate with gusto, its many tendrils agilely using the ladle and making slurping sounds.

“The Merfolk Eyeball Soup from the Deep Gem Coral Sea is quite famous...”

“Oh, I was just wondering about that!” Leylin laughed and scooped up some soup. No matter what the taste was like, it would at least give him nutrition and help him restore spiritual force, which was not bad.

“Could it be because it has such a large eyeball that it has a huge desire for the eyes of other creatures?”

Seeing how the other party was devouring the food, Leylin judged him silently.

With the dinner, time passed quickly. Leylin and Geiger Dole chatted.

While conversing, Leylin astutely found that Geiger Dole had secretly made inquiries and spied on his history, and had even set up discreet spells that would detect lies.

Leylin could understand where it was coming from, since it was strange for there to suddenly be a strange being in the middle of the deep ocean.

However, what kind of wily old fox was Leylin? He not only did not reveal his past but spoke in a roundabout way, obtaining much information from it.

After the dinner, Leylin returned to his room and closed the cabin door.

“A.I. Chip, how is it?”

Immediately after, Leylin half-lay on the bed and closed his eyes, silently communicating with the A.I. Chip.

[Beep! Conversation from before has been recorded. Deleted 68.23% of useless portions and obtained definite intel. Beginning reorganisation.]

Soon enough, a 3D projection of the map was projected into Leylin's mind.



As he had been able to see a rough outline from outside the barrier to the world, the map was now more intricate with information from Geiger Dole, and even the precise scale had been obtained.

There were seven gigantic continents in Purgatory World. Each had an area as large as the Magus World's central continent. Between each continent, there was an enormous sea, and there large organisations within the sea that even rank 6 Magi did not dare intrude on.

Around the continents and sea were a series of small islands that were like gems and pearls on beaches, decoration for the ocean.

[Determined host's location!]

Nearby the hail continent, a blue shipping route had been clearly marked out. The area where the route began was where Leylin was situated, marked with a red dot.

At the heart of the shipping route was a fragmented mark of an island, as well as a sign with Magus letters— Elias Port.

“The hail continent?” Leylin stroked his chin and sunk into deep thought.

“Based on what Geiger Dole said, the hail continent is land governed by another race filled with barrenness and primitivism. Many areas still have yet to develop and find joy in killing as well as giving up offerings.”

“On the Hail continent, there is one species with the most beings around, and that is the high-energy snakes! It’s rumoured that deep inside hail continent, there are temples for all snakes!”

“If I didn’t guess wrong, the Hail Continent should be the Snake Dowager’s territory!”

Leylin’s eyes suddenly sparkled with light.

While traversing through the world barrier, he intentionally moved based on his bloodline and landed near his bloodline source. It seemed that while he was slightly off, he wasn’t that off.

If not, if he were to land on some other continent, Leylin would just die of tears if he had to travel such a distance.

Meanwhile, Leylin was pondering other things that Geiger Dole had mentioned.

“Based on what it said, there is a ‘dignitary’ leader on each continent. They have the power to destroy the continent and are worshipped by all races and turned into a religion of sorts! The Beholder tribe evidently worship the ancient Trial’s Eye...”

Leylin thought to himself.